The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia (1590). Book I.

Sir Philip Sidney.

Book I. | Book II. | Book III.

Note on the e-text: this Renascence Editions text was transcribed by Risa Bear, October, 2003, from the Sommer facsimile of a British Museum copy of the Ponsonby edition of 1590. The text is in the public domain. Content unique to this presentation is copyright © 2003 The University of Oregon. For nonprofit and educational uses only. New readers take note: the numbered marginal notations are reproduced as nearly as possible to those found in the text, and expected notes may be missing or not found to correspond with the chapter headings.

THE

COVNTESSE

OF PEMBROKES

ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE SIDNEI.
TO MY DEARE LADIE
AND SISTER, THE COUNTESSE OF PEMBROKE.

Ere now haue you (most deare, and
most worthy to be most deare Lady)
this idle worke of mine: which I fear
(like the Spiders webbe) will be
thought fitter to be swept away, then
worn to any other purpose. For my
part, in very trueth (as the cruell fathers among the
Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes they would
not foster) I could well find in my harte, to cast out in
some desert of forgetfulnes this child, which I am
loath to father. But you desired me to doo it, and
your desire, to my hart is an absolute
commandement. now, it is done onelie for you, onely
to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such
friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of
good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be
pardoned, perchaunce made much of, though in it
selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer
eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinnglie
handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner,
being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in
your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent vnto you, as
fast as they were done. In summe, a young head, not
so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when
God will) hauing many more fancies begotten in it, if
it had not ben in some way deliuered, would haue
growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that they
came in, then that they got out. But his chiefe safetie,
shalbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe
protection, the bearing the liuery of your name;
which (if much much good will not deceaue me) is
worthy to be a sanctuary for a greater offender.
This say I, because I knowe the vertue so; and this
say I, because it may be euier so; or to say better,
because it will be euier so. Read it then at your idle
tymes, and the follyes your good iudgement wiwl
finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking
for no better stuffe, then, as in an Haberdashers
shoppe, glasses, or feathers, you will continue to loue
the writer, who doth exceedinglie loue you; and most
most hartelie praies you may long liue, to be a
pricipall ornament to the family of the Sidneis.

Your louing Brother
Philip Sidnei.
He diuision and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneis dooing, but adventured by the ouer-seer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therefore submits himselfe to their judgement, and if his labour answere not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneis writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finished, that then choise should haue bene made, which should haue bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they haue bene chosen and disposed as the ouer-seer thought best.

THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIP SIDNEI.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

1 The shepherdish complaints of the absented louers Strephon and Claius. 2 The second shipwrack of Pyrocles and Musidorus. Their strange sauing, 3 enteruiew, and 4 parting.
T was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparel against the approach of her lover, and that the Sun running a most even course becomes an indifferent arbiter between the night and the day; when the hopeless shepherds Strephon was come to the sands, which lie against the Island of Cithera; where viewing the place with a heavy kind of delight, and sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his friendly rival, the pastor Claius vnto him, and setting first downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my Claius, said he, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called vnto by ouer-busie Remembrance, restlesse Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our selues. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other shepheardes some were running after their sheep strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble vpon the short and sweete grasse, some medicining their sick ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inuenting new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance gront vs any holiday, eyther for pastime or deuotion, nay either for necessary foode or naturrel rest? but that still it forced our thoughts to worke vpo[n] this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did gaze our eyes vpon her evr flourishing beautie: did it not still crie within vs? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some poultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especially in so
troublesome a season? to leave that shore unsaluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth? to leave those steps vnkissed wherein Vrania printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembrance commaundd, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembrance came euer cloathed vnto vs in the forme of this place, so this place giues newe heate to the feauer of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my Claius, Vrania lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburdened: and as for thee, poore Claius, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reuerence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selfe. There shee sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightsomnes whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulnesse, as it made euen sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning she spake vnto vs all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine eares did feed vpon the sweete words she vttered? And here she laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selfe feele some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deuiding her heauenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when she was imbarked, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunst for ioy, how the sailes did swel with pride, and all because they had Vrania? O Vrania, blessed be thou Vrania, the sweetest fairenesse and fairest sweetenesse: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and Claius thus answered. Alas my Strephon (said he) what needes this skore to recken vp onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call our thoughtes to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking steward, Remembrance? Aswell may sheepe forget to feare when they spie woolues, as wee can misse such fancies, when wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all this? truely no more, but as this place serued vs to thinke of those things, so those thinges serue as places to call to memorie.
more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loue, and loue with ioy in the midst of all woes: let vs in such sorte thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so exalted as to loue, a maide, who is such, that as the greatest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that may be prayed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climing vp a faire tree, and browsing on his tendrest braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contayned in them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and shaddowed waters in the extreme heate of summer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they haue seene her, what else they shall euer see is but drie stuble after clouers grasse) is to bee matched with the flocke of vnspeakable vertues laid vp delightfully in that best builded folde. But in deede as wee can better consider the sunnes beautie, by marking how he guides those waters, and mountaines them by looking vpon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her sun-stayning excellencie) will better way it by her workes vpon some meaner subiect employed. And alas, who can better witnesse that then we, whose experience is grounded vpon feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (being silly ignorant shepheards) raise vp our thoughts aboue the ordinary leuell of the worlde, so as great clearkes do not disdaine our conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes made vs when others were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of heauens? when others were running at base, to runne ouer learned writings? when other marke their sheepe, we to marke our selues? hath not shee throwne reason vpon our desires, and, as it were giuen eyes vnto Cupid? hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowship maintained friendship betweene riuals, and beautie taught the beholders chastitie? He was going on with his praises, but Strephon bad him stay, & looke: & so they both perceaued a thing which floted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the fauourable working of the Sea, then by any selfe industrie. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast vp euen hard before the[m]: at
which time they fully saw that it was a man: Wherupon running for pitie sake vnto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constanter frends to his life then his memorie) fast griping vpon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all vnder his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to cary him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew they vp a young man of so goodly shape and well pleasing fauour, that one would think death had in him a louely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called vp their care; so that lifting his feete aboue his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him vpon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recouer both breath the servuant, & warmth the companion of liuing. At length, opening his eyes, he gaue a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleasant dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, vntil (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) gate vp, and looking round about to the uttermost lymittes of his sight, and crying vpon the name of Pyrocles, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall Musidorus liue after Pyrocles? therewithall he offered willfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepheards, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparance dead had yet saued his life, and now comming to his life, shoulde be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force stickled that vnnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right haue you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I list? and what pollicie haue you to bestow a benefite where it is counted an injury? They hearing him speake in Greek (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorow, told hime they were poore men that were bound by course of humanitie to preuent so great a mischiefe, and that they wisht him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by his owne proofe, who had lately escaped as aparant danger as any might be. No, no (said hee) it is not for me to attend so high a
blissefulnesse: but since you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that some Barke may be prouided, that will goe out of the hauen, that if it be possible we may finde the body farre farre too precious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I haue within this casket, sufficient to content them. Claius presently went to a Fisherman, & hauing agreed with him, and prouided some apparell for the naked stranger, he imbarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen, but that some way into the sea they might discerne (as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his brest, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their course as neere vnto it as they could: telling, how that smoake was but a small relieue of a great fire, which had driuen both him & his friend rather to committe themselues to the cold mercie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steared therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came so neere as their eies were ful masters of the obiect, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carkas of the shippe, or rather some few bones of the carkas, hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death hauing vsed more then one dart to that destruction. About it floted great store of very rich thinges, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testifie both eleme[n]ts violence, but that the chiefe violence was growen of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisly wounds, & their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the seas visage: which it seemed the sea coulde not washe away, that it might witnes it is not alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie: in summe, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwrack without storme or ill footing: and a wast of fire in the midst of water.

But a litle way off they saw the mast, whose proude height now lay along; like a widdow hauing lost her make of whom she held her honor: but vpon the mast they sawa yong man (at least if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who sate (as on horsback) hauing nothing vpon him but
his shirt, which being wrought with blew silk & gold; had a kind of resemblance to the sea: on which the sun (then neare his Westerne home) did shooe some of his beames. His hai\r
re (which the young men of Greece vsed to weare very long) was stirred vp & down with the wind, which seemed to haue a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feet; himselfe full of admirable bea\r
utie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture: for, holding his head vp full of vnmoued maiestie, he held a sword aloft with his faire arme, which often he waue about his crowne as though he would threaten the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, & their amasement such a superstition, that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten bet\r\n\n\nweene Neptune and Venus, that had made all this terrible slaughter) as they went vnder sayle by him, held vp their hands, and made their prayers. Which when Musidorus sawe, though he were almost as much rauished with ioy, as they with astonishment, he leapt to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou liue, and arte well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) threwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond Pyrocles: and therefore Musidorus could doo no more but perswade the Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most diuine excellencies, and promising great rewarde for their paine.

And now they were altreadie come vpon the staies, when one of the saylers descried a Galley which came with sayles and oares directlie in the chase of them; and streight perceuaed it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee employed eyther to bee his Galley slaues, or to sell at the best market. Which when the Maister vnderstood, he commaunded forthwith to set on all the canuasse they could, and flie homeward, leauing in that sort poore Pyrocles so neere to be rekewed. But what did not Musidorus say? what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight? But feare standing at the gates of their eares, put back all perswasions: for that hee had nothing to accompanie Pyrocles, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leaue
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

the pursuit of them, & turne to take vp the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly he might well see them lift vp the yong man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere Pyrocles shall that bodie of thine be enchayned? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaunded to base offices? shall vertue become a slauae to those that be slaues to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so euill as vnworthy seruitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the gallie setting vpon an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friende, and to wish well to the Pirates whom before he hated, least in their ruyn hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the hauen, that they absented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselues into the sea: so that beyng as full of sorrow for being vnable to doe any thing, as voide of counsell how to doe any thing besides, that sicknesse grew something vpon him, the honest shepheards Strephon and Claius (who being themselues true friendes, did the more perfectly iudge the iustnesse of his sorrowe) aduise him, that he should mitigate somwhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured persuasion of his death, to haue no cause to dispaire of his life. as one that had lamented the death of his sheepe, should after know they were but strayed, would receiue pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

CHAP. 2.

1 The pastors comfortes to the wracked Musidorus. 2 His passage into Arcadia. The descriptions of 3 Laconia, 4 Arcadia, Kalanders 5 person, 6 house, and 7 entertainement to Musidorus, now called Palladius. His 8 sicknes, recovery, 9 and perfections.

Ow sir (saide they) thus for our selues it is. Wee are in profession but shepheards,
and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilitie of power greatly to stead you. But what we can present vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie wee are, is but a little way hence, and euen vpon the next confines.

There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name Kalander, who vouchsafeth much fauour vnto vs: A man who for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturre, but comes to his eares, for his vpright dealing so beloved of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him their vtttermost seruice, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the vse of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these cou[n]tries of Peloponnesus: and (which is worth all) all these things giue him not so much power, as his nature giues him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deserued thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recouer againe your helth, without which you can[n]ot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect, you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the co[m]fort of curtesie, & ease of wise counsell shall not be wanting.

Musidorus (who besides he was meerely vnacquainted in the cou[n]trie had his wits astonished with sorow) gaue easie consent to that, fro[m] which he saw no reason to disagree: & therefore (defraying the Mariniers with a ring bestowed vpon the[m]) they tooke their iourney together through Laconia; Claius & Strephon by course carying his chest for him, Musidorus only bearing in his cou[n]tenance euide[n]t marks of a sorrowful mind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiuing, & knowing that the violence of sorow is not at the first to be striue[n] withal: (being like a mighty beast, soner tamed with following, tha[n] overthrowe[n] by withsta[n] ding) they gaue way vnto it for that day & the next; neuer troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his mela[n]cholie, but rather fitting to his dolor dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, thogh they had not a liuely entra[n]ce to his se[n] ces shut vp in sorow, yet like one half asleep, he toke hold of much of the matters spoken vnto him, so as a man may say, ere sorow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away
something els beside his own sorow, which wrought so in him, that at le[n]gth he grew co[n]tent to mark their speeches, then to maruel at such wit in shepheardes, after to like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe confere[n]ce: so that the 3. day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heauenly floore against the com[m]ing of the Sun, the nightingales (striuing one with the other which coulde in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorow) made the[m] put of their sleepe, & rising fro[m] vnder a tree (which that night had bin their pavilio[n]) they went on their iorney, which by & by welcomed Musidorus eyes (wearied with the wasted soile of Laconia) with delightful prospects. There were hilles which garnished their proud heights with stately trees: hu[m]ble valleis, whose base estate semed co[m]forted with refreshing of siluer riuers: medows, enameld with al sorts of ey-pleasing floures: thickets, which being lined with most pleasa [n]t shade, were witnessed so to by the chereful depositio[n] of many wel-tuned birds: each pasture stored with sheep feeding with sober security, while the prety la[m]bs with bleting oratory craued the dame co[m]fort: here a shepheards boy piping, as though he should neuer be old: there a yong shepherdesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemed that her voice co[m]sorted her hands to work, & her ha[n]ds kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the cou[n]try (for many houses came vnder their eye) they were all scattered, no two being one by th'other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an acco[m]panable solitarines, & of a ciuil wildnes. I pray you (said Musidorus, then first vnsealing his long silent lips) what cou[n]tries be these we passe through, which are so diuers in shew, the one wa[n]ting no store, th'other hauing no store but of want.

The country (answered Claius) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants, (by them named Helots) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so vnhospitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

entring for feare of being mistaken.

But this countrie (where
now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and euen harde by is
the house of Kalander whether we lead you: this
countrie being thus decked with peace, and (the childe
of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered
are of men, as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of
their sheepe: and therefore in the diuision of the Arcadian
estate are termed shepheards; a happie people, wanting litle,
because they desire not much. What cause then, said
Musidorus, made you venter to leaue this sweete life, and put
your selfe in yonder vnpleasant and dangerous realme?

Garded with pouertie (answered Strephon) & guided with
loue: But now (said Claius) since it hath pleased you to aske
any thing of vs whose basenes is such as the very knwledge is
darknes: geue vs leaue to know somthing of you, & of the
young

man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better
instructed to enfome Kalender, and he the better know how
to proportion his entertainement. Musidorus (according to the
agreement betweene Pyrocles and him to alter thier names)
answered, that he called himself Palladius, and his friend
Daiphantus; but till I haue him againe (said he) I am in deed
nothing: and therefore my storie is of nothing, his
entertainement (since so good a man he is) cannot be so lowe
as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all, his
curtesie may be to helpe me by some meanes to seeke my
frend.

They perceiued he was not willing to open himselfe further,
and therefore without further questioning
brought him to the house: about which they might see
(with fitte consideration both of the ayre, the prospect,
and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie
additions, to a great house, as might well shewe, Kalender
knew that provision is the foundation of hospitalitie, and thrift
the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was built of
faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any
extraordinarie kinde of finenes, as an honorable representing
of a firme statelines. The lightes, doores and staires, rather
directed to the vse of the guest, then to the eye of the
Artificer: and yet as the one cheefely heeded, so the other not
neglected; each place handsome without curiositie, and
homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode
on, nor yet stubberd vp with good felowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleue it was exceeding beautifull. The seruants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and servicieable in behauiour, testifying euen in their countanaunces, that their maister tooke aswell care to be serued, as of the[m] that did serue. One of them was forth-with to welcome the shepheards, as men, who though they were were poore, their master greatly fauoured: and understanding by them, that the young man with whrm was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common greatnes, how so euer now eclipsed with fortune: He ranne to his master, who came presentlie foorth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepheardes, but especially applying him to Musidorus, Strephon priuately told him allwhat he knew of him, and particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be known.

No said Kalandre (speaking alowd) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mans face be not a false witnes) doe better apparell his minde, then you haue done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking Strephon by the sleeue, deliuered him a letter written ioyntly both to him and Claius from Vrania: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leave-taking of Kalandre (who quickly ghost and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastely) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing Musidorus euenu lothe to part with them, for the good conuersation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his chest vnto him, he opened it, and would haue presented the[m] with two very rich iewels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening vnto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that sight Kalandre soone iudged that his guest was of no meane calling, and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, Musidorus found his sicknes (which the fight, the sea, and late trauell had layd vpon him) grow greatly: so that fearing some suddaine accident, he deliuered the chest to Kalandre;
which was full of most pretious stones, gorgeously &
cunningly set in duerse maners, desiring him he would
bestow so much of it as was needfull, to finde out and
redeeme a young man, naming himselfe Daiphantus, as then
in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But Kalander seeing him faint more and more, with carefull
speede conueyed him to the
most com[modious lodging in his house: where being
possesst with an extreeme burning feuer, he con[tiued
some while with no great hope of life: but youth at
length got the victorie of sicksnesse, so that in six weeke the
excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible
embassadour of his health; to the great ioy of Kalander: who,
as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt
neare the Sea in Messenia, set foorth a shippe and a galley to
seeke and succour Daiphantus: so at home did hee omit
nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie
Palladius.

For hauing found in
him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of
Admiration) by dayly discourses which he delighted him
selfe to haue with him, a mind of most excellent
composition (a pearcing witte quite voide of ostentation, high
erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence
as sweete in the vttering, as slowe to come to the vttering, a
behauoir so noble, as gaue a maiestie to aduersitie: and all in
a man whose age could not be aboue one & twenty yeares,)
the good old man was euen enamoured with a fatherly loue
towards him; or rather became his seruaunt by the bondes
such vertue laid vpon him; once hee acknowledged him selfe
so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The 1 pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narra-
tion of the 2 Arcadian estate, 3 the King, 4 the Queene,
5 their two daughters, and 6 their guardians, with their
qualities, which is the ground of all this storie.
Vt Palladius hauing gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answere of the shippes set foorth, Kalander one afternoone led him abroad to a wel arayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selfe more then in any other delighted: the backeside of the house was neyther field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as soone as the descending of the stayres had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunninglie set with trees of the moste tast-pleasing fruiites: but scarcelie they had taken that into their consideracion, but that they were suddainely stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicket bend, behinde the thickets againe new beddes of flowers, which being vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Pavilion, and they to the trees a mosaical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull by counterfaiting his enemie error, and making order in confusion.

In the middest of all the place, was a faire ponde, whose shaking christall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, so that it bare shewe of two gardens; one in deede, the other in shaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked Venus of white marble, wherein the grauer had vsed such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to set foorth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe Æneas, who seemed (hauing begun to sucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her fayre eyes, which smiled at the babes follie, the meane while the breast running. Hard by was a house of pleasure builte for a Sommer retiring place, where Kalander leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workeman of Greece. There was Diana when Actæon sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame & disdaine; & one of her foolish Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was Atalanta; the posture of whose lims was so liuelie expressed, that if the eyes were the only iudges, as they be the
onely seers, one would haue sworne the very picture had runne. Besides many mo, as of *Helena, Omphale, Iole*: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excelle[n]t beautie; & more excelle[n]t would haue bene deemed, but that stood betweene the[m] a yong maid, whose wonderfulnesse tooke away all beautie from her, but that, which it might seeme she gaue her backe againe by her very shadow. And such differe[n]ce, being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a person liuing, was there betweene her and al the other, though Goddesses, that it seemd the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquistiuenes an vncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inuentio[n]. *Kalander* answered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the yonger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were conteined in that Table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents: & that he would also haue drawne her eldest sister, estemed her match for beautie, in her shepheardish attire; but that the rude clown her gardia[n] would not suffer it: nether durst he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of suspitio[n] *Palladius* perceaued that the matter was wrapt vp in some secrecie, and therefore would for modestie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which *Kalander* perceauing, well said he, my deere guest, I know your minde, and I will satisfie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of the question, but I will discouer vnto you, aswell that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is deliuered vnto me: knowing so much in you, though not long acquainted, that I shall find your eares faithfull treasurers. So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie Arcadia among all the prouinces of Greece, hath euer beeene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who
(finding that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are the onely people, which as by their Iustice and prudence geue neither cause nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, so are they not sturred with false praise to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wasting of their owne liues in rauening, that their posteritie should long liue after saie, they had done so. Euen the Muses seeme to approue their good determinatio[n], by chosing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that the very shepheards haue their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name Basilius,
a Prince of sufficient skill to gouerne so quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had set down good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth serue as a most sure bond to hold them. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not only passe al his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke al the princes liuing. Wherof the cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wisdome, height of courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre affection, as trueth of worde, meekenesse, courtesie, mercifulnesse, and liberalitie.

He being already
well striken in yeares, maried a young princes, named Gynecia, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of most vnspotted chastitie, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie shee tooke a good course: for otherwise it would haue beene terrible.

Of these two are brought
to the world two daughters, so beyond measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable ceatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much so euer some men (sharpe witted onely in euill speaking) haue sought to disgrace them. The elder is named Pamela; by many men not deemed
inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receyue the worde of more) more sweetnesse in Philoclea, but more maiestie in Pamela: mee thought loue plaide in Philocleas eyes, and threatned in Pamela; me thought Philocleas beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeelde: Pamela beautie vsed violence, and such violence as no hart could resist: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; Philoclea so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolne into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope, but teach good man[n]ers. Pamela of high thoughts, who auoides not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be voide of pride; her mothers wisdome, greatnesse, nobilitie, but (if I can ghesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our Basilius being so publickly happie as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happinesse as to be a beloued Prince, and so in his priuate blessed as to haue so excellent a wife, and so ouer-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For, hauing made a iourney to Delphos, and safely returned, within shor[t] space hee brake vp his court, and retired himself, his wife, and children into a certaine Forrest hereby, which hee calleth his desart, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of meane calling, who do all houshold seruices,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him self remaines with his younger daughter Philoclea, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without hauing any other creature liuing in that lodge with him.

Which though it be straung, yet not so straunge, as the course he hath taken with the princesse Pamela, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you accompanied? truly with none other, but one Dametas, the most arrant doltish clowne, that I thinke eu er was without the priuiledge of a bable, with his wife Miso, and daughter Mopsa, in whome no witt can deuise anie thing wherein they maie pleasure her, but to exercise her patience, and to serue for a foile of her perfections. This loutish clowne is such, that you neuer saw so ill fauourd a visar; his behauiour such, that he is beyond
the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparel, euen as I would wish him; Miso his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splayfoote haue made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she observues decoru[m], hauing a froward mind in a wretched body. Betweene these two personages (who neuer agreed in any humor, but in disagreeing) is issued forth mistresse Mopsa, a fitt woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praises in verse, I will only repeate them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are these, which I haue so often caused to be song, that I haue them without booke.

What length of verse can serue braue Mopsas good to show?
Whose vertues strange, & beuties such, as no ma[n] may know
Thus shrewdly burnded the[n], how ca[n] my muse escape?
The gods must help, and pretious things must serue to shew her shape.
Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste:
As smoothe as Pan, as Iuno milde, like goddess Iris faste.
With Cupid she fore-sees, and goes god Vulcans pace:
And for a tast of all these giftes, she steales god Momus grace.
Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue,
Her twinkling eies bedect with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:
Her haire like Crapal-stone, her mouth O heauenly wyde;
Her skin like burnisht gold, her hands like siluer vre vntryde.
   As for her parts vnknowne, which hidden sure are best:
      Happie be they which well beleue, & neuer seeke the rest.

Now truely hauing made these descriptions vnto you, me thinkes you should imagine that I rather faine some pleasant devise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banished from his own wits) could possibly make so vnworthie a choice. But truely (deare guest) so it is, that Princes, (whose doings haue beene often soothed with good successe) thinke nothing so absurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way, & so falling into the other questio[n]s, he found some of his aunswers (as a dog sure if he could speake, had
wit enough to describe his kennel) not vsensible, & all
vttered with such rudenes, which he interpeted plainnesses
(though there be great difference betweene them) that
Basilius conceauing a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court,
with apparant shew of his good opinion: where the flattering
courtier had no sooner take[n] the Princes minde, but that
there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, &
shadowes of vertues found for Dametas. His silence grew wit,
his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous
simplicite: & the Prince (according to the nature of great
persons, in loue with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that
his weaknesse with his presence would much be mended.
And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more
and more, and thus hauing first giuen him the office of
principall heardman, lastly, since he tooke this strange
determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselfe
and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too
great a sayle for so small a boate) doth so ouer-sway poore
Dametas, that if before he were a good foole in a chamber, he
might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt mee (I
fear mee in [deede]) my master will in the end (with his
cost) finde, [that] his office is not to make men, but to vse
men as men are; no more then a horse will be taught to hunt,
or an asse to mannage. But in sooth I am afraid I haue geuen
your eares too great a surfette, with the grosse discourses of
that heauie peece of flesh. But the zealous greffe I conceue to
see so great an error in my Lord, hath made me bestow more
words, then I confess so base a subiect deserueth.

CHAP. 4.

The 1 cause of Basilius his discoueringe. 2 Philanax his dis-
swasiuue letter. 3 Basilius his pruiuiledged compagnie. 4 Foure
causes why old men are discouers. 5 The state, the skil,
and
exercise of the Arcadian shepheards.
Hus much now that I haue tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian knowes. But what moued him to this strange solitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one person liuing. My selfe can conjecture, & in deed more the conjecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely sonne, by name Clitophon, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the copy which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed Clitophon for the curiositie, which made him break his duetie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subject to be revealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, haue caried about me: which before I read vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this countrie, named Philanax, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplie imbraseth integritie, besides his unfained loue to his master, wherein neuer yet any could make question, sauing, whether he loued Basilius or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either seruile-ly yeeld to al appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fansie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpoun his retourne from Delphos, (Philanax then lying sick) had written vnto him his determination, rising (as euidently appeares) vpoun some Oracle he had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this answere.
Most redouted & beloued prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue vsed my humble seruice, both I should in better season, and to better purpose haue spoken: and you (if my speech had preuayled) should haue beene at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietnes; I would then haue said, that wisdome and vertue be the only destinies appointed to ma[n] to follow, whe [n]ce we ought to seeke al our knowledge, since they be such guydes as cannot faile; which, besides their inward co[m]fort, doo lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue; or, if the wickednes of the world should oppresse it, it can neuer be said, the euil hapneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then haue said, the heauenly powers to be reuerenced, and not seached into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, then their hidden councels by curiositie. These kind of soothsayers (since they haue left vs in our selues sufficient guides) to be nothing but fansie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be preuented. But since it is weaknes too much to remember what should haue been done, and that your commandeme[n]t stretcheth to know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the maner of your determination dooth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you haue so gouerned this Region, that neither your Subiectes haue wanted iustice in you, nor you obedie[n]ce in them; & your neighbors haue found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendshippe, then make new triall of your enmitie. If this then haue proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise prouidence, generally to preuent all those things, which might enco[m]ber your happines: why should you now seeke newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then wisdome and goodnes? Why should you deprive your selfe of gouernment, for feare of loosing your gouernment? like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accounted of, arme vp your courage the more against it: for
who will stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subiectes have you in their eyes; let them see the benefits of your iustice dayly more and more; and so must they needes rather like of present sureties, then vncertaine changes.

Lastly, whether your time call you to liue or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keep the[m] both vnmaried; & as it were, to kill the joy of posteritie, which in your time you may enjoy: moused perchance by a mis-understoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficiently against such fancies? once certaine it is, the God, which is the God of nature, doth neuer teach vnnaturalnes: and even the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loues should follow: Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene most fit to restraine all euill: gieuing their mindes vertuous delights, and not greeuing them, for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall a sodain straightning them, what can it doe but argue suspicion, a thing no more vnpleasant, then vnsure, for the preseruing of vertue? Leaue womens minds, the most vntamed that way of any: see whether any cage can pleae a bird? or whether a dogge grow not fiercer with tying? what dooth ielousie, but stirre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restained? for they are treasures, or things of great delight, which men vse to hide, for the aptnesse they haue to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishment, then had it been before to haue kept the minde (which being the chife part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommending so pricipall a charge of the Princesse Pamela, (whose minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thousands such) to such a person as Dametas is (besides that the thing in it self is strange) it comes of a very euil ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faithfulnes. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but stands so farre good, as his fortune may keeepe him vnassaid: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easily changed, or easily deceiued: & so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to haue been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath
your commandement and my zeale drawn me; which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hilles, or like a poore passenger that may spie a rock, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe, to stand wholly vpon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are; and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceiue, that the cause of all, hath beene the vanitie which possesseth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing so certaine, as our continuall vncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may see by one place of Philanax letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes vs, that Basilius judgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wise (as I take it) counsell of Philanax. For, haung lost the sterne of his gouernment, with much amazement to the people, among whom mnay strange bruits are receiued for currant, and with some apparaunce of daunger in respect of the valiant Amphalus, his nephew, & much enuy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against Philanax, to see Philanax so aduaunced, though (to speake simply) he deserue more the[n] as many of vs as there be in Arcadia: the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainly to co[n]fesse, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal haue any husba[n]d, but keep the[m] thus solitary with him: wher he giues no other body leue

to visit him at any time, but a certain priest, who being excellent in poetrie, he makes him write out such things as be best likes, he being no les delightful in co[n]uersatio[n], the[n] needfull for deuotio[n], & about twe[n] ty specified shepheards, in who[m] (some foe exercises, & some for Eglogs) he taketh greater recreatio[n].

And now you know as much as my self: wherin if I haue held you ouer long, lay hardly the fault vpon my olde age, which in the very disposition of it is talkatiue: whether it be (said he smiling) that nature loues to exercise that part most, which is least decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowldge being the only thing whereof we poore old men can brag, we cannot make it
known but by utterance: or, that mankinde by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I wil say for my selfe, that I haue not laid these matters, either so openly, or largely to any as your selfe: so much (if I much fayle not) doo I see in you, which makes me both love and trust you. Neuer may he be old, answered Palladius, that dooth not reuerence that age, whose heauines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and spirituall part: and well might you haue allledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which haue shewed effects in your Prince, truly euin the last, that he should conceiue such pleasure in shepheards discourses, would not seeme the least vnto me, saving that you told me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe hauing beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by Strephon and Claius, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepheards as Homer speakes of, that be gouernors of peoples, then such senatours who hold their councell in a shepecoate: for them two (said Kalander) especially Claius, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth add to nature: for, hauing neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they haue not so much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sporte to heare how they impute to loue, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (saie they) with suche a strength.

But certainly, all the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to those sportes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare how soone euin children will beginne to versifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in meeter, either loue whetting their braine or long peace hauing begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the clowne Dametas will stumble sometimes vpon some Songs that might become a better brayne: but no sorte of people so excellent in that kinde as the pastors; for their liuing standing but vpon the looking to their
beastes, they haue ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither are our shepheardes such, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther themselues looke, or their children giue daylie attendaunce. And then truely, it would delight you vnder some tree, or by some riuers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliuer out, sometimes ioyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes chalengings one of the other, sometimes vnder hidden formes yttering such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they haue most commonly one, who iudgeth the price to the best doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to sette downe in writing all that is saide, saue that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudenesse of an vnthought-on songe. Now the choise of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnesse of voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde melancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes haue come to spende their liues among the countrie people of Arcadia; & their conuersation being well approued, the prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great courtesie and liberalitie, animates the Shepheardes the more exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cause to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them; the blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to companie. Neyther doo I accuse my maister for aduauncing a countriman, as Dametas is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as truely it is among diuers of that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder the hiest raysing, but that he would needes make election of one, the basenesse of whose minde is such, that it sinckes a thousand degrees lower, then the basest bodie could carrie the most base fortune: Which although it might bee aunsuered for the Prince, that it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great aduauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman: yet all honest hartes feele, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all aduauncement. But I am euer too long ypon him, when he crosseth the waie of my speache, and by the shaddowe of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomachs, the[n] to break the aire with my idle discourses: And more witte I
might haue learned of Homer (whome euen now you
mentioned) who neuer entertayned eyther guestes or hostes
with long speaches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly
stopped. So withall he rose, leading Palladius through the
gardeine againe to the parler, where they vsed to suppe;
Palladius assuring him, that he had alreadie bene more fed to
his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfullest trencher-men
of Media.

CHAP. 5.

The 1 sorow of Kalander for his sonne Clitophon. The
2 storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their 3 perfections,
their 4 loue, their 5 troubles, her 6 impoysoning, 7 his
rare constancie, 8 her straunge refusall, 9 their patholo-
gies, her 10 flight, his 11 reuenge on his riuall the mis-
chiefe-worker Demagoras, then Captaine of the re-
bell Helots, who 12 take him, and 13 Clitophon that
sought to helpe him: but 14 both are kept aliue by their
new captaine.

Vt beeing come to the supping place, one
of Kalanders seruaunts rounded

in his eare; at which (his colour chaungyng) hee retired
him selfe into his chamber; commaunding his men
diligentlie to waite and attend vpon Palladius, and to
excuse his absence with some neccesarie busines he had
presentlie to dispatch. Which they accordinglie did, for some
fewe dayes forcing the[m]selues to let no change appeare: but
though they framed their countenaunces neuer so cunningly,
Palladius perceaued there was some il-pleasing accident
fallen out. Whereupon, being againe set alone at supper, he
called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him the matter
of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in
the ende confessed vnto him, that his maister had receiued
newes, that his sonne before the daie of his neere marriage,
chaunst to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene
the Gentlemen of Lacedæmon and the Helots: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken prisoner by the Helots; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great ransome for his life: but that the hate those paysaunts conceued agaynst all Gentlemen was suche, that euerie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether-vnto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which losse had stricken the old Gentleman with such sorrowe, as if aboundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyred, tearing his bearde and hayre, and cursing his old age, that he had not made his graue to stoppe his eares from such advertisements: but that his faithfull seruaunts had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (Philanax the gouernour refusing to deale in it, as a priuate cause, but yet giuing leaue to seeke their best redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered vpon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge Clitophon. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to liue is a griefe vnto him, & that euen his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitality ( long and holily obserued by him) giue still such a swaie to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the straunger lodged vnder his roofe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguish, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But Palladius could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in peecees with compassion of the case, liking of Kalanders noble behauiour, kindnesse for his respect to him-warde, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his deerest friend Daiphantus, whom he iudged to suffer eyther a like or a worse fortune: therefore rising from the boorde, he desired the steward to tell him particularly the ground, and euent of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumstaunces, there might perhaps some waie of helpe be opened.

Whereunto the Steward easilie in this sorte condiscended. My Lord (said he) when our good king Basilius, with better successe then expectation, tooke to wife (euen in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes Gynecia, there came with her a young
Lord, cousin german to her selfe, named Argalus, led hether, partly with the loue & honour of his noble kinswoma[n], partly with the humour of youth, which euer thinkes that good, whose goodnes he sees not; & in this court he receiued so good encrease of knowledge, that after some yeares spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions, that Arcadia gloried such a plant was transported vnto them, being a Gentleman in deede most rarely accomplished, excellentlie learned, but without all vayne glory: friendly, without factiousnes: valiaunt, so as for my part I thinke the earth hath no man that hath done more heroicall actes then hee; how soeuer now of late the fame flies of the two princes of Thessalia and Macedon, and hath long done of our noble prince Amphialus: who in deede, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him: but I say for my part, I thinke no man for valour of minde, and habilitie of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled to Argalus; and yet so valiant as he neuer durst doo any bodie iniurie: in behauiour some will say euer sadde, surely sober, and somewhat giuen to musing, but neuer vn courteous; his worde euer ledde by his thought, and followed by his deede; rather liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had euer good choise of the receiuer: in summe (for I perceiue I shall easily take a great draught of his praises, whom both I and all this countrie loue so well) such a man was (and I hope is) Argalus, as hardly the nicest eye can finde a spot in, if the ouer-vehement constancie of yet spotles affection, may not in harde wrested constructions be counted a spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which had made bothe him, and it selfe in him, ouer all this country famous. My maisters sonne Clitophon (whose losse giues the cause to this discourse, and yet giues me cause to beginne with Argalus, since his losse procedes from Argalus) beyng a young Gentleman, as of great birth (being our kings sisters sonne) so truely of good nature, and one that can see good and loue it, haunted more the companie of this worthie Argalus, then of any other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and friendlines, as hath brought froth the effectes which you shall heare. About two yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my maister, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire Parthenia; faire in deede (fame I
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in reason to drawe liking with affection: mens actions doe not alwaies crosse with reason: to be short, it did so in deed. They loued, although for a while the fire thereof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowen by the bellowes of dispaire, vpon this occasion.

There had beene a good while before, and so continued, a sueter to this same lady, a great noble ma[n], though of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to Parthenias mother, named Demagoras: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly stout, louing no bodie but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake Parthenia; and pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so guilded ouer all his other imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers miinde) had giuen her consent; and vsing a mothers authorie vpon her faire daughter, had made her yeelded thereunto, not because shee liked her choise, but because her obedient minde had not yet taken vpon it to make choyse; and the daie of their assurance drew neere, when my young Lord Clitophon brought this noble Argalus, perchance principallie to see so rare a sight, as Parthenia by all well iudging eyes was judged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance appointed, yet loue that sawe hee had a great iourney to make in shorte time, hasted so him selfe, that before her worde could tie her to Demagoras, her harte hath vowed her to Argalus, with so gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired aboue all thinges to haue Argalus, Argalus feared nothing but to misse Parthenia. And now Parthenia had learned both liking and misliking, louing and lothing, and out of passion began to take the authoritie of iudgement; in so
much, that when the time came that Demagoras (full of proude ioy) thought to receaue the gifte of her selfe, shee with woordes of resolute refusall (though with teares shewing she was sorie she must refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her graue, then wedded to Demagoras. The chaunge was no more straunge, then vnpleasant to the mother: who beyng determinately (least I shoulde say of a great Lady, willfully) bent to marrie her to Demagoras, tryed all wayes which a wittie and hard-harted mother could vse, vpon so humble a daughter in whome the onely resisting power was loue. But the more shee assaulted, the more shee taught Parthenia to defende: and the more Parthenia defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who at length finding, that Argalus standing betweene them, was it that most eclipsed her affection from shining vpon Demagoras, she sought all means how to remoue him, so much the more, as he manifested himselfe an vnremoueable suiter to her daughter: first, by imploying him in as many da[n]gerous enterprises, as euer the euill stepmother Iuno recommended to the famous Hercules: but the more his vertue was tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to ouerthrow him, did set him vp vpon the height of honor; inough to haue moued her harte, especially to a man euery way so worthy as Argalus: but she strugling against all reason, because she would haue her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with Demagoras, the more vertuous Argalus was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquered in his co[n]quests, and therefore still imploying him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, she vsed all extremeties possible vpon her faire daughter, to make her geue ouer her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to iudge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constancie of affection: for, as to Argalus the world sooner wanted occsions, then he valour to goe thorow them; so to Parthenia, malice sooner ceased, the[n] her vnchanged patience. Lastly, by treasons, Demagoras and she would haue made away Argalus: but hee with prouidence & courage so past ouer all, that the mother tooke such a stitefull grief at it, that her hart brake withall, and she died.

But then, Demagoras assuring himselfe, that now Parthenia was her owne, she would neuer be his, and receiuing as much by her owne determinate answere, not
more desiring his owne hapines, then enuying Argalus, whom he saw with narrow eyes, euens ready to enioy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his conceite with all the mischievous counsels which disdayned loue, and enuous pride could geue vnto him; the wicked wretch (taking a tyme that Argalus was gone to his countrie, to fetch some of his principall frendes to honour the mariage, which Parthenia had most joyfully consented vnto,) the wicked Demagoras (I say) desiring to speake with her, with vnmercifull force, (her weake arms in vaine resisting) rubd all ouer her face a most horrible poyson: the effect whereof was such, that neuer leaper lookt more vgly then she did: which done, hauing his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of her serua[n]ts, as redy to reuenge as they could be, in such an vnexpected mischiefe. But the abhominablenes of this fact beinig come to my L. Kalander, he made such meanes, both by our kings intercessionm & his own, that by the king, & senat of Lacedæmo[n], Demagoras was vpon paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should haue hated the fault, ioynde himselfe, with al the powers he could make, vnto the Helots, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to haue a man of such authority among the[m]) made him their general: & vnder him haue committed diuers the most outragious villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed vpon Parthenia, Argalus returned (poore gentleman) hauing her faire image in his heart, and already promising his eies the vuttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselues of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue passions with telling you the griefe of both, when he knew her, for at first he did not, nor at first knowledge could possibly haue Vertues aide so ready, as not euen weakly to lament the losse of such aiewell, so much the more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was vnrecouerable: but within a while, trueth of loue (which still held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and euen a delight to be constant, faith geuen, and inward worthines shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the noble Argalus, that not onely in such comfort which witty arguments may bestow vpon aduersitie, but euen with the most aboundant
kindnesse that an eye-rauished louer can expresse, he laboured both to drie the extremity of sorow from her, & to hasten the celebration of their mariage: whereunto he vnfainedly shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had neuer been disinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed vnto her: and for that cause deferred his inte[n]ded reuenge vpon Demagoras, because he might continually be in her presence; shewing more hu[m]ble servieablenes, and ioy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue the rare ensa[m]ple, not to be hoped for of any other, but of another Argalus: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: for, where she desired to enioy him, more then to liue; yet did she ouerthrow both her owne desire, and his, and in no sorte would yeeld to marry him; with a strange encounter of loues affects, and effects: that he by an affection sprong from excessiue beautie, should delight in horrible foulnesse, and she, of a vehement desire to haue him, should kindly build a resolution neuer to haue him: for trueth is, that so in heart she loued him, as she could not finde in her heart he should be tied to what was vnworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might haue a fayrefield to vse eloquence in, if he did but onely repeate the lamentable, and truely affectionated speeches, while he conjured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him so vnhappy, as to think he had not only lost her face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayrest, had been but as a marshall, to lodge the loue of her in his minde; which now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beseeching her, euen with teares, to know, that his loue was not so superficial, as to go no further then the skin; which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers: how could hee be so vngratefull, as to loue her the lesse for that, which she had onely receiued for his sake? that he neuer beheld it, but therein he saw the louelies of of her loue towarde him: protesting vnto her, that he would neuer take ioy of his life, if he might not enioy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that ouerheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other answere but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I loue you: if I were
Princesse of the whole world, and had, withal, al the blessings that euer the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, & them, vnder your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must co[n]fesse) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a ioy for my hart to think of) haue accepted your vouchsafing me to be yours, & with faith and obedience would haue supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match Argalus to such a Parthenia: liue happy, deare Argalus, I geue you full libetie, and I beseech you take it; and I assure you I shall reioyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to conteine her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

But Argalus with a most heauie heart still pursuing his desire, she fixt of mind to auoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie; which (euen of him) grew vnpleasant vnto her; one night she stole away: but whether, as yet is vnknowen, or in deede what is become of her.

Argalus sought her long, and in many places: at length (despairing to finde her, and the more he despaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but first determining to be reuenged of Demagoras, hee went alone disguyused into the chiefe towne held by the Helots: where comming into his presence, garded about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his fury no longer for a fitter time, but setting vpon him, in despight of a great many that helped him, gaue him diuers mortall wounds, and himself (no question) had been there presently murthered, but that Demagoras himselfe desired he might be kept aliue; perchaunce with intention to feed his owne eyes with some cruell execution to bee layd vpon him, but death came soner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leisure to appoint his successor, a young man, not long before deliuered out of the prison of the King of Lacedæmon, where hee should haue suffered death for hauing slaine the kings Nephew: but him he named, who at that time was absent, making roades vpon the Lacedæmonians, but being returned, the rest of the Helots, for the great liking they conceiued of that yong man, (especially because they had none among themselues to
whom the others would yeeld) were content to follow Demagoras appointment. And well hath it succeeded with them, he having since done things beyond the hope of the youngest heads; of whom I speak the rather, because he hath hitherto preserved Argalus alive, under pretence to have him publiquely, and with exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende of these warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous issue.

And he hath likewise hitherto kept my young Lord Clitophon alive, who (to redeem his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of Laconia, and forces gathered by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but he issuing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the Laconians, slew many of the noble-men, & tooke Clitophon prisoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth alive: the Helots being villanously cruel; but he tempereth the [m] so, sometimes by following their humor, sometimes by struing with it, that hitherto he hath saued both their liues, but in different estates; Argalus being kept in a close & hard prison, Clitophon at some libertie. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selues of their safeties, while they are in the Helots hands, I haue delivered all I vnderstande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to Clitophons case, to be so particularly told, yet the stra[n] genes of it, made me think it would not be vnpleasent vnto you.

CHAP. 6.

1 Kalanders expedition against the Helots. 2 Their estate. 3 Palladius his stratageme against them: 4 which preuyayleth. 5 The Helots resistence, discomfiture, and re-enforce by the returne of thei new captaine 7 The combat and 8 enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius, and by their 9 meanes a peace, with the release of Ka-lander and Clitophon.
alladius thanked him greatly for it, being euen passionately delighted with hearing so strange an acci[d]ent of a knight so famous ouer the world, as Argalus, with whome he had himselfe a long desire to meet: so had famed poured as noble emulation in him, towards him.

But the[n] (wel bethinking himselfe) he called for armour, desiring them to prouide him of horse & guide, and armed al

sauing the head, he we[n]t vp to Kala[n]der, whom he found lying vpo[n] the grou[n]d, hauing euer since banished both sleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But Palladius raysed him vp, saying vn[to him:] No more, no more of this, my Lord Kalander; let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you know my selfe misse one, though he be not my sonne, I would disdayn the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will folow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, Kalanders spirits were so reuiued withal, that (receiuing some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed himselfe, and those few of his seruants he had left vnsent, and so himself guyded Palladius to the place vpon the frontiers: where already there were assembled betweene three and four thousand men, all well disposed (for Kalanders sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and braue armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enimies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them selues they knew not; but neither cunning vse of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which Palladius soone perceiuing, he desired to vnderstand (as much as could be deliuered vn[to him]) the estate of the Helots.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, that they were a kinde of people, who hauing been of old, freemen and possessioners, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which they had long borne,
till of late the *Lacedemonians* through greediness growing more heavy then they could bear, anf through contempt lesser carefull how to make them bear, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practise) set themselfes in armes, and whetting their courage with revenge, and grounding their resolution[n] upon despaire, they had proceeded with unkloked-for succes: having already take[n] divers Towns and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentrie; for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for and excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any soldierly discipline, practise had now made [them] comparable to the best of the *Lacedemonians*; & more of late then euer, by reason, first of *Demagoras* a great Lord, who had made him self of their partie, and since his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them so valourouslie, that (besides the time whwerein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in some other great co[n]licts: in such wise, that the estate of *Lacedæmon* had sent vnto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. *Palladius* hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping Clitophon: but some deuice was to be taken in hand, wherein bo lesse discretion then valour was to vsed.

Whereupon, the councel of the chiefe men was called, and at last, this way *Palladius* (who by some experience, but especiallie by reading Histories, was acquainted with stratagemes) inuented, and was by all the rest approoued: that all the men there shoulde dresse themselues like the poorest sorte of the people in *Arcadia*; hauing no banners, but bloudie shirtes hanged vpon long staues, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of drumme and fife, their armour they should aswell as might be, couer, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill-fauouredly as might well become such wearers; and this the whole number should doo, sauing two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength, whereof *Palladius* him selfe would be one, who should haue their armes chayned, and be put in
cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was captiue; and being come two houres before Sunne set within vewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie descrying their number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a cunning fellow, (so much the cunninger as that he could maske it vnder rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, deliuered vnto the *Helots* assembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then they, & therefore had put themselues in the field, & had alreadie (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten score Gentlemen prisoners, who they had there well & fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in *Arcadia*, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the fielde against their Princes forces, they were come to them for succor; knowing, that daily more & more of their qualities would flock vnto the[m], but that in the mean time, lest their Prince should pursue the [m], or the *Lacedæmonian* King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cause) fall vpon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for surety haue their prisoners ( who were such me[n] as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The *Helots* made but a short consultatio[n], being glad that their contagion had spread it selfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of *Greece*; besides their greedinessee to haue so many Gentlemen in their handes, in whose taunsoms they meant to haue a share; to which hast of concluding, two thinges wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of *Lacedæmon*: the second, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breed a proude recklesnesse in them: therefore sending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had no warre, neuer suspecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leaue
for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour under the walles. So opened they the gates, and received in the carts; which being done, and Palladius seeing fit time, he gave the signe, and shaking of their chaynes; (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that ware them might easily loose them) drew their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting upon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and so give entrie to all the force of the Arcadians, before the Helots could make any head to resist them.

But the Helots being men hardened against daungers, gathered as (well they could) together in the market place, and thence would have given a shrewd welcome to the Arcadians, but that Palladius (blaming those that were slow, hartning the[m] that were forward, but especially with his owne ensample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the Helots, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger; at length, every particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then Kalander cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but Palladius wisht him (first scouring the streates) to house all the Helots, and make themselves masters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the Helots had gotten new hart, and with divers sortes of shot from corners of streats, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come unto them by the returne of their Captain; who though he brought not many with him (having dispersst most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great number running out of the gate, not yet possessed by the Arcadians, he made them turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpets give the lowdest testimonie he could of his returne, which once heard, the rest of the Helots which were otherwise scattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had beene a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had sprung. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obstinacie. The Arcadians fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the Helots to recover what they had lost. The Arcadians, as in an vnknowne place, hauing no
succour but in their handes; the *Helots*, as in their own place, fighting for their liuings, wiues, & children. There was victory & courage against reuenge and despaire: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

At length, the left winge of the *Arcadians* began to loose ground; which *Palladius* seeing, he streight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed the [m], with such an ouerflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whose eies soon judged of that wherwith the[m] selues were gouerned) saw that he alone was worth al the rest of the *Arcadians*. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that cast the game lay, and disdaining to fight with any other, sought onely to ioine with him: which minde was no lesse in *Palladius*, hauing easily marked, that he was as the first mouer of al the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselues to be the vttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the battaile in noise and number, as it was surpassing in brauery of fighting, & (as it were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men despising death; both confident, as vnwonted to be ouercome; yet doubtfull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already seene. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge should haue bene sharply visited, but that the aunswered was as quicke as the obiection. Yet some lighting; the smart bred rage, and the rage bred smarte againe: till both sides beginning to waxe faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to liue victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake Palladius vpon the side of the head, that he reeled stonied: and withall the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the Arcadians were redie to shield him from any harme that might arise of that nakednes.
But little needed it, for his chiefe enemie in stead of pursuing that aduauntage, kneeled downe, offering to deliuer the pommell of his sworde, in token of yeelding, with all speaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his prisoner, then any others generall. Palladius standing vppon him selfe, and misdoubting some craft, and the Helots (that were next their captaine) wauering betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, said the captaine, hath Palladius forgotten the voice of Daiphantus?

3 By that watche worde Palladius knew that it was his onely friende Pyrocles, whome he had lost vpon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, caused the retraite to be sounded, Daiphantus by authoritie, and Palladius by persuasion; to which helped well the little aduauntage that was of eyther side: and that of the Helots partie their Captaines behauiour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the Arcadian side the good olde Kalander striuing more than his old age could atchieue, was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night, which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious sightes one from the other. But he that tooke Kalander, meant nothing lesse then to saue him, but onelie so long, as the Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreit to be sounded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whom should he see next to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the Arcadians) but his sonne Clitophon? But nowe the Captaine had caused all the principall Helots to be assembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receiue a message from the Arcadians; Amo[n]g whom Palladius vertue (besides the loue Kalander bare him) hauing gotte[n] principall authoritie, he had persuaded them to seeke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted []) made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therfore was donne in orderly manner, giuing them to vnderstand, that as they came but to deliuer Clitophon, so offering to leaue the
footing they already had in the town, to goe away without any further hurte, so as they might haue the father, & the sonne without ransome deliuered. which conditions beyng heard and conceaued, by the Helots, Daiphantus perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can bee deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our selues that same badde humour of reuenge. Besides, iti s like to stirre Arcadia vppon vs, which nowe, by vsing these persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, least the king and nobilitie of Laconia (with whom now we haue made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of this quarrell to ioyne the Arcadians with them, & so breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in al deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with the harme of the euill successe) you shall find this way most safe and honorable.

The Helots asmuch moued by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were content therewith. Whervpon, Palladius tooke order that the Arcadians should presently march out of the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and so auoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarrel might enge[n] der. This being on both sides concluded on, Kalander and Clitophon, who now (with infinite ioy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of Daiphantus: Clitophon telling his father, how Daiphantus (not without danger to himselfe) had preserued him from the furiose malice of the Helots: & euen that day going to conclude the peace (least in his absence he might receiue some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promise he should take the part of the Helots, which he had in this fight perfourmed, little knoweing it was against his father: but (said Clitophon) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saued me from many deaths, which already laid hold on me: which Kalander with teares of ioy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But Daiphantus, who loued doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to
know how Palladius (for so he called Musidorus) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiving a brief declaration of Kalander, he sent him word by Clitophon, that he should not as now come vnto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the Helots minds, that he would adventure him in their power, who was so well known with an vnfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to return with Kalander, whether also he within few daies (hauing dispatched himselfe of the Helots) would repaire. Kalander would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, protesting, he would esteme his house more blessed then a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for Argalus[:]; Daiphantus assured them that hee would die, but hee woulde bring him, (though till then kept in close prison, indeed for his safetie, the Helots being so animated against him as els hee could not haue liued) and so taking their leaue of him, Kalander, Clitophon, Palladius and the rest of the Arcadians swearing that they would no further in any sort molest the Helots, they straight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were alreadie within the limits of Arcadia.

CHAP. 7[.]

The articles of peace betwene the Lacedæmonians & Helots, 2 Daiphantus his departure from the Helots with Argalus to Kalanders house. 3 The offer of a straunge Lady to Argalus, 4 his refusal, and 5 who she was.

He Helots of the other side shutting their gates, gaue them selues to burye their dead, to cure their woundes, and rest their weered bodies: till (the next day bestowing the chereful vse of the light vpon them) Daiphantus making a generall convocation spake vnto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) haue diliuered vs out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie swallowed. For all being lost, (had
they had not directed, my return so iust as they did) it had 
bene too late to recouer that, which being had, we could not 
keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall 
men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne 
betweene vs, you may easily conceiue, what little reason we 
haue to think, but that either by some supplie out of Arcadia, 
or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made 
fruites of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should 
haue had our power turned to ruine, our pride to repentance 
and sorow. but now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and 
the error committed, in retaining Clitophon more hardly then 
his age or quarrel deserued, becomes a sharply learned 
experience, to vse in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the conclusion 
between the Kings with the Nobilitie of Lacedæmon, 
and you; which is in all points as your selues desired: 
aswell for that you would haue graunted, as for the 
assuranceof what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you 
presently haue, are still left vnto you, to be kept either with or 
without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the 
Countrie, and pay such dueties as the rest of the Laconians 
do. Your selues are made by publique decree, free men, and 
so capable both to giue and receiue voice in election of 
Magistrates. The distinction of names betweene Helots and 
Lacedæmonians to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently 
to enjoy both names and priuiledges of Laconians. Your 
children to be brought vp with theirs in Spartane discipline: 
and so you (framing your selues to be good members of that 
estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer seruaunts. [W] 
ich conditions youo see, cary in themselues no more 
contentation then assurance. For this is not a peace which is 
made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of 
them. Lastly, a forgetfulnes decreed of all what is past, they 
shewing the[m]selues glad to haue so valiant men as you are, 
ioynd with them: so that you are to take mindes of peace, 
since the cause of war is finished; and as you hated them 
before like oppressours, so now to loue them as brothers; to 
take care oftheir estate because it is yours, and to labour by 
vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your 
ioyning. But now one Article onely they stood vpon, which in 
the end I with your commissioners haue agreed vnto, that I
should no more tarry here, mistaking perchaunce my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king Amiclas procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kill his nephew Eurileon; but how soeuer it be, I haue condiscended. But so will not wee cried almost the whole assemblie, cou[n]celling one an other; rather to trye the uttermost euent, then to loose him by who[m] they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferr[e] such an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not preuaile, til openly he sware, that he would (if at any time the Lacedaemonians brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setling them in perfect order, hee tooke his leaue of them, whose eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and making temples vnto him as to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to haue a witt so farre ouergoing his age, and such dreadful terror proceed from so excellent beutie. But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for Argalus, whom also (vppon oath neuer to beare armes against the Helots) he deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Iewells of his owne, he would haue parted alone with Argalus, (whose countenaunce well shewed, while Parthenia was lost he counted not himselfe deliuered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into Arcadia. Where again leauing the [m] all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the wel-knowne house of Kalander: There was he receiued with louing ioye of Kalander, with ioyfull loue of Palladius, with humble (though doulful) demeanor of Argalus whom specially both he and Palladius regarded) with gratefull seruisablenes of Clitophon, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashefull kinde of modestie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was vnmooued with sight of the most horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had mistaken her woorke to haue a Marses heart in a Cupides bodye: All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they has scene
the uttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder Palladius had before stirred, but that Daiphantus, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the advantagge in the moyst and fickle impression of eye-sight. But while all men (sauing poore Argalus) made the ioy of their eyes speake for their harts towards Daiphantus: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleas[a]nt aduenture among the[m].

It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to Kalander a messenger, that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the fair Helen Queene of Corinth; was come thither, and desired to be lodged in his house. Kalander (most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie guests with him, sauing onely Argalus, who remained in his chamber, desirous that this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his solitarie quest after Parthenia. But when they met this Lady; Kalander streight thought he sawe his neece Parthenia, and was about in such familiar sorte to haue spoken vnto her: But she in graue and honorable manner giuing him to vnderstand that he was mistaken, he halfe ashamed, excused himselfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them, though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion; shee said, it might very well be, hauing bene many times taken one for an other. But assoone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest, she desired to speake with Argalus publickly, who she heard was in the house. Argalus came in hastely, and as hastelie thought as Kalander had done, with sodaine chaunges of ioye into sorrow. But she whe[n] she had stayd their thoughts with telling them her name, and qualitie in this sort spake vnto him. My Lord Argalus, sayd she, being of late left in the court of Queene Helen of Corinth, as chiefe in her absence (she being vpo[n] some occasion gone the[n]ce) there came vnto me the Lady Parthenia, so disguysed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so oughly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was Parthenia. Yet at last finding certenly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had euer told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes bewteene vs, I tooke the best care I could of her and of her vnderstood the
whole tragicall historie of her vndeserued aduenture: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord Argalus: which whosoeuer loues not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthie to liue in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salue the inward sore of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly disiring, and persuading me, to thinke of no husbande but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loued; with-all, she gaue me this Ring to deliuer you; desiring you, & by the authoritie of loue co[m]maunding you, that the affection you bare her you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who shuld rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceeding: and therfore I am come (with faithfull loue built vpo[n] your worthines) to offer my self, & to beseech you to accept the offer: & if these noble ge [n]tleme[n] prese[n]t will say it is great folly, let the[m] withal, say it is great loue. And then she staid, earnestly attending Argalus his answere, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could, to Parthenia) thus answered her.

Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I vnto you, for this, no more rare, then noble courtesie; but most bound for the goodnes I perceiue you shewed to the lady Parthenia, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes; but he followed on) and as much as so vnfortunat a man, fitte to be the spectacle of miserie, can doo you service; determine you haue made a purchase of a slaue (while I liue) neuer to fayle you. But this great matter you propose vnto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see what happines it should be vnto mee; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to giue, you before al other, should haue it; but Parthenias it is, though dead: there I began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I shall not long tarry after her, with whose beautie if I had onely been in loue, I should be so with you,who haue the same beautie: but it was Parthenias selfe I loued, and loue; which no likenes can make one, no co[m]maundement dissolue, no fouldes defile, nor no death finish. And shall I receiue (said she) such disgrace, as to be refused? Noble Ladie (said he) let not that harde word be vsed; who know
your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert: but it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happines I could and can desire, I am refused.

He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbrasing him, Why then Argalus (saide she) take thy Parthenia; and Parthenia it was indeede. But because sorow forbad him too soon to beleeue, she told him the trueth, with all circumstances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitarie place, as she hapned to make her complaint, the Queen Helen of Corinth (who likewise felt her part of miseries) being then walking alone in that lo[n]ely place, heard her, and neuer left, till she had knowen the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pittyng, she sent her to a Physition of hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could helpe her: which in such sorte as they saw perfourmed, and she taking with her of the Queenes seruaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget his true Parthenia, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the Corinthian Gentlemen, who before had kept her counsell, and Argalus easily perswaded to what more then ten thousand yeares of life he desired: and Kalander would needes haue the mariage celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare guestes, towards whom he was now (besides his owne habite of hospitalitie) carried with loue and dutie: & therfore omitted no service that his wit could inuent, and his power minister.

CHAP. 8.

The aduentures first of Musidorus, then of Pyrocles since their shipwracke, to their meeting. 3 The mariage of Ar-galus and Parthenia.

Vt no waie he sawe he could so much pleasure them, as by leauing the two friends alone, who being shruncke aside to the banqueting house where the pictures
were; there Palladius recounted vnto him, that after they had both aba[n]doned the burning ship (& either of them taken some thing vnder him the better to supporte him to the shore) he knew not how, but either with ouer-labouring in the fight and sodaine colde, or the too much receauing of salt water, he was past himselfe: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to doo) the chest that was vnder him, he was cast on the sandes, where he was taken vp by a couple of Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him selfe, when he despaired of his safetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fisher boate, he had by the Shepheards persuasion come to this Gentlemans house; where being daungerouslie sicke, he had yelded to seeke the recovery of health, onely for that he might the sooner go seeke the deliuerie of Pyrocles: to which purpose Kalander by some friends of his in Messenia, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of Clitophons taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. The[n] did he set foorth vnto him the noble entertainement and careful cherishing of Kalander towards him, & so vpon occasio[n] of the pictures present deliuered with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what Kalander had told him touching the strange storie (with al the particularities belonging) of Arcadia, which did in many sortes so delight Pyrocles to heare; that he would needs haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till Kalander him selfe had answered him diuers questions.

But first at Musidorus request, though in brief man[n] er, his mind much running vpo[n] the strange storie of Arcadia, he did declare by what course of adue[n]tures he was come to make vp their mutuall happinesse in meeting. When (cosin, said he) we had stript our selues, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swom a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of the shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came aliuie to the shore, you would seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perishe as to liue, so that place as good to perish in as an other. There I found my sworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall wauing it about my head, that saylers by it might haue
the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde prisoner, presentlie sett vpon another shippe, and mainteining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the sworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie prayse one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune subject to doubtfullnes) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I sought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwise I would haue bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kings of Lacedæmon hauing sett out some Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boorded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kil Eurileon the Kings nephew: but in the end they preuailed, & we were all take prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of Daiphantus, according to the resolution you know is betweene vs,) but beyng laid in the iayle of Tenaria, with speciall hate to me for the death of Eurileon, the popular sort of that towne conspired with the Helots, and so by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so deliuered me; and I mooued with gratefulnesse, and encouraged with carelesnesse of life, so behaued my selfe in some conflictes they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking vsnsensible wonders of mee, and withall so much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of Lacedæmon, (their chiefe Captayne beyng slaine as you knowe by the noble Argalus, who helped thereunto by his perswasion) hauing borne a great affection vnto me, and to auoyde the daungerous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who should haue the place, and all so affected, as rather to haue a straunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie,) restoring vnto mee such things of mine as being taken first by the pyrates, and then by the Lacedæmonians, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my successe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you deliuered Clitophon, whom I with
much adoo had preserued. And in my peace the King Amiclas of Lacedæmon would needes haue mee bannished, and depruied of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted : which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to travaile ouer the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere Musidorus) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kissinge each other) they called Kalander, of whom Daiphantus desired to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to Palladius, and to see the letter of Philanax, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene Argalus and the faire Parthenia beyng to be celebrated, Daiphantus and Palladius selling some of their jewels, furnished themselues of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges so much beautifie, nor all the daintie deuises so much delight, as the fairenesse of Parthenia, the pearle of all the maydes of Mantiniæa: who as shee went to the Temple to bee maried, her eyes themselues seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were keppe close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to inuite the guestes that looke on them; her cheekes blushing, and withal when shee was spoken vnto, a little smilyng, were like roses, when their leaues are with a little breath stirred : her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare shewe as if the voward fayled, yet that would conquere. Daiphantus marking her, O Iupiter (said he speaking to Palladius) how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to Arcadia? But Palladius not greatly attending his speach, some daies were continued in the solemnising the marriage, with al conceipts that might deliuer delight to mens fancies.

CHAP.  9.

[1] Pyrocles his inclination to loue. 2 His, and Musidorus disputation thereabouts 3 broken of by Kalander.
Vt such a change was growen in Daiphantus, that (as if cheerefulnesse had bene tediousse, and good entertainment were turnd to discourtesie) he would euer get him selfe alone, though almost when he was in companie he was alone, so little attention he gaue to any that spake vnto him: euen the colour and figure of his face began to receive some alteration; which he shewed little to heed: but euerie morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods towards the desert, it seemed his only comfort was to be without a comforter. But long it could not be hid from Palladius, whom true loue made redy to marke, & long knowledge able to marke; & therfore being now grow[n]e weary of his abode in Arcadia, hauing informed himselfe fully of the strength & riches of the coun[try], of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes: and, seing the courte could not be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapheardish people, he greatly desired a speedy returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had troden. But perceauing this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake with him thereof, and then to hasten his returne; whereto he founde him but smally inclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances, as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say vnto him.

A mind wel trayned and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthy cosin) doth not easily chaunge any course it once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded & well wayed causes. For being witnes to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price, for which it should be altered. Euen the very countenaunce and behauiour of such a man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonic betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe suitable to the vertuous resolution of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friend Pyrocles) the excellencie of whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo not sufficiently know, hauing scene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenes, and
not your vnworthines. But as in deede I know it, and knowing it, most dearely loue both it, and him that hath it; so must I needs saye, that since our late comming into this country, I haue marked in you, I will not say an alteratio[n], but a relenting truely, & a slacking of the maine career, you had so notably begun, & almost performed; and that in such sorte, as I cannot finde sufficient reason in my great loue toward you how to allow it; for (to leaue of other secreter arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me easily finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyfes, that whereas you were wont in all places you came, to giue your selfe vehemently to the knowledge of those thinges which might better your minde; to seeke the familiaritie of excellent men in learning and souel, and lastly, to put all these thinges in praftise both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie enterpryse, as occasion fell for them; you now leaue all these things undone: you let your minde fal a sleepe: beside your countenaunce troubled (which surely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heauen, is without cloudes) and lastly you subiect your selfe to solitarines, the slye enimie, that doth most separate a man from well doing. \textit{Pyrocles} minde was all this while so fixed vpon another devotion, that he no more attentively marked his friends discourse, then the childe that hath leaue to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the diligent Pilot in a daangerous tempest doth attend the vnskilful words of a passinger: yet the very sound having imprinted the general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike of so deerely an esteemed friend, and desirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (witnessing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose. Excellent \textit{Musidorus}, in the praise you gaue me in the beginning of your spech, I easily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde you haue thought so well of me, if extremitie of loue had not made your iudgement partiall, nor you could haue loued me so intierlie, if you had not beene apt to make so great (though vndeserued) iudgements of me; and euen so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I haue euer through weaknes been subiect, yet you by the daily mending of your mind haue of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not discerne; so that the chaunge you speake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your betring. And yet
vnder the leaue of your better judgement, I must needes say thus much, my deere cosin, that I find not my selfe wholye to be condemned, because I do not with continuall vehemecy folow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it selfe must (like other things) sometimes be vnbent, or else it will be either weakned, or broken: And these knowledges, as they are of good vse, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe vnto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Trulie as I know not all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselues. And in such contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enioye my solitarines; and my solitarines perchaunce is the nurse of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and they are but sheepe, which alwaies heard together; co[n]demne not therefore my minde somtime to enioy it selfe; nor blame not the taking of such times as serue most fitte for it. And alas, deere Musidorus, if I be sadde, who knowes better then you the iust causes I haue of sadnes? And here Pyrocles sodainly stopped, like a man vnsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might wel haue serued to haue satisfied another. And so looking with a countenaunce, as though he desired he should know his minde without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward euill, sending againe new blood to his face, he continued his speach in this manner. And Lord (dere cosin, said he) doth not the pleasauntnes of this place carry in it selfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you not see how all things conspire together to make this cou[n]try a heauenly dwelling? Do you not see the grasse how in colour they excell the Emeralds, euerie one striuing to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expresse? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their florishing olde age with the onely happines of their seat, being clothed with a continuall spring, because no beautie here should euer fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweet co[n]sent of their voyces? Is not euery eccho therof a perfect Musicke? and these fresh and delightful brookes how
slowly they slide away, as loth to leave the company of so many things united in perfection? and with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainly, certainly, cosin, it must needs be that some Goddesse enhabiteth this Region, who is the soul of this soile: for neither is any, lesse then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such a heap of pleasures: nor any lesse the a Goddesse, could have made it so perfect a plotte of the celestial dwellings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rufly casting his eye vpon Musidorus, as more desirous of pittie then pleading. But Musidorus had all this while helde his looke fixed vpon Pyrocles countenance; and with no lesse louing attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceived such strange diversities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gave him ground to settle any judgement: for, besides his eyes sometimes even great with teares, the oft changing of his colour, with a kind of shaking vnstayednes ouer all his body, he might see in his countenance some great determinatio[n] mixed with feare; and might perceive in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which served as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wo[n]ted phrase) not knit together to one consta[n]t end, but rather dissolved in it selfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde passion preuayled: which made Musidorus frame his aunswere neerest to that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For, hauing in the beginning of Pyrocles speech which defe[n]ded his solitarines, framed in his minde a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of co[n]teplatio[n] is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in action a man did not onely better himself, but benefit others; that the gods would not have deliuered a soule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instrume[n]ts of doing, but that it wer inte[n]ded the mind should imploy the[m] & that the mind should best know his own good or euill, by præftise: which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeelded to the sharpnes of his wit. When he found Pyrocles leaue that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and ioyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor vttre more store of passion; and euen thus kindly embrasing him, he said: Your
words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitarinesse, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe vp into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enjoie the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be perswaded to follow solitarines. And euen so doo I giue you leaue (sweet Pyrocles) euer to defend solitarines; so long, as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the excessiue praises you giue to this countrie; in trueth it is not vnpleasant: but yet if you would returne into Macedon, you should see either many heauens, or find this no more then earthly. And euen Tempe in my Thessalia, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought vp together) is nothing inferiour vnto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subiect: or els you feede sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easilie trauaile ouer mountaines, as molehils: and so like wel disposed men, set vp euery thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fantasticall mind-infected people, that children & Musitia[n]s cal Louers. This word, Louer, did no lesse pearce poore Pyrocles, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sick of the Tarantula. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a sodaine motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sounde of that word; yet after some pause (lifting vp his eyes a little from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of Musidorus) armed with the verie cou[n]tenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as euen that miserable subiect of his conning, whereof you speake ? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out Musidorus) that euer my eare should be poysoned with so euill newes of you. O let me neuer know that any base affectio[n] shuld get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, Kalander came, and brake of their discourse, with inuiting the[m] to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which beeing harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good sporte, and driue away some part of Daiphantus melancholy. They condiscended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished the[m]
selues as liked them Daiphantus writing a few vvordes which he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.

1 Kalanders hunting. 2 Daiphantus his close departure, 3 and letter 4 Palladius his care, and 5 quest after him, 6 accompanied with Clitophon. 7 His finding and taking on Amphilus his armor 8 Their encounter with Queene Helens attendants. 9 Her mistaking Palladius.

Hen went they together abroad, the good Klander entertaining the[m], with pleasant discoursing, howe well he loued the sporte of hunting vvhen he was a young man, how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights; that the Sunne (how great a iornie soeuer he had to make) could neuer preuent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) disswade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding[.] O, saide he, you will neuer liue to my age, without you kepe your selues in breath with exercise, and in hart with ioyfullnes: too much thinking doth consume the spirits: & oft it falles out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember how much Arcadia was chaunged since his youth: actiuitie & good felowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. Then would he tell them stories of such gallaunts as he had knowen: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times hast, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining Accent crauing libertie: many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it showed they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liueries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staues in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to sounde an alarum vpon a sillie fugitiue. The houndes were straight uncoupled,
and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimbleness of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but euens his feete betrayed him; for howsoeuer they went, they themselues yttered themselues to the sent of their enemies; who one taking it of an other, and sometimes beleewing the windes advertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull councellors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was alreadie begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a musick. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horsmen sundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citizens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters; and euens the Nimph Echo left to bewayle the losse of Narcissus, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leauing his flight) he was driuen to make courage of despaiire; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifie that he was at bay: as if from hotte pursueit of their enemie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

But Kalander (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besiged Deere; whom when some of the younger sort would haue killed with their swordes, he woulde not suffer: but with a Crossebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the vnkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among them that had killed him, Daiphantus was mist, for whom Palladius carefully enquiring, no newes could be giuen him, but by one that sayd, he thought he was returned home; for that he markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by-way, which might lead to Kalanders house. That answer for the time satisfying, and they hauing perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned: some talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie; some of the fairenes of his head; some of the hounds cunning; some of their speed; and some of their cry: til comming home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit the Suns office) they found Daiphantus was not to
bee found. Whereat Palladius greatly maruailing, and a day or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could help him to knowledge, at last he lighted vpon the letter, which Pyrocles had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his studie among other of his writings. The letter was directed to Palladius himselfe, and conteyned these words.

My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into such a course, wherof your knowledge may much more vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, since: if I wrong you, it is in respect I beare you. Returne into Thessalia, I pray you, as full of good fortune,as I am of desire: and if I liue, I will in short time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

This was all, and this Palladius read twise or thrise ouer, Ah (said he) Pyrocles, vvhat meanes this alteratio[n]? vvhat haue I deserued of thee, to be thus banished of thy counsels? Heretofore I haue accused the sea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my euill fortune, that deprived me of thee; But now thy self is the sea, vvhich drounes my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes thy selfe of me: Thy owne vvill becomes my euill fortune. The[n] turned he his thoughts to al forms of ghesses that might light vpon the purpose and course of Pyrocles: for he was not so sure by his wordes, that it was loue, as he was doubtful where the loue was. One time he thought, some beautie in Laconia had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be Parthenias excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of obiections rising against any accepted opinion.

Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, neuer to leaue seeking him, till his search should be either by meeting acco[m]plished, or by death ended. Therfore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secrete determination should be kept from any suspition in others) he went to Kalandel, and told him, that he had receaued a message from his friend, by which he vnderstood he was gone backe againe into Laconia, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had vndertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such priuate wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell:
arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or
prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good
store of monie, and a fewe choise iewels, leauing the greatest
number of them, & most of his apparell with Kalander: which
he did partly to giue the more cause to Kalander to expect
their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitiue after the
[m]: and partly to leaue those honorable thankes vnto him, for
his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way
receaue. The good old man hauing neither reason to dissuade,
nor hope to persuade, receaued the things, with mind of a
keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might
haue the happines, fully to know what they were: which he
said, he had euer till then delaid, fearing to be any way
importune: but now he could not be so much an enemie to his
desires as any longer to imprison the[m] in silence. Palladius
tolde him that the matter was not so secrete, but that so
worthie a friend deserued the knowledge, and shuld haue it as
soone as he might speak with his frie[n]d: without whose
consent (because their promise bound him otherwise) he
could not reueale it: but bad him hold for most assured, that if
they liued but a while, he should find that they which bare the
names of Daipha[n]tus and Palladius, would giue him & his
cause to thinke his noble courtesie wel imploied. Kala[n]der
would presse him no further: but desiring that he might haue
leaue to go, or at least to sende his sonne and seruaunts with
him, Palladius brake of all ceremonies, by telling him; his
case stood so, that his greatest fauour should be in making
lest adoo of his parting. Wherewith Kalander knowing it to
be more cumber then courtesie, to striue, abstained from
further vrging him, but not from hartie mourning the losse of
so sweet a conversaition.

Onely Clitophon by vehement importunitie obteyned to go
with him, to come againe to Daiphantus, whom he
named and accou[n]ted his Lord. And in such priuate
guise departed Palladius, though hauing a companio[n]
to talke with all, yet talking much more with vnkindnesse.
And first they went to Mantinæa; whereof because Parthenia
was, he suspected there might be some cause of his abode.
But finding there no newes of him he went to Tegæa, Ripa,
Enispe, Stymphalus, and Pheneus, famous for the poisonous
Stygian water, and through all the rest of Arcadia, making
their eyes, their eares, and their tongue serue almost for
nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but
that in none of those places he was knowne. And so went they, making one place succeed to an other, in like
vncertaintie to their search, manie times encountering strange adue[n]tures, worthy to be registred in the roulles of fame;
but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of either side
of which high hils lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the pleasantnes of their vnnder-
prospect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of the[m]selues, inuited to light fro[m] their horses;
& pulling of their bits, that they might something refresh their mouths vnpon the grasse (which plentifully grewe, brought vp
vnder the care of those wel shading trees,) they the[m]selues laid the[m] downe hard by the murmuring musicke of certain
waters, which spouted out of the side of the hils, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many springs a pretie brooke,
like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion of sleepe, they rose, and
walkt onward in that shadie place, till Clitiphon espied a peece of armour, & not far of an other peece: and so the sight
of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpeece &. shield, by the deuise whereof,
which was he streight knew it to be the armour of his cousin, the noble Amphialus. Wherupon (fearing some inco[n]uenience hapned vnto him) he told both
his doubte, and his cause of doubte to Palladius, who (considering therof) thought best to make no longer stay, but
to follow on: least perchance some viole[n]ce were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to
set in ballance with any Knight liuing. Yet with a sodaine concept, hauing long borne great honour to the name of
Amphialus, Palladius thought best to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that should know that
armour, some newes of Amphialus, & yet not hinder him in the search of Daiphantus too. So he by the help of Clitophon
quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some
fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too great, but yet serued well enough.

And so getting on their horses, they trauailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field,
they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses,
furnished all in blacke, with a black a more boy vpo[n] euery horse, they al apparellled in white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black & white. But before they could come so neere as to discerne what was within, there came running vpo[n] them aboue a dozen horsmen, who cried to the[m] to yeeld the[m]selues prisoners, or els they should die. But Palladius not accustomed to grant ouer the possessio[n] of him self vpon so vniust titles, with sword drawne gaue them so rude an answer, that diuers of the[m] neuer had breath to reply again: for being wel backt by Clitophon & hauing an excelle[n]t horse vnder him, when he was ouerprest by some, he aooided them, and ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellows faults: and so, ether with cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life serue to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, assuring the black boies they should haue no hurt, who were els readie to haue run away, & looking into the coach, he fou[n]d in the one end a Lady of great beaulie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but al as much darkened, as might be, with sorow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well, they were but her seruants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Ge[n]tleman (whom he knew not) painted, hauing in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.

But the chiefe Ladie hauing not so much as once heard the noise of this coflict (so had sorow closed vp al the entries of her mind, & loue tied her se[n]ces to that beloued picture) now the shadow of him falling vpo[n] the picture made her cast vp her eie, and seeing the armour which too wel she knew, thinking him to be Amphialus the Lord of her desires, (bloud coming more freely into her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for feare) with a pitiful looke (like one vniustly conde[m]ned) My Lord Amphialus (said she) you haue enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leaue you, & euil fortune me; if not I pray you, (& to graunt, my praier fitter time nor place you can haue) accomplish the one euen now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be slowly vttered in her ofte staying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares, that Palladius could not hold her longer in errour, but pulling of his helmet, Madame (said he) I perceae
you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set vpon
(without any cause giue[n] by me) by some of your seruants,
whom because I haue in my iust defence euill entreated, I
came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo, I
find greater cause, why I should craue pardon of you. When
she saw his face, & heard his speech, she looked out of the
coach, and seing her men, some slaine, some lying vnder their
dead horses,and striuing to get from vnder them, without
making more account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are
well serued that durst lift vp their armes against that armour.
But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come you
by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it,
then haue I more to say vnto you. Palladius assured her it was
not so; telling her the true manner how he found it. It is like
enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath
lately vsed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your
prowes hath bereft me of my company: let it yet so farre
heale the woundes it selfe hath giuen, as to garde me to the
next towne. How great so euer my businesse be fayre Ladie
(said he) it shall willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first
euen by the fauour you beare to the Lorde of this noble
armour, I coniure you to tell me the storie of your fortune
herein, lest hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie
in so straunge a plight come before mine eyes, I condemne
my selfe of want of consideration in not hauing demaundd
thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein
my sworde and faith may auail me, they shall binde
themselves to your seruice. Your coniuration, fayre Knight
(said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and
that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being
but by one vnrelieuzeable) to graunt your wil herein: and to
say the truth, a straunge nicenesse were it in me to refraine
that from the eares of a person representing so much
worthinesse, which I am glad euen to rockes and woods to
vtter.

CHAP. 11.

The story of Queene Helen 2 Philoxenus her suiter 3 Am-
phialus an intercessor for his friende. 4 His praises,
5 birth, and 6 education . 7 Her love wonne to himzelfe
8 His refusall and departure 9 Philoxenus wronge-rage
against him. 10 *Their fight.* 11 *The death of sonne and father.* 12 Amphialus *his sorrow and detestation of the Queen.* 13 *A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour.*: 14 *whose griefe is amplified by meeting his dead frends dog.* 15 Palladius *his parting with Helen and Clitophon.*

Now you then that my name is Helen, Queene by birth: and hetherto possession of the faire Citie and territorie of *Corinth.* I can say no more of my selfe, but beloued of my people: and may justly say, beloued, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receive; assoone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suiters; some perchaunce louing my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoever my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom ether birth or vertue gauve courage to auowe so high a desire.

Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord Philoxenus, sonne and heire to the vertuous noble man *Timotheus*: which Timotheus was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this sonne of his I must say truly, not vnwor-thy of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of seruiseablenes to mee, and setting forth of himselfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him then any of the rest: which in some proportion my countenaunce deliuered vnto him. Though I must protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it deliuered at all any affection, whereof my hart was utterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule, & thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whiles Philoxenus in good sorte pursued my fauour, and perchaunce nourished himselfe with ouer much hope, because he found I did in some sorte
acknowledge his valew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she loked vpon the picture before her, & straight sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and the her speach staied the tale, hauing brought her to that loke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But Palladius greatly pitying so sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knowen, and honoured, besought her for her promise sake, to put silence so longe vnto her moning, til she had recounted the rest of this story.

Why said she, this is the picture of Amphialus: what neede eare is so barbarous but hath hard of Amphialus? who follows deeds of Armes, but euery where findes monumet of Amphialus? who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of Amphialus? where are all heroicall parts, but in Amphialus? O Amphialus I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so: with that she wept againe, til he againe solliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of Amphialus: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of Amphialus?

This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to Basilius King of Arcadia, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till Basilius in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cosin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of Argos, either disdaining, or fearing, that her sonne should liue vnder the power of Basilius sent him to that Lorde Timotheus (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought vp in company with his sonne Philoxenus?

A happie resolution for Amphialus, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trayned on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his
mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue giuen him. The good Timotheus[ ]no lesse louing him then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres and shortly occasions fell aptly to trie Amphialus, and all occasions were but steppes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his valour ouercame : which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his ma[n]hood, yet, as though therein he excelled him selfe, he was com[m]only called the courteous Amphialus. An endlesse thing it were for me to tell, how many aduentures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieued: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes vsing policy, some times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by Philoxenus: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last Philoxenus hauing no greater matter to employ his frindship in, then to winne me, therein desired, and had his vttermost furtheraunce: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may iustly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceiue (and his wit can conceaue as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forwarde the suite of his friend Philoxenus: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of Philoxenus and of the great happines it would be vnto me to haue such a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleeue.

For why should I vse many circu[m]stances to come to that where alredy I am, and euer while I liue must continue ? In fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that she sighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so full of beauty, sweetnes, and noble conuersation, had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling maner would describe the loue of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth loue betweene those lips! when he would with daintiest eloquence stirre pitie in me toward Philoxenus, why sure (said I to my selfe) Helen, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of Philoxenus, who indeede had but waited of him therin, alas (thought I) good Philoxenus, how euil doth it become thy name to be
subscribed to his letter? What should I say? nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to expresse mine owne passions?

Dayes paste; his eagernes for his friende neuer decreased, my affection to him euuer increased. At length, in way of ordinarie courtesie, I obtened of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only Amphialus, I feare that I shall euuer enjoy: and growen bolder, or madder, or bould with madnes, I discouered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I shall neuer forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing vnassayed, which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his fre[n]d; in sweet termes making me receiue a most resolute refusal of himself. But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speeche could doo for his frend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulnesse (which commonly waits vpon absence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome he woulde not vtter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratefulnes, nor yet to discourse so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to trauell into farre countreyes, vntill his friends affection either ceased, or preuayled.

But within a while, Philoxenus came to see how onward the fruietes were of his friends labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countena[n]ce, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found ielousie and disdaine tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chiefest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my favor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for Amphialus, as well as Amphialus had done for him: he neuer answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgaue me some euill successe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to haue stayed him (as in these fatall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes vnwittingly accessarie to their de-terminations) I did no further but sent a foot-man
of mine (whose faithfulnes to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings: which (alas) haue brought foorth that which I feare I must ever rewe.

For he had trauailed scarse a dayes iorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from this place) he ouertooke Amphialus, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had bene here stayed: and by and by called him to fight with him, protesting that one of the two should die: you may easily judge how strange it was to Amphialus, whose hart could accuse it selfe of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine haue made Philoxenus vnderstand, but (as my seruant since tolde me) the more Amphialus went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet neuer telling the cause of this strange alteration. Ah Philoxenus (saide Amphialus) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with this much, and let this satisfie thee, that I loue thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leauing words drew his sworde, and gaue Amphialus a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would haue slaine him: and yet so farre did Amphialus containe himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him, Well Philoxenus, and thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy sake (whom I haue no cause to loue, since thou dost injure me, and wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy seruant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake so fiercely at Amphialus, that in the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend him selfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye blow the poore Philoxenus fell dead at his feete; hauing had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby Amphialus knew it was for my sake: which when Amphialus sawe, he forthwith gaue such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my seruant said, no imagination could conceiue greater woe. But that by and by, an vnhappie occasion made Amphialus passe himselfe in sorrow: for Philoxenus was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous Timotheus, who (hauing heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting
from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he fou[n]d him dead before he could ouer take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is euen vnable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing Amphialus and Timotheus as I haue done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in Amphialus, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine vpon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for Timotheus, sorow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindnes of Am-phi­alia­lus so deuoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but Amphialus, Amphialus, haue I? he sancke to the earth, and pre-sently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily vsed to complaints; no nor if my hart (which is nothing but sorrow) were turned to tongues, durst it vnder-take to shew the vnspeakeablenes of his griefe. But (because this serues to make you know my for-tune,) he threw away his armour, euen this which you haue now vpon you, which at the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and the[n] (as ashamed of the light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lame[n]ting, & euen crying out so pityfully, that my seruant, (though of a fortune not vsed to much tendernes) could not refraine weeping when he tolde it me. He once ouertooke him, but Amphialus drawing his sword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he caried about him, threatned to kill him if he folowed him, and withall, bad him deliuer this bitter message, that he wel inough fou[n]d, I was the cause of al this mischiefe: & that if I were a man, he would go ouer the world to kill me: but bad me assure my selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight (whose eares I think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes) now way my case, if at lest you know what loue is. For this cause haue I left my country, putting in hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, adue[n]ting what perils or dishonors might ensue, only to folow him, who proclaimeth hate against me, and to bring my neck vnto him, if that may redeem my trespas & assuage his fury. And now sir (said she) you haue your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left me. Palladius
willingly consented: but ere they began to go, there came Clitophon, who having been something hurt by one of them, had pursued him a good way: at length over-taking him, & ready to kill him, understood they were servants to the faire Queene Helen, and that the cause of this enterprise was for nothing, but to make Amphialus prisoner, who[m] they knew their mistresse sought; for she concealed her sorrow, nor cause of her sorrow from no body.

But Clitophon (very sorry for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing freely & strutting of this rashly undertaken enmity, when in comes another (till that time unseen) all armed, with his beaver downe, who first looking round about upon the company, as soon as he spied Palladius he drew his sword, and making no other prologue, let fly at him. But Palladius (sorry for so much harm as had already happened) sought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be some one that belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his heart he pitied. Which Clitophon seeing, stepped between them, asking the new come knight the cause of his quarrell; who answered him, that he would kill that theefe, who had stolen away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that Palladius lookt vpon him, and saw that he of the other side had Palladius owne armour vpon him: truly (said Palladius) if I haue stolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you shall not fight with me vpon such a quarrell, you shall haue this armour willingly, which I did onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But Clitophon straight knewe by his words and voice, that it was Ismenus, the faithfull & diligent Page of Amphialus: and therefore telling him that he was Clitophon and willing him to acknowledge his error to the other, who deserued all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and (lighting) went to kiss Palladius hands; desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by extreame griefe, which easilie might bring forth anger. Sweets Gentleman (saide Palladius) you shall onely make me this amendes, that you shal cary this your Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from a vnknownen knight (who admires his worthines) that he cannot cast a greater miste ouer his glory, the[n] by being vnkind to so excelle[n]t a princesse as this Queene is. Ismenus promised he would, as soon as he durst find his maister: and with that
went to doo his dutie to the Queene, whom in all these encounters astonishing made hardy; but assoone as she saw Ismenus (looking to her picture) Ismenus (said she) here is my Lord, where is yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so, welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said Ismenus, I haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for assoone as the vnhappy combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting of his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpo[n] paine of death to follow him.

Yet diuers daies I followed his steppes; till lastly I found him, haueing newly met with an excellent Spaniel, belonging to his dead companion Philoxenus. The dog streight fawned on my master for old knowledge: but neuer was there thing more pittifull then to heare my maister blame the dog for louing his maisters murtherer, renewing a fresh his co[m]plaints, with the dumbe counsellor, as if they might co[m]fort one another in their miseries. But my Lord hauing spied me, rase vp in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, if I would not displease him, I should not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a com[m]aundement for me to disobey: I yeelded, leauing him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in stead thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight liuing) armed my selfe therein to play the foole, as eue[n] now I did. Faire Ismenus (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie: I see the end, I see my ende.

With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where Palladius left her to be waited on by Clitophon, at Palladius earnest entretie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with Ismenus (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he c[n]otinued his quest for his friend Daiphantus.

CHAP. 12.
1 Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie. 2 Her habite, 3 song, 4 and who she was. 5 Objections of the one against women, and loue of them. 6 The answeres of the other for them both.
7 Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindnesse.

O directed he his course to Laconia, aswell among the Helots as

Spartans. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraued in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the vniuersall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the Elean prouince, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, esteeming no bodie founde, since Daiphantus was lost. Afterward he passed through Achaia and Sicyonia, to the Corinthians, provde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the streight of that Isthmus, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding euerie place more dumbe then other to his demaunds, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months trauaile in vaine) to make freshe searce in Arcadia; so much the more, as then first he bethought him selfe of the picture of Philoclea (in resembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing alreadie past ouer the greatest part of Arcadia, one day comming vnder the side of the pleasaunt mountaine Mænalus, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiuennesse) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete stays make speedie iourneis. And therefore lighting downe, and vnbrideling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a little wood he sawe thereby. Where lying vnder the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which persuwaded, and obteyned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who
because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face; but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceaue the hanging of her haire in fairest qua[n]titie, in locks, some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a carelesse care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a paterne, whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearle, and so ioynd all ouer with gold wiers, and couered with feathers of diuers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so brauely it was held vp fro[m] the head. Vpon her bodie she ware a doublet of skie colour sattin, couered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with pretious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discerne the smal of her leg, which with the foot was dressed in a short paire of crimson veluet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Ouer all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming vnder the right arme, and couering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely vpon the top of the shoulder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche iewell: the devise wherof (as he after saw) was this: a Hercules made in little fourme, but a distaffe set within his hand as he once was by Omphales commaundement with a worde in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, Neuer more valiant. On the same side, on her thigh shee ware a sword, which as it witnessed her to be an Amazon, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needles weapon, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so louingly interlaced one the other, that it could resist the strogest violence of eye-sight; but she went into it by a doore she opened; which moued him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her sing this song, with a voice no lesse beautifull to his eares, then her goodlinesse was full of harmonie to his eyes.

Transformd in shew, but more transformd in minde,
I cease to striu with double conquest foild:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treason spoild.

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Whereto mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;
Both these conspird poore Reasons ouerthrowe;
False in my selse, thus haue I lost the field.

Thus are my eyes still Captiue to one sight:
Thus all my thoughts are slaues to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his servantes yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transformed to your will.

What maruaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him some suspition, but the voice
gaue him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, he perceaued in deed that it was Pyrocles thus disguised, wherewith not receauing so much ioy to haue found him, as griefe so to haue found him, amazedly looking vpon him (as Apollo is painted when he saw Daphne sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a worde. So that Pyrocles (who had as much shame, as Musidorus had sorrow) rising to him, would haue formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinuation being of blushinge, and his diuision of sighes, his whole oration stood vpon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time Musidorus had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gasftfull countenaunce vpon him (as if he would conjure some strange spirits) he thus spake vnto him.

And is it possible, that this is Pyrocles, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercise of vertue? or is it indeed some Amazon that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vexe me? for likelier sure I would haue thought it, that any outwarde face might haue bene disguised, then that the face of so excelle[n]t a mind coulde haue bene thus blemished. O sweete Pyrocles separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fitt it will be for you
in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so
rare, not onely expectation, but prooфе, desired of your olde
Father, and wanted of your native country, now so neere your
home, to diuert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse; to
loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to ouerthrow all the
excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world
with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long
desired hauen, or like an ill player, should marre the last act
of his Tragedie. Remember (for I know you know it) that if
we wil be men, the reasonable parte of our soule, is to haue
absolute commaundement; against which if any sensuall
weaknes arise, we are to yeelde all our sounde forces to the
ouerthrowing of so vnnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can
we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an
aduersary, that in it selfe is nothing but weakenesse ? Nay
we are to resolve, that if reason direct it, we must doo it, and
if we must doo it, we will doo it; for to say I cannot, is
childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely
every waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this
womannish habit (without you frame your behauiour
accordingly) is wholy vaine: your behauiour can neuer come
kindely from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So
that you must resolue, if you will playe your parte to any
purpose, whatsoeuer peeuish affections are in that sexe,
soften your hart to receiue them, the very first downe-steppe
to all wickednes: for doo not deceiue your selfe, my deere
cosin, there is no man sodainely excellentlie good, or
extremely euill, but growes either as hee holdes himselfe vp
in vertue, or lets himself slide to vtiouisnes. And let vs see,
what power is the aucthor of all these troubles: forsooth loue,
loue, a passion, and the basest and fruitlessest of all passions:
feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy
openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it
draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and
so all generally haue power towards some good by the
direction of right Reason. But this bastarde Loue (for in deede
the name of Loue is most vnworthylie applied to so hatefull a
humour) as it is engendered betwixt lust and idlenes; as the
matter it workes vpon is nothing, but a certaine base
weakenes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his
adioyned companions be vnquietnes, longings, fond comforts,
faint discomforts, hopes, ielousies, vngrounded rages,
causlesse yeeldings; so is the hiest ende it aspires vnto, a litle
pleasure with much paine before, and great repentance after. But that end how endless it runs to infinite evils, were fit enough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with Kalander and of friendship with me) it utterly subuerts the course of nature, in making reason giue place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinkhe here-vpon it first gatte the name of Loue: forindeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the louer into the thing loued, vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of loue imitate the excellent ; for as the loue of heauen makes one heauenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; so doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a woman, doth so womanish a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an Amazon; but a lauder, a distaff-spinner; or what so euer other vile occupation their idle heads can imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what you must be: if you consider what it is, that moued you, or by what kinde of creature you are moued, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungerous, your selfe so vnworthie to runne into the one, or to be drie[n] by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly haue occasion rather to praise you for hauing conquered it, then to giue you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in Pyrocles this speech wrought no more, but that he, who before he was espied, was afraid; after, being perceiued, was ashamed, now being hardly rubd vpon, lefte both feare and shame, and was moued to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to Musidorus striuing with it, he thus, partely to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answere. Cosin, whatsoever good disposition nature hath bestowed vpon me, or howsoever that disposition hath bene by bringing vp co[n] firmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wisdome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I haue my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, the[n] I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a woma[n], & nursed of a woma[n]. And certe[n]ly (for
this point of your speach doth neerest touch me) it is stra[n]ge
to see the vnman-like cruelty of ma[n]kind; who not co[n]tent
with their tyran[n]ous a[m]bition, to haue brought the others
vertuous patience vnder them (like to childish maisters)
thonke their masterhood nothing, without doing injury to
them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature
with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as
we are. And for example, euen this estate of Amazons, (which
I now for my greatest honor do seek to counterfaite) doth well
witnes, that if generally the sweetnes of their dispositio[n]s did
not make them see the vainnesse of these things, which we
accept glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth
doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and
praisers of men, should remember, that if we haue such
excelle[n]cies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures,
of whom we are: since a Kite neuer brought forth a good
flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it superfluous to
vse any wordes of such a subiect, which is so praised in it
selfe, as it needs no praises; so withall I feare lest my
conceate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes,
which for their vnworthines may be a disgrace vnto the[m] I
so inwardly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of
vertue: & vertue (ye your selues say) is to be loued, & I too
truly: but this I willingly co[n]fesse, that it likes me much
better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am
bound to seeke it in an ill fauoured creature, like a pearle in a
dounghill. As for my fault of being an vncliuill guest to
Kalander, if you could feele what an inward guest my selfe
am host vnto: ye would thinke it very excuseable, in that I
rather performe the dueties of an host, then the ceremonies of
a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendshipe with
you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I
could finde in my hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your
handling of me giues me reason to my former dealing. And
here Pyrocles stayed, as to breath himselfe, hauing bene
transported with a litle vehemency, because it seemed him
Musidorus had ouer-bitterly glaunsed against the reputation
of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aswell as
out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on:
And poore Loue (said he) deare cosin, is little beholding vnto
you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of
the highest power of the mind, which notable me[n] haue
attributed vnto it; but ye deiect it below all other passions, in
trueth somewhat strangely; since, if loue receiue any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter obiections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a Weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare Musidorus, then loue: But I am good witnesse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende my selfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self: for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stir me vp as ye did, by remebrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, the must ye co[n]fesse, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart: & so no dout hath it, whatsoeuer I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom shal we loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should loue this word vertue, where I see it written in a book. Those troblesome effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues; as an vnable vessel to beare such a licour: like euill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, soonest ouerthrows with best wine. Euen that heauenly loue you speake of, is accopanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispaires. And in that heauely loue, since ther are two parts, the one the loue it self, th'other the excellency of the thing loued; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is loue it self; which whe[n] I haue a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womannish, since, I assure you (for all my apparrel) there is nothing I desire more, then fully to proue my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for loue, and most of all for that diuine creature, which hath ioyned me and loue together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble desire which possesseth me. O Lord (saide Musidorus) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Euen so (said Musidorus) as euery base occupation makes one sharp in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered Pyrocles} as each excellent thing once well learned, serues for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said Musidorus}
a measure for other things, which never received measure in itself? It is counted without measure (answered Pyrocles,) because the workings of it are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted unto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enioying, answered Pyrocles, with a great sigh. O (said Musidorus) now set ye forth the basenes of it: since if it ende in enioying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered Pyrocles) I spake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine dis-enchaunt you (said Musidorus.) My hart is too farre possessed (said Pyrocles.) But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life; a answered Pyrocles.

But Musidorus was so greeued to see his welbeloued friend obstinat, as he thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words; Well, well, (saide he) you list to abuse your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly glosse of a visage: Confesse the truth; and ye shall finde, the utmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed vpon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slaue unto in another. For my part I now protest, I haue left nothing unsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most entier friendship to you requires of me; I do now besech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the rememraunce of your olde careful father (if you can reme[m]ber him that forget your self) lastly for Pyrocles owne sake (who is now vpon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection; other wise giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of friendship, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied Pyrocles, though he were very vnpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewell of him he loued as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicted, he was the apter to conceiue vnkindnesse deeply: insomuch, that shaking his head, and deliuering
some shewe of teares, he thus vttred his griefes. Alas (said he) prince \textit{Musidorus}, how cruelly you deale with me; if you seeke the victory, take it; and if ye liste, triumph. Haue you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fethers. But truely you deale with me like a Phisition, that seeing his patient in a pestilent feuer, should chide him, in steede of ministring helpe, and bid him be sick no more; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison; and loaden with greeuous fetters, should will him to shake of his fetters, or he wuld leaue him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death; I am a prisoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am slaue. Now if you list to leaue him that loues you in the hiest degree: But remember euer to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed afresh with this new vnkindnes, bega[n] (as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but gushing out aboundance of teares, and crossing his armes ouer his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene outflowing blood, his armes an ouer-pressing burthen, he suncke downe to the ground, which sodaine traunce went so to the hart of \textit{Musidorus} that falling down by him & kissing the weeping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene ouer vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a loue much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could haue receiued so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his seruice to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But euen this kindnes made \textit{Pyrocles} the more melte in the former vnkindnes, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent look vpo[n] \textit{Musidorus}, as who should say, And is it possible that \textit{Musidorus} should threaten to leaue me? And this strooke \textit{Musidorus} minde and senses so dumbe too, that for griefe being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one vpon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of vnkindnes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that most dearely loue.

And thus remayned they a time; till at length, \textit{Musidorus} embrasing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend?
It is you that shake me of (saide Pyrocles) being for my vnperfectnes vnworthie of your friendshipe. But this (said Musidorus) shewes you more vnperfect, to be cruell to him, that submits himselfe vnto you; but since you are vnperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be gouerned by vs wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take vpon me, with three absolute com[m]andements: The first, that you increase not your euill with further griefes: the second, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: & the last com[m]andement shalbe, ye com[m]and me to do what seruice I can, towards the attaining of your desires. Pyrocles hart was not so oppressed with the mighty passio[n]s of loue and vnkindnes, but that it yeelded to some mirth at this com.maundement of Musidorus, that he should loue: so that something cleering his face from his former shewes of griefe; Wel (said he) deare cousin, I see by the well choosing of your commandementes, that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counseller: and therfore I am resolued to imploy all my endeuour to obey you; with this condition, that the comandementes ye commaund me to lay vpon you, shall onely be, that you continue to loue me, and looke vpon my imperfections, with more affection then iudgeme[n]t. Loue you? (said he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full of it? But (said he) let vs leaue of these flowers of newe begun frendship: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assuring your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I will feare to doo for you: nor nothing so small, which I will disdaine to doo for you. Let me therfore receiue a cleere vnderstating, which many times we misse, while those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his congruitie, by wanting one particle. Therefore betweene frends, all must be layd open, nothing being superfluous, nor tedious. You shalbe obeyed (said Pyrocles) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my selfe; I vsing it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that respect is born vnto it; yet if by cha[n]ce any should come, say that you are a seruant sent from the Q. of the Amazons to seeke me, and then let me alone for the rest. So sate they downe, and Pyrocles thus said.
CHAP. 13.

1 How Pyrocles fell in love with Philoclea. 2 His counsell and course therein. 3 His disguising into Zelmane. 4 Her meeting with Damaetas, 5 Basilius, 6 the Queene and her daughters, & their speaches. 7 Her abode there ouer entreated; 8 and the place thereof described.

Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall ouerthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in Kalanders house, you your selfe deliuered vnto mee what you had vnderstood of Philoclea, who muche resembling (though I must say much surpassing) the Ladie Zelmane, whom too well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poison. Yet alas so sweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, til Kalendar had made it more and more strong with his declaratio[n]. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passio[n] which to be definde is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights; & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But eue[n] this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the Architecture of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be iudge, forsooth, of the painters cunn[ing]. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of vnquiett wishes, and that the wishes grew to vnquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts vpo[n] nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with Philoclea: when each thing I saw, seemed to figure out some parts of my passions; whe[n] euuen Parthenias faire face
became a lecture to me of Philocleas imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that me thought it caried the sum of Philocleas name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe; & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw vpon the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to witnesse the eternall spring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, nor seene any thing; I had neuer any tast of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted) I must needs confesse, conquered; and that me thought euen reason did assure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reuerent friendship I bare vnto you. For as it went against my harte to breake any way from you, so did I feare more then anie assault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute, counsaile is tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a re-spected frien[d]. This made me determine with myself, (thinking it a lesse fault in frien[d]ship to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this secret course: Which conceit was most builded vp in me, the last day of my parting and speaking with you; when vpo[n] your speach with me, & my but naming loue, (when els perchauce I would haue gone further) I saw your voice & cou[n]tenance so chaunge, as it assured me, my reuealing it should but purchase your griefe with my cumber: & therfore (deere Musidorus) eue[n] ran away fro[m] thy wel knowne chiding: for hauing writte[n] a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe iewels with me, while you were in the middest of your sport, I got a time (as I think) unmarked, to steale away, I cared not whether so I might scape you: & so came I to Ithonia in the province of Messenia; wher lying secret I put this in practise which before I had deuised. For reme[m]bring by Philanax his letter, & Kaladers speech, how obstinately Basilius was determined not to mary his daughters, & therfore fearing, lest any publike dealing should rather increase her captiuitie, then further my loue; Loue (the refiner of
inuentio[n]) had put in my head thus to disguise my self, that
vnder that maske I might (if it were possible,) get accesse,
and what accesse could bring forth, commit to fortune &
industry: determining to beare the countenance of an Amazon.
Therfore in the closest maner I could, naming my selfe
Zelmane, for that deere Ladies sake, to whose memorie I am
so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and
bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by
night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might make
me found by them, whom I sought: which the next morning
hapned as well, as my owne plot could haue laide it. For after
I had runne ouer the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue
my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I euer delighted
in, so now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to
stir vp Poeticall fancies, or rather as I thinke, of loue; whose
scope being pleasure, will not so much as vtter his griefes, but
in some forme of pleasure.

But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeased
with my bad musike) comes master Dametas with a
hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and swearing by the
patable of Pallas, & such other othes as his rustical brauery
could imagine; & whe[n] he saw me, I assure you my beauty
was no more beholding to him the[n] my harmony; for
leaning his hands vpon his bil, & his chin vpon his ha[n]ds,
with the voice of one that plaieth Hercules in a play, but
neuer had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake to
me, was, am not I Dametas? why, am not I Dametas? he
needed not name him selfe: for Kalanders description had set
such a note vpo[n] him, as made him very notable vnto me,
and therefore the height of my thoughts would not discend so
much as to make him any answer, but continued on my
inward discourses: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne
vnworthines, & therefore the apter to thinke him selfe
contened) tooke in so hainous manner, that standing vpo[n]
his tip-toes, and staring as though he would haue a mote
pulled out of his eie, Why (said he) thou woma[n], or boy, or
both, what soeuer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee,
get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleasure, I tell thee it
is Dametas pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him,
seeing him looke so like an Ape that had newly taken a
purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these
wordes to my selfe: O spirite (saide I) of mine, how canst
thou receaue anie mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and
thou mirth how darest thou enter into a minde so growne of 
late thy professed enemie? Thy spirite (saide Dametas) doost 
thou thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am Basilius officer, and 
haue charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (said I 
sobbing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the 
combe-case of Diana (sware Dametas) this woman is mad: 
oysters, and pearles? doost thou thinke I will buie oysters? I 
tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp 
his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put 
me quite out of my lesson, so that I forgot al Zelmanes-ship, 
and drawing out my sworde, the basenesse of the villaine yet 
made me stay my hande, and he (who, as Kalander told me, 
from his childehood euer feared the blade of a sworde) ran 
backe, backward (with his hands aboue his head) at lest 
twentie paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I 
thinke) of the clownes, that by Latonas prayers were turned 
into Frogs. At length staying, finding himselfe without the 
compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such 
mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had passed 
through the discipline of a Tauerne. But seeing me walke vp 
and downe, without marking what he saide, he went his way 
(as I perceiued after) to Basilius: for within a while he came 
vynto mee, bearing in deed shewes in his countenaunce of an 
honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much 
courtesie, as Dametas with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady 
(saide he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as 
this should receiue solitary persons; but much do I maruaile, 
how such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to be thus 
alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a 
graue maiestie vpon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be 
reuerenced. They are neuer alone (saide I) that are 
accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied 
Basilius) canot in this your lonelines neither warrant you 
from suspition in others, nor defend you from melancholy in 
your selfe. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so 
farre, I seeke no better warraunt (saide I) then my owne 
conscience, nor no greater pleasures, then mine owne 
contentation. Yet vertue seekes to satisfie others, (saide 
Basilius.) Those that be good (saide I,) and they wil be 
satisfied as long as they see no euill. Yet will the best in this 
country, (said Basilius) suspect so excellent a beauty being so 
weakely garded. Then are the best but starke nought, 
(aunswered I) for open suspecting others, comes of secrete
condemning themselves; But in my country (whose manners I am in all places to maintaine and reverence) the generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes every one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the assured foundation in themselues. Excellent Lady (said he) you praise so greatly, (and yet so wisely) your country, that I must needs desire to know what the nest is, out of which such Byrds doe flye. You must first deserue it (said I) before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (saide Basilius) shall I deserue to know your estate? By letting me first knowe yours (aunswered I.) To obey you (said he) I will doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be known first, as you doo deserue in all points to be prefered.

Know you (faire Lady) that my name is Basilius, vnworthily Lord of this country: the rest, either fame hath brought to your eares, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall understand of me. I that from the beginning assured my selfe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my gravitude the better, making a piece of reverence vnto him, Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serue for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little reverence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my country, whiche is the inuincible Lande of the Amazons; My selfe neece to Senicia, Queene thereof, lineally descended of the famous Penthesilea, slaine by the bloody hand of Pyrrhus. I hauing in this my youth determined to make the worlde see the Amazons excellencies, aswell in priuate, as in publicke vertue, haue passed some daungerous adventures in divers countries: till the vnmercifull Sea depriv’d me of my company: so that shipwrack casting me not far hence, uncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But Basilius (who now began to tast that, which since he hath swallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would use to well paying passingers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires; yet had I learned alredy so much, that it was against my womanhood to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to proue whither intercessions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commaunded Dametas to bring forthwith his wife and daughters there; three Ladies, although of divers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenaunce and gesture sutable, and of such fairnes (being in the
streng[t]h of her age) as if her daughters had not bene by, might with iust price haue purchased admiration; but they being there, it was enough that the most dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children. The faire Pamela, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdaine, that the trust of her vertue is reposed in such a louts hands as Dametas, had yet to shew an obedience, taken on a shepeardish apparell, which was but of Russet cloth cut after their fashion, with a straight body, open brested, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide sleeues: but beleue me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiousnes of her body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold lace, onely by the comparison to see how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt her breasts (which sweetly rase vp like two faire Mountainets in the pleasaunt valley of Tempe) there honge a very riche Diamond set but in a blacke home, the worde I haue since read is this; yet still my selfe. And thus particularly haue I described them, because you may know that mine eyes are not so partiall, but that I marked them too. But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumpe of Nature, the light of beauty, Queene of Loue, you[n]g Philoclea appeared in her Nimphe-like apparell, so neare nakednes, as one might well discerne part of her perfections; & yet so appareled, as did shew she kept best store of her beuty to her self: her haire (alas too poore a word, why should I not rather call the her beames) drawe vp into a net, able to take Iupiter when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body) couered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in many places, inough to haue made your restraind imaginatio[n] haue thought what was vnder it: with the cast of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature so made them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wo[n]derfull shining, or that she, (goddesse like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in giuing blacknes the price aboue all beauty. Then (I say) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for enuie, the roses me thought blushed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples me thought, fell downe fro[m]the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast; Then the cloudes gaue place, that the heaue[n]s .might more freshely smile vpo[n] her; at the lest the cloudes of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and forcible then euer) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood
like a well wrought image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to haue stayed long time, but that Gynecia stepping betweene my sight and the onely Philoclea, the chaunge of obiect made mee recouer my senses: so that I coulde with reasonable good manner receiue the salutation of her, and of the Princesse Pamela, doing the yet no further reuere[n]ce then one Prince vseth to another. But when I came to the neuer-inough praised Philoclea, I could not but fall downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse) with more then womanly ardency, Diuine Lady, (saide I) let not the worlde, nor these great princes maruaile, to se me (contrary to my manner) do this especia[l]l honor vnto you, since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But she blushing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise, Noble Lady, (saide she) it is no maruaile to see your judgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne with so great an errour, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, whom I my selfe owe all seruice. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenaunce) that shewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do such an errour, if it were an errour. You are so well acquainted (saide she sweetely, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne-beautie, that it makes you easilie fall into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in me? (said I truely sighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke) Basilius willing her so do, Well (saide she) I must needs confesse I haue heard that it is a great happines to be praised of them that are most praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an inuincible Amazon, since you will overcome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaie some while in this co[m]panie, to ease your owne trauail, and our solitarines. First let me dye (said I) before any word spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleasantnes, not vnfitte to flatter solitarinesse; for it being set vpon such an vnsensible rising of the ground, as you are come to a pretty height before almost you perceiue that you ascend, it giues the eye lordship ouer a good large
circuit, which according to the nature of the coutry, being diuersified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with louely lightsomnes and artificiall shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre; hauing round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings cut out, each aunswering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gratious Pamela liueth: so that the Lodge seemeth not vnlike a faire Comete, whose taile stretcheth it selfe to a starre of lesse greatnes.

CHAP. 14.

1 The deuises of the first banket to Zelmane. 2 Her crosses in loue, 3 by the loue of Basilius 4 and Gynecia 5 The conclusion between Musidorus and Zelmane.

O Gynecia her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was inuited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: wherein is a banquetting house among certaine pleasant trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent waterworke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shinning of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasant to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heauenly Iris. There were birds also made so finely, that they did not onely deceiue the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the watrie instruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we sate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we sate, and that deuided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which Basilius at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne vnder, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make diuers times the full circle round about, since Philoclea
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

(being also set) was carried still in equal distance from me, and that only my eyes did overtake her; which when the table was stayed, and we began to feed, drank much more eagerly of her beauty, then my mouth did of any other liquor. And so was my common sense deceived (being chiefly bent to her) that as I drank the wine, and withal stole a look on her, me seemed I tasted her deliciousness. But alas, the one thirst was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselves open to receive all the darts she did throw, sometimes close up with admiration, as if with a contrary fancy, they would preserve the riches of that sight they had gotten, or cast my lid as curtains over the image of beauty, her presence had painted in them. True it is, that my reason (now grown a servant to passion) did yet often tell his master, that he should more moderately use his delight. But he, that of a rebel was become a Prince, disdain'd almost to allow him the place of a Counsellor: so that my senses delights being too strong for any other resolution, I did even loose the reins unto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my looks would passe, either unmarked, or unsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well played my first act, assuring my selfe, that under that disguisement, I should find opportunity to reveal my self to the owner of my heart. But who would think it possible (though I feel it true) that in almost eight weekes space, I have liued here (having no more company but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchful, as being a lover) yet could never finde opportunitie to haue one minutes pleasure of priuie conference: the cause whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miserable. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that Basilius had of me (I think Cupid having headed his arrows with my misfortune) he was striken (taking me to be such as I profess) with great affectio[n] towards me, which since is grown to such a doting love, that (till I was fain to get this place, sometimes to retire unto freely) I was even choked with his tediousnes. You never saw fourscore yeares daunce vp and downe more lively in a young lover: now, as fine in his apparel, as if he would make me in love with a cloake; and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted lover in Arcadia. Doo you not think that this is a sallet of wormwood, while mine eyes feede vpon the Ambrosia of
**Philocleas** beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he (good man) were easy enough to be dealt with: but (as I thinke) Loue and mischeefe hauing made a wager, which should haue most power in me, haue set *Gynecia* also on such a fire towards me, as will neuer (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being a woman of excellent witte, and of strong working thoughts) whether she suspected me by my ouer-vehement showes of affection to *Philoclea* (which loue forced me vnwisely to vtter, while hope of my maske foolishly incouraged me) or that she hath take some other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuil it is hath revealed it vnto her, I know not; but so it is, that al her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable portraitures of a desperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that these auoydings of companie, doo but make the passions more violent, when they meete with fitte subjets. Truely it were a notable dumb shew of *Cupids* kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with ouer-vehement longing) direct themselues to *Philoclea* & *Basilius* as busie about me as a Bee, & indeed as cumbersome; making such suits to me, who nether could if I would; nor would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of *Gynecia*, carried with the beere of violent loue, runnes thorow vs all. And so ielous is she of my loue to her daughter, that I could neuer yet beginne to open my mouth to the vneuitable *Philoclea*, but that her vnwished presence gaue my tale a conclusion, before it had a beginning.

And surely if I be not deceiued, I see such shewes of liking, and (if I bee acquainted with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heauenly *Philoclea*, towards me, that I may hope her cares would not abhorre my discourse. And for good *Basilius*, he thought it best to haue lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my destinie, made *Gynecias* ielousie stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I confesse, that one way her loue doth me pleasure: for since it was my foolish fortune, or vnfortunate follie, to be known by her, that keepes her from bewraying me to *Basilius*. And thus (my *Musidorus*) you haue my Tragedie played vnto you by my selfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede prooue a Tragedie. And there he ended, making a full point of a hartie sigh.
Musidorus recomended to his best discourse, all which Pyrocles had told him. But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out of the maze; yet perceiuing his affection so grou[n]ded, that struing against it, did rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendshippe in question, then giue place to any friendly counsell. Well (said he) deare cosin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is imployed vpon so rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cause dooth ease much a grieuous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I can[n]ot see wherein I can be seruisable vnto you. I desire no greater servuice of you (answered Pyrocles) the[n] that you remayn secretly in this country, & some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you shal haue my key to e[n]ter, bicause as my fortune, eyther amendes or empaires. I may declare it vnto you, and haue your counsell and furtheraunce: & hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayse, and yet the staine of all womankinde, that you may haue so good a view, as to allowe my judgement: and as I can get the most conuenient time, I wil come vnto you ; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (said she) it is time for me to leaue you, and towards euening wee will walke out of purpose hetherward, therefore keepe your selffe close in that time. But Musidorus bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse in some sorte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which Pyrocles very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (said he) from me, no more Pyrocles, nor Daiphantus now, but Zelmane: Zelmane is my name, Zelmane is my title, Zelmane is the onely hope of my aduauncement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, Zelmane dismissed Musidorus, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to disswade him.

CHAP. 15.

1 The Labyrinth of Zelmanes loue. 2 The Ladies exercises. 3 The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Ar- texias
beautie. 4 The description of their persons and affections: 5 and occasion of this challenge. 6 The success thereof abroad.

Elmane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by Philoclea, watched by Gynecia, and tired by Basilius) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserablie spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: Zelmane sought occasion to speake with Philoclea; Basilius with Zelmane; and Gynecia hindered them all. If Philoclea hapned to sigh (and sigh she did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, Zelmane sighed also; whereto Basilius and Gynecia soone made vp foure parts of sorow. Their affection increased their converstion; and their converstion increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. Zelmanes eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing goernors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

But Zelmane fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend Musidorus (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might haue full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little Riuer neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon rootes of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betwenee Pamela and Philoclea, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while Zelmane protested, that the fitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken, that she had forgotten taking. Basilius in the meane time would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & Gynecia sit stil, but with no stil pensifnesse. Now she brought them to see a seeled Doue, who the blinder she was, the higher she straue. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flie, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceaued) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.
But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one euening as Basilius returned from hauing forced his thoughts to please themselues in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentlema[n] desired leaue to do a message from his Lord vnto him. Basilius granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obserued, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from Phala[n]tus of Corinth, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence defie all Arcadian Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be present, to giue euident proofe what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of Artesia (so was the mistresse of Phalantus named) who in six courses should haue better of the other, in the judgement of Basilius, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. Basilius (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to avoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would entertaine Zelmane, (that she might not think the time so gainefull to him, losse to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what Arcadian Knight (for none els but vpon his perill was licensed to come) woulde defende what he honored against Phalantus, should haue the like freedome of accesse and returne.

This obteyned and published, Zelmane being desirous to learne what this Phalantus was, hauing never knowne him further then by report of his owne good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, Basilius told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire Helen Queene of Corinth, and deerly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorablie courteous, and wronglesly valiaunt, considerately pleasant in conuersation, & an excellent courtier without vn-faithfulnes; who (finding his sisters vnperswadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of Amphialus) had for a time left her court, and gone into Laconia: where in the warre against the Helots, he had gotte[n] the reputatio[n]
of one, that both durst & knew. But as it was rather choise the
[n] nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the
spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable
delightes, being beloued in all copanies for his louely
qualities, & (as a ma[n] may terme it) cunning cherefulnes,
wherby to the Prince & Court of Laconia, none was more
agreeable the[n] Phalantus: and he not giuen greatly to
struggle with his owne disposition, followed the gentle
currant of it, hauing a fortune sufficient to content, & he
content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe,
and was acquainted with this Artesia, whose beautie he now
defendes, became her servuant, said him selfe, and perchaunce
thought him selfe her louer. But certainly, (said Basilius)
many times it fallles out, that these young companies make
themselves beleue they loue at the first liking of a likely
beautie; louing, because they will loue for want of other
businesse, not because they feele indeed that diuine power,
which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and so (God
knowes) as inconstantly leane vpon the next chaunce that
beautie castes before them. So therefore taking loue vppon
him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie Artesia, who was as
fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For she
thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not prowde
of it, called her disdaine of him chastitie, and placed her
honour in little setting by his honouring her: determining
neuer to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her:
and that was one, in whome all worthinesse were harboured.
And to this conceipt not onely nature had bent her, but the
bringing vp she receaued at my sister in lawe Cecropia, had
confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this
young Artesia into her charge; because her Father had bene a
deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke
that there is no wisdome but in including heauen & earth in
ones self: and that loue, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship,
and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in
ones selfe: And so good discipline she found of her, that
liking the fruits of her owne planting, she was co[n]tent (if so
her sonne could haue liked of it) to haue wished her in
marriage to my Nephew Amphialus. But I thinke that desire
hath lost some of his heate, since she hath knowne, that such
a Queene as Helen is, doth offer so great a price as a
kingdome, to buie his fauour; for if I be not deceaued in my
good sister Cecropia, shee thinks no face so beautifull, as that
which lookes vnder a crowne. But Artesia indeede liked well of my Nephew Amphialus; for I ca[n] neuer deeme that loue, which in hauty harts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and as it were, peacock themselves; but yet she hath shewed vehemencie of desire that way, I thinke, because all her desires be veheme[n]t, in so much that she hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called Ismenus) to be his squire, and her selfe is content to waite vpon my sister, till she may see the vtttermost what she may worke in Amphialus: who being of a melancholic (though I must needes saye courteous and noble) mind, seems to loue nothing lesse then Loue: & of late hauing through some adventure, or inwarde miscontentment, withdrawne him selfe fro[m] any bodies knowledge, where he is: Artesia the easier condiscended to goe to the court of Laconia, whether she was sent for by the Kings wife, to whome she is somewhat allied.

And there after the war of the Helots, this Knight Phalantus, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her servaunt, and she so little caring, as not to showe mislike thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable servaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me a pleasaunt description of their loue, while he with cheerefull lookes would speake sorowfull words, vsing the phrase of his affection in so high a stile, that Mercurie would not haue wooed Venus with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neyther in behauiour, nor action, accusing in him selfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he sped or no. And she of the other side, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolishe wittinesse, to speake more then one thinkes.

For she made earnest benefite of his iest, forcing him in respect of his promise, to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly vnto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) hauing in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to Amphialus, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no stomacke to it, before other folkes prayse it) she tooke the advauntage one daye vpon Phalantus vnconscionable praysinges of her, and certaine cast-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her sake, to
arrest his woord assoone as it was out of his mouth, and by
the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the
courts of Greece, & with the chalenge now made, to giue her
beauty the principality ouer all other. Phalantus was
entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out.
Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confess to him that
tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for
indeede he had litle cause, being accounted, with his Launce
especially (whereupon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect
as any that Greece knoweth; but because he feared to offend
his sister Helen, and with all (as he said) he could not so
much beleue his loue, but that he might thinke in his hart
(whatsoever his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters,
and the faire Parthenia (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my
wius neere kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for
that prerogatiue. But his promise had bound him prentice, and
therefore it was now better with willingnes to purchase
thankes, then with a discontented doing to haue the paine, and
not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then
loue, did lead him.

And now hath he already passed the courts of
Laconia, Elis, Argos and Corinth: and (as many times it
happes) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to
preuaile; so hath his Lawnce brought captiues to the triumph
of Artesias beauty, such, as though Artesia be among the
fairest, yet in that company were to haue the preheminence:
for in those courts many knights (that had bene in other far
countries) defe[n]ded such as they had seene, and liked in
their trauaile: but their defence had bene such; as they had
forfayted the picture of their Ladies, to giue a forced false
testimonie to Artesias excellencie. And now lastly is he come
hether, where he hath leave to trye his fortune. But I assure
you, if I thought it not in dew & true cosideratio[n] an
injurious service & churlish curtesie, to put the danger of so
noble a title in the deciding of such a da[n]gerles co[m]bat, I
would make yong master Phalantus know, that your eyes can
sharpe a blu[n]t Launce, and that age, which my graye haires
(onely gotten by the louing care of others) make seeme more
then it is, hath not diminished in me the power to protect an
vndeniable verity. With that he bustled vp himselfe, as though
his harte would faine haue walked abroad. Zelmane with an
inwarde smiling gaue him outward thanks, desiring him to
reserve his force for worthier causes.
CHAP. 16.

1 Phalantus and Artesias pompous entrance. 2 The painted muster of an eleven conquered beauties.

O passing their time according to their wont, they wayted for the coming of Phalantus who the next morning hauing alredy caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vppon the tree made a shield to bee hanged vp, which the defendant should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challendge. The Impresa in the shield; was a heauen full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was the beauty which gaue it the praise.

Himselfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatio[n] velvet inriched with purle & pearle, wherein Artesia sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery wings, as if she had newly borrowed them of Phœbus. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footeme[n] pleasantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another of them that by Phalantus well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at euery pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leasurely, that with perfect judgement they might be discerned.

The first that came in (folowing the order of the time wherein they had bene wonne) was the picture of Andromana, Queene of Iberia; whom a Laconian Knight hauing sometime (and with speciall fauour) served, (though some yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulnes then good fortune defended. But therein Fortune had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not co[m]parable to Artesia; not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impouerish her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions) disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princesse of Elis, a Lady that taught the beholders no
other point of beauty, but this, that as liking is, not alwaies
the child of beauty, so whatsoever liketh; is beautyfull; for in
that visage there was nether Maiestic, grace, fauour, nor
fairenesse; yet she wanted not a servaunt that woulde haue
made her fairer then the faire Artsia. But he wrote her
praises with his helmet in the dust, and left her picture to be
as true a witnes of his ouerthrow, as his running was of her
beauty.

After her was the goodly Artaxia, great Q. of
Armenia, a Lady vpon whom nature bestowed, & wel
placed her delightful colours; & withal, had
proportioned her without any fault, quickly to be discouered
by the senses, yet altogether seemed not to make vp that
harmony, that Cupid delights in; the reason wherof might
seem a mannish countenance, which ouerthrew that louely
sweetnes, the noblest power of womankinde, farre fitter to
preuaile by parley, then by battell.

Of a farre contrary consideratio[n] was the
representation of her that next followed, which was
Erona Queene of Licia, who though of so browne a
haire, as no man should haue iniuried it to haue called it
blacke, and that in the mixture of her cheeks the white did so
much ouercome the redde (though what was, was very pure)
that it came neare to palenes,and that her face was a thought
longer then the exacte Symmetrians perhaps would allow; yet
loue plaid his part so well, in euerie part, that it caught holde
of the judgement, before it could iudge, making it first loue,
& after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine
delicacie, which in yeelding, conquered; & with a pitiful
looke made one find cause to craue helpe himselfe.

After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall
birth: the former was named Baccha, who though very
faire, and of a fatness rather to allure, then to mislike,
yet her brests ouer-familiarly laide open, with a mad
countenaunce about her mouth, betweene simpring &
smyling, her head bowed somwhat down, seemed to la[n]
guish with ouer-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast
vpward, dissuading with too much perswading, while hope
might seem to ouercome desire.

The other (whose name was written Leucippe) was of a
fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a sober
simplicitie; like one that could do much good, & ment no
hurt, her eyes hauing in them such a cheerefulnes, as nature
seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed that pretie demurenes which the more one markes, the more one woulde judge the poore soule apt to beleue; & therefor the more pitie to deceiue her.

Next came the Queene of Laconia, one that seemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineame[n]ts were neither perfect possessions thereof, nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautyfull.

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being conquered; & might well haue made all the beholders waite vpo[n] her triumph, while her selfe were led captiue. It was the excelle[n]ty-faire Queene Helen, whose lacinth haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through golde sa[n]ds) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giuing & receiuing riches. In her face so much beautie & fauour expressed, as if Helen had not bene knowe, some would rather haue iudged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, the cou[n]terfaiting of any liuing patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could haue fou[n]d, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue. For euery thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wa[n]ted any thing in maiestic, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it rauished with delight. And no indiffere[n]t soule there was, which if it could resist fro[m] subiecting it self to make it his princesse, that would not lo[n]g to haue such a playfelow. As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sadnes the[n] it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she vsed those orname[n]ts, not for her self, but to preuaile with another, so she feared, that all would not serve.

Of a farre differing (though esteemed equall) beautie, was the faire Parthenia who next wayted on Artesias triumph, though farre better she might haue sitte in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forhead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the
mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either not to deserve, or not to need any exquisite decking, hauing no adorning but cleanlines; and so farre from all arte, that it was full of carelesnesse: vnlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But Basilius could not abstaine from praising Parthenia, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfullnes: telling withall Zelmane, how he had vnderstooode, that when in the court of Laconia, her picture (maintained by a certaine Sycionian Knight) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then justice: her husband (the famous Argalus) would in a chafe haue gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her vndeserved champion) tolde her husbande, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as euill as euer it was, then that it should be a cause to make Argalus put on armour. Then would Basilius haue tolde Zelmane, that which she alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth giue place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayd, which sate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so attentiue vppon it, as if that little foote coulde haue bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a shephooke lying by her with a bottle vpon it. But with al that pouertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greatest Queene there did. Her beautie and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire shepheardesse, Vrania, whom a rich knight called Lacemon, farre in loue with her, had vnluckely defended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of her being captiue, was Zelmane, daughter to the King Plexvirtus: who at the first sight seemed to haue some resembling of Philoclea, but with more marking (co[m]paring it to the present Philoclea, who indeed had no paragon but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenesse, as an vnperfect glasse doth giue; aunswerable enough in some feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But Zelmane sighing, turning to Basilius, Alas sir (said she) here be some pictures which might better become the to[m]bes of their Mistresses, then the triumpe of Artesia. It is true sweetest Lady (saide Basilius) some of them be dead, and some other captiue: But that hath happened so late, as it may be the Knightes that
defended their beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe could not blot out the image which loue hath engrae in the. But diuers besides these (said Basilius) hath Phalantus woon, but he leaues the rest, carying onely such, who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may iustly glorifie the glory of Artesias triumph.

CHAP. 17.

1 The ouerthrow of fiue Arcadian knights. 2 The young shep-heards prettie challenge. 3 What passions the sixth knights foyle bredde in Zelmane. 4 Clitophon hardly overmatcht by Phalantus. 8 The ill arayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie against Phalantus. 5 The halting knights complaint against the black knight. 7 Phalantus fall by the ill furnisht knight. 8 The crosse-parting of Phalantus with Artesia, 9 and who the victor was.

Hus talked Basilius with Zelmane, glad to make any matter subiect to speake of, with his mistresse, while Phalantus in this pompous manner, brought Artesia with her getlewome [n], into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would first strike vpon the shielde, while Basilius the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For Phalantus was all in white, hauing in his bases, and caparison imbrodered a wauing water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast ouer, in which were diuers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to striue, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name Nestor, by birth an
Arcadian, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both vpo[n] his armour, and horse. His impresa in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, More easie, and more sweete. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he receiued of Phalantus, leauing his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilesly chafing at his rebuke. The next was Polycetes, greatly esteemed in Arcadia, for deedes he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to Gynecia; which Basilius himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of Artesias victories: a thing Gynecias vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if Zelmane had not seene it. But her champion went away as much discomforted, as discomfited. Then Telamon for Polixena, & Eurimelo for Elpine, and Lean for Zoana; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted vp the ballance of his praise for actiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a ma[n]) brown of co[m]plexio [n] (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very louely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who slubber vp matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be iudged; for he had nothing vpon him but a paire of sloppes, and vpon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which he cast ouer his shoulder, doing all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance could not make him do amisse, because he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so coming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came towards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (said he) I pray you heare a few words; for my hart wil break if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of Vrania, which (I
cannot tell how, nor why) these men when they fall downe,
they say is not so faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I
may neuer see my olde mother aliue, if I think she be any
more match to Vrania, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or
then the Dog that keepes our flock at home, is like your white
Greihounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.
[ ]And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be, and
my hart giues me, I shall tumble him on the earth for indeede
he might aswell say, that a Couslip is as white as a Lillie: or
els I care not let him come with his great staffe, and I with
this in my hand, and you shall see what I can doo to him.
Basilius sawe it was the fine shepheard Lalus, whom once he
had afore him in Pastorall sportes, and had greatly delighted
in his wit full of pretty simplicitie, and therefore laughing at
his earnestnesse, he bad him be content, since he sawe the
pictures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their
champions fortune. But Lalus (euen weeping ripe) went
among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would reuenge
Vranias wronge; and praying hartely for euery bodie that ran
against Phalantus, then began to feele pouerty, that he could
not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the
Sunne (like a noble harte) began to shew his greatest
countenaunce in his lowest estate, there came in a Knight,
called Pheblius, a Gentleman of that cou[n]try, for whom
hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Loue, to make him
miserable by the sight of Philoclea. For he had euen from her
infancie loued her, and was striken by her, before she was
able to knowe what quier of arrowes her eyes caried; but he
loued and disparity, and the more he disparity, the more he
loued. He sawe his owne vnworthines, and thereby made her
excellencie haue more terrible aspect vpon him: he was so
secrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he
euer spake of it, but his hart made such silent complaints
within it selfe, that while all his senses were attentiue thereto,
cunning iudges might perceaue his minde: so that he was
knowne to loue though he denied, or rather was the better
knowne, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was
of a Sea couler, his Impresa, the fishe called Sepia, which
being in the nette castes a blacke inke about it selfe, that in
the darkenesse thereof it may escape: his worde was, Not so.
Philocleas picture with almost an idolatrous magnificence
was borne in by him. But streight ielousie was a harbinger for
disdaine in Zelmanes harte, when she sawe any (but her selfe)
should be auowed a champion for Philoclea: in somuch that she wisht his shame, till she sawe him ashamed: for at the second course he was striken quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the sworde haue reuenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, Basilius would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the earth, he went his way, leauing Zelmane no lesse angry with his los, the[n] she would haue beene with his victory. For if she thought before a riuals prayse woulde haue angered her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in Philocleas cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commaunded truce for those sportes, & Phalantus (though intreated) would not leaue Artesia, who in no case would come into the house, hauing (as it were) suckle of Cecropias breath a mortall mislike against Basilius.

But the night measured by the short ell of sleepe, was soone past ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchful stars leaue to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned Basilius to play his iudges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; Zelmane hauing lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fiedle, readie to proue Helen of Corinth had receaued great iniury, both by the erring judgement of the challenger, and the vnlucky weakenesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be Clitophon (Kala[n]ders sonne of Easilius-his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well ha[n]dled, that it shewed like a glittering sande and grauell, interlaced with silver riuers: his deuice he had put in the picture of Helen which hee defended. It was the Ermion, with a speach that signified, Rather dead then spotted. But in that armour since he had parted fro[m] Helen (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) he had performed so honourable actio[n]s, (stil seeking for his two friends by the names of Palladius and Daipha[n]tus,) that though his face were couered, his being was discouered, which yet Basilius (which had brought him vp in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to sound; to which the two braue knights obeying, they
performed their courses, breaking their six staues, with so
good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner, that it
bred some difficulty in the judgement. But Basilius in the
ende gaue sentence against Clitophon, because Phalantus had
broken more staues vpo[n]the head, & that once Clitophon
had receiued such a blowe, that he had lost the raines of his
horse, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the
horse. But Clitophon was so angry with the iudgeme[n]t,
(wherin he thought he had receiued wro[n]g) that he omitted
his duty to his Prince, & vnkle; and sodainly went his way,
still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by
seeking: & so yeelded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no lesse
marked then al the rest before, because he had nothing
worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor
deuice, his armour of as old a fashion (besides the rustic
poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his
graundfathe[r]s courage: about his middle he had in steede of
bases, a long cloake of silke, which as vnhandsomely, as it
needes must, became the wearer: so that all that lookt on,
measured his length on the earth alreadie, since he had to
meete one who had bene victorious of so many gallants. But
he went on towards the shielde, and with a sober grace
strake it; but as he let his sworde fall vpon it, another Knight,
all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield almost
assoone as he, and so strongly, that he brake the shield in two:
the ill appointed Knight (for so the beholders called him)
angrie with that, (as he accounted,) insolent injurie to
himselfe, hit him such a sound blowe, that they that looked on
saide, it well became a rude arme. The other aunswered him
again in the same case, so that Launces were put to silence,
the swordes were so busie.

But Phalantus angry of this defacing his shield, came vpon
the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his sworde set
fire to his eyes, which presently was reuenged, not onely by
the Blacke, but the ill appareled Knight, who disdained
another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who euer sawe a
matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did
imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought,
euerie one had adversaries, striking him, who stroke the
third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had
receaued of the other. But Basilius rising himselfe to parte
them, the sticklers authoritie scarslie able to perswade
cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to Basilius, demaunding iustice on the blakke Knight, for hauing by force taken away the picture of Pamela from him, whiche in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and couered with silke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with Artesias length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weakenesse of the other: as the smallest starre dothe thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The iniurie seemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defend Pamelas diuine beautie against Artesias, with a prowde iollitie commaunded him to leaue that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such comandements, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his picture. This vnderstood by Basilius, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him away to learn of Æsculapius that he was not fit for Venus.

But then the question arising who should be the former against Phalantus, of the blakke, or the ill appareled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe) of the one side, was alleged the hauing a picture which the other wanted: of the other side, the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill appareled Knight should haue the precedence, if he deliuered the figure of his mistresse to Phalantus; who asking him for it, Certainely (said he) her liuелиest picture, (if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best co[m]parison I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the heauenly beauties. But because perhappes all eyes cannot taste the Diuinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clowded by some meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image Phëblus so feebly lost yesternight, and in steede of an other (if you ouercome mee) you shall haue me your slaue to carrie that image in your mistresse triumpe. Phalantus easilie agreed to the bargaine, which alreadie he made his owne.
But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight choosing out the greatest staues in all the store, at the first course gae his head such a remembraunce, that he lost almost his remembraunce, he him selfe receyving the incounter of Phalantus without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gaue him such a counterbuffe, that because Phalantus was so perfite a horseman, as not to be driuen from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horse: Phalantus remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprise, that disgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the iudges giuen, and the trumpets witnessed to the ill apparelled Knight; Phalantus disgrace was ingrieued in lieu of comforte by Artesia; who telling him she neuer lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing himselfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you haue lost me.

Nay truely Madame (saide Phalantus) it shall not be so: for I thinke the losse of such a Mistresse will prooue a great gaine: and so concluded; to the sporte of Basilius, to see young folkees loue, that came in maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little constancie. But Phalantus first professing great service to Basilius for his curteous intermitting his solitary course for his sake, would yet conduct Artesia to the castle of Cecropia, whether she desired to goe: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, should euer any more intangle him. And with that resolution he left the company.

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black knight we[n]t away repyning at his luck, that had kept him fro[m] winning the honor, as he knew he shuld haue don, to the picture of Pamela) the ill apparelled knight (who was only desired to stay, because Basilius meant to shew him to Zelmane) puld of his Helmet, & then was knowe himselfe to be Zelmane: who that morning (as she told) while the others were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile of fro[m] the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was Basilius pleasure she should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come vpon the spur to redeem Philocleas picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wildernesse-
company) should be in captivity, if the cunning she had learned in her country of the noble Amazons, could withstand it: and under that pretext she would have given a secret passport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant redness in Philocleas' face, and paleness in Gynecia, but brought forth no other countenances but of admiration, no speeches but of commendations: all these few (besides love) thinking they honoured themselves, in honouring so accomplished a person as Zelmane: whom daily they sought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose Basilius had in a house not far from, servants, who though they came not uncalled, yet at call were ready.

CHAP. 18.

1 Musidorus disguised. 2 His song. 3 His love, 4 the cause thereof. 5 His course therein.

And so many days were spent, and many ways used, while Zelmane was like one that stood in a tree waiting a good occasion to shoot, & Gynecia a blunderer, which kept the dearest deer from her. But the day being come, which according to an appointed course, the shepherds were to assemble, & make their pastoral sports before Basilius: Zelmane (fearing, lest many eyes, and coming divers ways, might hap to spy Musidorus) went out to warn him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she saw walking from her-ward, a man in shepherdish apparel who being in the sight of the Lodge it might seem he was allowed there. A long cloak he had on, but that cast under his right arm, wherein he held a shepook, so finely wrought, that it gave a brazenery to poverty; & his rayments, though they were mean, yet received they handsomeness by the grace of the wearer; though he himself went but a kind of languishing pace, with his eyes somewhat cast up to heaven, as though his fancies strayed to mount higher; sometimes thrown down to the ground, as if the earth could not bear the burthens of his sorrows; at length, with a lame table tune, he sang these few verses.
Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde:  
Yeld outward shew, what inward chance he tryes:  
Nor be abasht, since such a guest you finde,  
Whose strongest hope in your weake comfort lyes.

Come shepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes :  
Disuse your selves from sweete Menalca's voice:  
For other be those tunes which sorrow tryes,  
From those cleere notes which freely may reioyce.  
Then power out plaint, and in one word say this:  
Helples his plaint, who spoyles himselfe of blisse.

And hauing ended, he strake himselfe on the brest; saying,  
O miserable wretch, whether do thy destenies guide thee? The  
voice made Zelmane hasten her pace to ouertake him: which  
hauing done, she plainly perceaued that it was her deare  
friend Musidorus, whereat marvailing not a little, she  
demanded of him, whether the Goddesse of those woods had  
such a powre to trasforme euery body, or whether, as in all  
enterprises else he had done, he meant thus to match her in  
this newe alteration.

Alas, (said Musidorus) what shall I say, who am loth  
to say, and yet faine would haue said? I find indeed, that  
all is but lip-wisdome, which wants experience. I now  
(woe is me) do try what loue can doo. O Zelmane, who will  
resist it, must either haue no witte, or put out his eyes? can  
any man resist his creation? certainly by loue we are made,  
and to loue we are made. Beasts onely cannot discerne  
beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that doo not  
honor it. The perfect friendship Zelmane bare him, and the  
great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, coulde not  
kepee her from smiling at him, remembring how vehemently  
he had cryed out against the folly of louers. And therefore a  
little to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you  
that were last day so hie in Pulpit against louers, are you now  
become so meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a  
passion; and that a woorthie mans reason must euer haue the  
masterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed Musidorus,) and withall  
falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of  
Loue, or what other heauely or hellish title thou list to haue  
(for effects of both I finde in my selfe) haue compassion of  
me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be  
submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious.
No, no saide Zelmane, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me see the deformitie of my passions: but take heede, that this iest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (saide Musidorus taking her fast by the hand) euen for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou hast some remembraunce, & by those sacred flames which (I know) haue likewise neerely touched thee; make no iest of that, which hath so ernestly pearced me thorow, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me so burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. Musidorus both in words & behauiour, did so liuely deliuer out his inward grief, that Zelmane found indeede, he was thorowly wou[n]ded: but there rose a new ielousy in her minde, lest it might be with Philoclea, by whom, as Zelmane thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleered of that doubt, Musidorus shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case vnto her.

The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way of) guided me to a young shepheards house, by name Menalcas, who seing me to be a straying stra[n]ger, with the right honest hospitality which seemes to be harboured in the Arcadian brests, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and hauing by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, something more in particular, then I had by Kalanders report, I agreed to soiourne with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to observe. And so hether to your arbour diuers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had neuer bene so, nay, O that it might euer be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compasse can set forth infinite beauty. All this while Zelmane was racked with iealousie. But he went on, For (saide he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe, O sweet Pyrocles, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the vse of thy reason? how much am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind? And yet know I, that all the heauens cannot bring me to such thraldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came foorth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to strike my soule; at least, an
vnmeasurable sting I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight? said Zelmane, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd Musidorus) I know your suspition; No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it is, and must be Pamela. Then all is safe (sayd Zelmane) proceece, deare Musidorus. I will not (said he) impute it to my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the consideratio[n] of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of Venus; nor reuenge of Cupid; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the onely shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was presently striken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, wil strike himselfe again vpon it) would needs looke againe as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceiued. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had planted in the grounde of my harte, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my loue, which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of heauen? Let this word suffice, I loue.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both prevented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waited here to do you service, haue now my self most need of succor. But wherupon got you your self this aparrel? said Zelmane. I had forgotten to tel you (said Musidorus) though that were one principall matter of my speech; so much am I now master of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to Menalcas house, full of tormenting desire, after a while faynting vnder the weight, my courage stird vp my wit to seeke for some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At last this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpose last vsed my horse and armour. I tolde Menalcas, that I was a Thessalian Gentleman, who by mischaunce hauing killed a great fauorit of the Prince of that cou[n]try, was pursued so cruelly, that in no place, but either by fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my persecutions might be asswaged) to disguise my selfe among the shephards of Arcadia, & (if it were possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes presence; Because if the woorst should
fall, that I were discovered, yet having gotten the
acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to move his heart
to protect me. Menalcas (being of an honest dispositio[n])
pitied my case, which my face through my inward torment
made credible; and so (I giving him largely for it) let me have
this rayment, instructing me in all the particularities, touching
himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not
trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life,
and life of my life, upon it, I hired him to goe into Thessalia
to a friend of mine, & to deliver him a letter from me;
conjuring him to bring me as speedy an answer as he could,
because it imported me greatly to know, whether certaine of
my friendes did yet possess any favour, whose intercessio[n]
s I might use for my restitution. He willingly took my letter,
which being well sealed, indeed contained other matter. For I
wrote to my trustie servant Calodoulus (whom you know)
that as soon as he had delivered the letter, he should keep
him prisoner in his house, not suffering him to have
conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure:
in all other respects that he should use him as my brother.
And thus is Menalcas gone, and I here a poore shepheard;
more proud of this estate, then of any kingdom: so manifest
it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one unto,
is the contentment of the mind: with which, no estate;
without which, all estates be miserable. Now have I chosen
this day, because (as Menalcas tolde me) the other shepheards
are called to make their sports, and hope that you will with
your credit, finde meanes to get me allowed among them.
You neede not doubt (answered Zelmane) but that I will be
your good mistresse: marrie the best way of dealing must be
by Dametas, who since his blunt braine hath perceiued some
favour the Prince dooth beare vnto me (as without doubt the
most servile flatterie is lodged most easilie in the grossest
capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to
their greaters, and then have they not witte to learne the right
degrees of duetie) is much more serviceable vnto me, then I
can finde any cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to
winne him: for every present occasion will catch his senses,
and his senses are masters of his sillie mind; onely reverence
him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you
shall well ride him. O heaven and earth (said Musidorus)
to what a passe are our mindeis brought, that from the right line
of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts? But ô Loue, it is
thou that doost it: thou changest name vpo[n] name; thou disguisest our bodies, and disfigurest our mindes. But in deed thou hast reason, for though the wayes be foule, the iourneys end is most faire and honourable.

CHAP. 19.

1 The meanes of Musidorus his apprenticesage vnto Dametas. 2 The preparation and place of the Pastorals. 3 The Lyons assault on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane. 4 The shee beares on Pamela, and death by Dorus. 5 The Io Pæan of Dametas, 6 and his scape from the beare. 7 The victors praises. 8 Whence those beasts were sent.

O more sweete Musidorus (said Zelmane) of these philosophies; for here comes the very person of Dametas. And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forrest-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which prouided sorte he had euer gone, since the feare Zelmane had put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reuerence afore her; inough to haue made any man forsweare all courtesie. And then in Basilius name, he did invite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Pastoralles.

But when he spied Musidorus to be none of the shepheards allowed in that place, he would faine haue perswaded himselfe to vtter some anger, but that he durste not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gaue occasion to Musidorus to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard Menalcas, by name Dorus, sent by his father in his tender age to Athens, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother Menalcas (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (upon his death) he had charged him to seek the service of Dametas, and to be wholy, and euer guyded by him; as one in whose judgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to Dametas a good summe of golde in redy coine, which Menalcas had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he should receiue this
poore Dorus into his service, that his mind and manner might
grow the better by his dayly example. Dametas, that of all
manners of stile could best conceiue of golden eloquence,
being withall tickled by Musidorus prayses, had his brayne so
turned, that he became slaue to that, which he, that shewed to
be his servant, offered to giue him: yet for countenance sake,
he seemed very squeimish, in respect of the charge he had of
the Princesse Pamela. But such was the secrete operation of
the golde, helped with the perswasion of the Amazon
Zelmane, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man
should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in
the ende he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the
lyking of Basilius, as he might be co[n]tented) that then he
would receiue him into his service.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they fou[n]d
Gynecia and her daughters ready to go to the field, to
delight themselves there a while, vntill the shepheards
comming: whether also taking Zelmane with them, as they
went, Dametas told them of Dorus, and desired he might be
accepted there that day, in steed of his brother Menalcas. As
for Basilius, he staied behind to bring the shepherds, with
whom he meant to co[n]fer, to breed the better Zelmanes
liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull
band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish
pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the
middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold
the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seeke to close the
eie with the purling noise it made vpon the pibble stones it
ran ouer: the field it self being set in some places with roses,
& in al the rest constantly preserving a florishing greene; the
Roses added such a ruddy shew vnto it, as though the field
were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to
inclose a Theater) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther
excellency of fruit, statelines of grouth, continuall greennes,
or poeticall fancies haue made at any time famous. In most
part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant
arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became
a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gaue a
perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholericke
looke of Phœbus.

In this place while Gynecia walked hard by them,
carying many vnquiet co[n]tentions about her, the
Ladies sate them downe, inquiring many questio[n]s of
the shepheard *Dorus*; who (keeping his eie still vpon *Pamela*) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed cou[n]tenance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenaunced with vnwoonted presence. But *Zelmane* that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hande of *Philoclea*, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. O Loue, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so consta[n]t in their torments? when sodainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a she Beare not far from him, of little lesse fiercenes, which (as they ghost) hauing bene hu[n]ted in Forests far of, were by chau[n]ce come thether, where before such beastes had neuer bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered some thing the cou[n]tenances of the two Louers, but so, as any man might perceiue, was rather an assembling of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. *Philoclea* no sooner espied the Lion [n], but that obeying the com[m]andement of feare, she lept vp, & ran to the lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legs could carry her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is eue[n] ready to seaze. But the Lion (seing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to seaze him selfe on the pray, when *Zelmane* (to whome daunger then was a cause of dreadlesnes, all the co[m]positions of her elemets being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow vpon his chine, that she opened al his body: wherewith the valiant beast turning vpo[n]her with open iawes, she gaue him such a thrust thorow his brest, that al the Lio[n] could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and sleeue of *Zelmane*, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow hauing take away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gaue *Zelmane* leasure to take of his head, to carrie it for a present to her Ladie *Philoclea*: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like *Arethusa* when she ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time haue willingly hidden, was present to the sight of the twise wounded *Zelmane*. Which made
Zelmane not follow her over hastily, lest she should too soon deprive her selfe of that pleasure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully ouertake her, till they came to the presence of Basilius. Nether were they looking there, but that Gynecia came thereto also: who had bene in such a traunce of musing, that Zelmane was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lions coming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preuenting all extremitie of feare, she marked Zelmanes fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as Zelmane ran after Philoclea so she could not find in her hart but run after Zelmane: so that it was a new sight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runn one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: Philoclea with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth: Zelmane with an eager and impatient delight, Gynecia with wings of Loue, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before Basilius amazed with this sight, and feare hauing such possessio[n] in the faire Philoclea, that her bloud durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of palenesse from her most pure whitenes, Zelmane kneeled down, and presented the Lions head vnto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the punishment of that vnnatural beast, which co[n]trary to her owne kind wold haue wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traiterous eies, as durst rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answered the sweete Philoclea then blushing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent Amazon, were there to teach him good manners. And euen thankes to that beautie (answered Zelmane) which can giue an edge to the bluntest swordes? There Philoclea told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to Zelmane, she perceiued some bloud vpon Zelmanes shoulder, so that starting with the louely grace of pitty, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with ouer-much kissing may forget to giue the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praying Zelmane, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though Zelmane assured them, it was nothing) would needes see it; Gynecia hauing skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it served to
vertuous courage, which eue[n] Ladies would (eue[n] with the conte[m]pt of courage) seeme to cherish. But looking ypon it (which gaue more inward bleeding wou[n]ds to Zelmane, for she might sometimes feele Philoe[ca]s touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied she a pretious baulme vnto it, of power to heale a greater griefe.

But euen then, & not before, they reme[m]bred Pamela, therefore Zelmane (thinking of her friend Dorus) was running back to be satisfied, whe[n] they might all see Pamela coming between Dorus & Dametas, hauing in her ha[n]d the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard Dorus had newly presented vnto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deserved death for her presumption, yet was her will to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. Dametas for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish. But whe[n] he came so neere, as he might be heard of Basilius, he would needs breake thorow his eares with this joyfull song of their good successe.

Now thanked be the great God Pan,
which thus preserves my loued life:
Thanked lie I that keepe a man,
who ended hath this fearefull strife:
For if my man must praises haue,
what then must I that keepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eies doth please,
with gentle beames not hurting sight:
Yet hath sir Sunne the greatest praise,
because from him doth come her light:
So if my man must praises haue,
what then must I that keepe the knaue?

Being al now come together, & all desirous to know each others adve[n]tures, Pamela's noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valia[n]t mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this ma[n] ner. As soone (said she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safetie, there came out of the same woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing belike to deale while the
Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously
towards the place where I was, and this young shepheard left
alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisedome, which since
they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge
against that beast, but eue[n] pure feare bringing forth that
effect of wisedome) fell downe flat of my face, needing not
cou[n]terfait being dead, for indeed I was little better. But this
shepheard hauing no other weapon, but that knife you see,
standing before the place where I lay, so behaued him selfe,
that the first sight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer
Charons ferry,) was the shepheard shewing me his bloudy
knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide Zelmane, speaking
to Dorus, whose valour she was carefull to haue manifested)
in what sorte, so ill weaponed, could you atchiue this
enterprise? Noble Ladie (saide Dorus) the manner of these
beastes fighting with any man, is to stande vp vpon their
hindre feeete: and so this did, & being ready to giue me a
shrewd imbracement, I thinke, the God Pan, (euer carefull of
the chiefe blessings of Arcadia) guided my hand so iust to the
hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch me, nor
(which is the only matter in this worthy remembrance)
breed any da[n]ger to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather
(withall subiected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies,
since the duety thereunto gaue me harte to saue my selfe, then
to receiue thankes for a deede, which was her onely inspiring.
And this Dorus spake, keeping affection as much as he could,
backe from coming into his eyes and gestures. But Zelmane
(that had the same Character in her heart) could easily
discerne it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speach,
desired to understand the conclusion of the matter; and how
the honest Dametas was escaped.

Nay (said Pamela) none shall take that office from
my selfe, being so much bound to him as I am, for my
education. And with that word (scorne borrowing the
countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake
on? When (said she) Dorus made me assuredly perceiue, that
all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to
finde my selfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore
looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both
perceiued the gentle Dametas, lying with his breast and head
as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing vp
his legges as close vnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of
a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was
full resolved not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that Dorus was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shew him the beast, as deade as he could wish it: which you may beleue me, was a very ioyful sight vnto him. But then he forgate al curtesie, for he fel vpon the beast, giuing it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beasts shuld be suffered in a com[mo[n]welth. And then my gouernour, as full of ioy, as before of feare, came dauncing and singing before vs as euen now you saw him. Well wel (said Basilius) I haue not chosen Dametas for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie and therein I know he will not deceaue me.

But then he told Pamela (not so much because she should know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act Zelmane had perfourmed, which Gynecia likewise spake [of], both in such extremitie of praising, as was easie to be seene, the constructions of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. Basilius told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in her hand, like another Pallas with the spoiles of Gorgon. Gynecia sware, shee sawe the face of the young Hercules killing the Nemean Lion, & all with a grateful assent confirmed the same praises: onely poore Dorus (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should haue bene left forgotten, had not Zelmane againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in Arcadia, that sheepherds should perfome such valorous enterprises. This Basilius (hauing the quicke sense of a louer) tooke, as though his Mistres had giuen a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to Dorus; and therefore (as nymblie as he could) enquired of his estate, adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in souldierie, he would commit some charge vnto him vnder his Lieutenant Philanax. But Dorus (whose ambition clymed by another stayre) hauing first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard Menalcas; who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, & excused his going to souldierie, by the vnaptnesse he found in himselfe that way: he told Basilius, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serve
Dametas; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his service greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to liue in the sight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen vocation. Basilius (liking well his godly shape and handsome manner) charged Dametas to receiue him like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, and Dametas truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischieves, as (he slicked not to say) were threatned to his daughter Pamela.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fal into then his owne) accepted Dorus: and with all, telling Basilius, that some of the shepheards were come; demaunded in what place he would see their sports: who first curious to know whether it were not more requisite for Zelmanes hurt to rest, then sit vp at those pastimes; and she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to haue Pastorals, Basilius commanded it should be at the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made Zelmane sit betweene him & his wife therin, who thought her selfe betweene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to bee delighted by the shepheards.

But before al of them were assembled to begin their sports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastines told Basilius, that his Mistres, the Lady Cecropia, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beastes ranging in that dagerous sort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himself able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceiued: whom yet (if Basilius would punish for it) she was readie to deliuer. Basilius made no other answere, but that his Mistres if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be killed: and then he told his wife & Zelmane of it, because they should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such beasts, where the like had neuer bene seene. But Gynecia tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting Cecropia, because shee had heard much of the diuellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularly she did her best to bring vp her sonne Amphialus (being brothers sonne to Basilius) to aspire to the crowne, as next heire male after Basilius; and therefore saw no reason, but that she might coniecture, it proceeded rather of some mischieuous practise,
than of misfortune. Yet did she onely vtter her doubt to her
daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, shee would
attend a further occasion, least ouer much haste might seeme
to procede of the ordinarie mislike betweene sisters in Lawe:
onely they marvelled, that Basilius looked no further into it;
who (good man) thought so much of his late conceiued
common wealth, that all other matters were but digressions
vntoo him. But the shepheards were ready, and with wel
handling themselves, called their senses to attend their
pastimes.

The first Eclogues

B A S I L I V S, because Zelmane so would haue it, vsed the
artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their inve[n]
tions could minister. And yet because many more shepheards
were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner
chastise the cowardise of the fugitiue shepheards: with
making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others
later come, he willed with all freedome of speech and
behaviour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while
they prepared to do, Dametas, who much disdained (since his
late authority) all his old companions, brought his servant
Dorus in good acquaintance and allowance of the[m]; &
himselfe stood like a directer ouer the[m], with nodding,
gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or
mislike those things he did not vnderstand. The first sports
the shepheards shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols,
as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their
mouthes, even as they daunced) made a right picture of their
chiefe god Pan, and his companions the Satyres. Then would
they cast away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce
as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices,
which they would vse in singing some short coplets, whereto
the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answere. As
the one halfe saying,

We loue, and haue our loues rewarded.
The others would aunswere.
We loue, and are no whit regarded.
The first againe.

We finde most sweete affections snare,
With like tune it should be as in quire sent back againe.
That sweete, but sower despairefull care.
A third time likewise thus:
  Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare ?
The aunswere.
  And who can hope, that feeles despaire?
Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure,
they would conclude with some such words:
As without breath, no pipe doth moue,
No musike kindly without loue.

Hauing thus varied both their songs and daunces into diuers
sorts of inventions; their last sport was one of them to
prouoke another to a more large expressing of his passions:
which Lalus (accounted one of the best singers amongst
them) hauing marked in Dorus dauncing, no lesse good grace
& hansome behauior, then extreame tokens of a trauelled
minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus
to chalenge Dorus, and was by him answered in the
vnderwritten sort.

Lalus and Dorus.

Come Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie:
And if for want of vse thy minde ashamed is,
That verie shame with Loues high title dignifie.
  No stile is held for base, where Loue well named is:
Ech eare suckes vp the words, a true loue scattereth,
And plaine speach oft, then quaint phrase, better framed is.

  Nightingales seldom sing, the Pie still
  chattereth:
The wood cries most, before it throughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, ech sleight sore mattereth.
  Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.
Shallow brookes murmure most, deep silent slide away;
Nor true loue loues those loues with others mingled be.

  If thou wilt not be scene, thy face goe hide
away, .
Be none of vs, or els maintaine our fashion:
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better bide away,
  But if thou hast a Loue, in that Loues passion,
I challenge thee by shew of her perfection,
Which of vs two deserveth most compassion.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:

Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)

Thy health too meane a match for my infection.

No, though the heau'ns for high attempts haue blamed me,

Yet high is my attempt, O Muse historifie
Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.

Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan,

glorifie

My Kalas giftes: who with all good gifts filled is.

Thy pipe, ô Pan, shall helpe, though I sing sorilie.

A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;

Who though she be no Bee, yet full of home is:

A Lillie field, with plowe of Rose which tilled is.

Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is:

Her eyes my eyesight is, her conversation

More gladde to me, then to a miser monie is.

What coye account she makes of estimation?

How nice to touch[,] how all her speeches peized be ?

A Nimph thus turnde, but mended in translation.

Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies raysed be

In one, whose name to name were high presumption,

Since vertues all, to make her title, pleased be.

O happie Gods, which by inward assumption

Enioy her soule, in bodies faire possession,

And keep it ioynde, fearing your seates consumption.

How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,

Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection

From heau'nly throne to her heau'n vse digression?

Of best things then what world can yeeld confection

To liken her? Decke yours with your comparison:

She is her selfe, of best things the collection.

How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne

When first he spied my loue ? how oft he said to me,

Thou art no soouldier fitte for Cupids garrison?

My sonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:

Loue well thine owne: me thinkes, woolles whitenes passeth
all,
I neuer found long loue such wealth hath paide to me.
This winde he spent: but when my Kala glasseth all
My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,
Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.
Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my selfe?
Want I white wooll, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?
Till I get her, shall I to keepe enure my selfe?

How oft, when reason saw, loue of her
harnised
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
To set a pearle in steele so meanely varnished ?
Looke to thy selfe; reach not beyond humanitie:
Her minde, beames, state farre from thy weake wings banished:
And Loue, which louer hurts is inhumanitie.
Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
Her eyes so maistering me, that such obiection
Seemde but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.
Her peereles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp; and if hope-fayling ende liues pleasure,
Of fayrer death how can I make election?

Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,
With sleeues turnde vp, loose haire, and brest enlarged,
Her fathers corne (mouing her faire limmes) measure.
O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.
Thy father bids thee saue, and chides for spilling.
Saue then my soule, spill not my thoughts well heaped,
No louely praise was euer got by killing.
These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.

Once, ô sweete once, I saw with dread
oppressed
Her whom I dread; so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Loues chiefe clothing dressed.
I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enjoy so deare a couer,
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.
    Lay all your feare vpon your fearefull louer:
Shine eyes on me, that both our liues be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your selves recouer.
    I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:
But straight they fledde, summond by cruell honor,
Honor, the cause, desart is not regarded.

This mayde, thus made for ioyes, ô Pan bemone her,
That without loue she spends her yeares of loue:
    So faire a fielde would well become an owner.
And if enchantment can a harde hart moue,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to proue.
    The circle is my (round about her) sight:
My charme should be, she haunt me day and night.

Farre other care, ô Muse, my sorrow tries,
Bent to such one, in whom, my selfe must say,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.
    What circle then in so rare force beares swaye?
Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damne, or saue:
    No charme holdes her, but well possesse she may;
Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slaue:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
    No thralles like them that inward bondage haue.

Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte:
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heire of many hundred sheep
Doth beauties keep, which neuer Sunne can burne,
    Nor stormes doo turne: fairenes serves oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.
Which if you, will (& doo) bestow on me,
    Such as you see, such still you shall me finde.
Constant and kind: my sheep your foode shall breed,
Their wooll your weede, I will you Musique yeeld
    In flowrie fiele; and as the day begins
With twenty ginnes we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as Nature things hath made.
    But when in shade we meet of mirtle bowes,
Then Loue allowes, our pleasures to enrich,  
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.  

Lady your selfe, whom nether name I dare,  
And titles are but spots to such a worthe,  
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.  
The noblest kinde reiects not others woes.  
I haue no shewes of wealth: my wealth is you,  
My beauties hewe your beames, my health your deeds;  
My minde for weeds your vertues liuerie weares.  
My foode is teares; my tunes waymenting yeeld:  
Despaire my fielde; the flowers spirits warrs:  
My day newe cares; my ginnes my daily sight,  
In which do light small birds of thoughts orethrowne:  
My pastimes none: time passeth on my fall:  
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:  
I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burne:  
No place to turne; without, within it fryes:  
Nor helpe by life or death who liuing dyes.

But if my Kala this my suite denies,  
Which so much reason beares,  
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:  
If still her minde be such,  
My earthy moulds will melte in watrie teares.

My earthy moulde doth melte in watrie teares,  
And they againe resolue  
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,  
Which doth to ashes burne:  
So doth my life within it selfe dissolue.

So doth my life within it selfe dissolue,  
That I am like a flower  
New plucked from the place where it did breed,  
Life showing, dead indeed:  
Such force hath Loue aboue poore Natures power.

Such force hath Loue aboue poore Natures power,  
That I growe like a shade,  
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,  
While that one body shine.  
Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.
Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepheards trade.
Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condition:
Of singing take to thee the reputation.

Of singing take to thee the reputation
New friend of mine; I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth seeke another estimation.
But ah my Muse would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddess so by thy invention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.
Seen, and vnknowne; heard, but without attention.

This Eclogue betwixt Lalus & Dorus, of euery one of the beholders receiued great commendations. When Basilius called to a yong shepheard, who nether had daunced nor song with the[m], but layne al this while vpo[n] the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loued, to be in prison in his body: & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepheards, according to the accustomed guise: or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, vknowne to him; as being a straunger in that cou[n] try. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too ioyful to suffer the rehersall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy Basilius some way, he sange this songe, he had learned before he had subiected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

AS I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A little flocke; but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping leade, the Sunne already sanke
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boothe.
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scathe;
Saving the glowe worme, which would curteous be
Of that small light oft watching shepheards see.

The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In cofer of dimme clowdes his silver groates,
Icleped starres; each thing to rest disposed:
The caues were full, the mountaines voide of goates:
The birds eyes closde closed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.

Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared sore;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to heart
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euer for my selfe since I was bore:
   I sate me downe: for see to goe ne could,
   And sange vnto my sheepe lest stray they should.

The songe I sange old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knewe,
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,
   To haue a feeling fast of him that sitts
   Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.

He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleasd
Was iumpe Concorde betweene our wit and will;
Where highest notes to godlines are raisd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,
   How sheepheards did of yore, how now they thriue,
  Spoiling their flock, or while twixt the[m] they striue.

He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippry yeares vpbose:
He still hop'd well, because he loued truth;
Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes even sore,
To worthy Coriden he gaue me ore.
   But thus in okes true shade recounted he
   Which now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.

Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely won'd with such as beasts begot:
Vnknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers
   Might freely rome, or rest, as seemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.

The beastes had sure some beastly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lam.be did lie;
The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse :
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.

This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.

At which whether the others did repine,
(For envie harbreth most in feeblest hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As euen in beasts their dames leaue chaunging parts)
The multitude to Ioue a suite empartes,
   With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
   Raring, and howling for to haue a King.

A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattring, that of Ioue beseech.
Onely the owle still warnde them not to seech
   So hastily that which they would repent:
   But sawe they would, and he to deserts went.

Ioue wisely said (for wisedome wisely sayes)
O beasts, take heed what you of me desire.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to please,
And soone forget the swincke due to their hire.
But since you will, part of my heau'ny fire
   I will you lende; the rest your selves must giue,
   That it both seene and felte may with you liue.

Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,
Which streight the Earth yclothed in his claye:
The Lion, harte; the Ounce gaue actiue might;
The Horse, good shape; the Sparrow, lust to playe;
Nightingale, voice, entising songes to saye.
   Elephant gaue a perfect memorie:
   And Paroty ready tongue, that to applie.

The Foxe gaue crafte; the Dog gaue flatterie;
Asse, patience; the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secrete crueltie:
Monkie, sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
The Ermion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;
   The sheep, mild-seeming face; climing, the Beare;
The Stagge did giue the harme eschewing feare.

The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholie;
Ante, Industrie; and Connie, skill to builde;
Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;
Camasleon, ease to chaunge; Ducke, ease to yelde;
Crocodile, teares, which might be falsely spilde:
   Ape great thing gaue, though he did mowing stand.
The instrument of instruments, the hand.

Ech other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to giue him wings:
And aye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priuiledge they graunt,
   That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
   No beast should freely speake, but onely he.

Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
Who at. the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beastes best vse his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
   Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
   As if he meant his lordship common be.

But when his state so rooted he had found,
That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
   But yet the common Damme none did bemone;
   Because (though hurt) they neuer heard her grone.

Then gan the factions in the beastes to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beastes,
(As Tygers, leopards, hearts, and Lions seed)
Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes;
Where famine rauine taught their hungrie chestes,
   That craftily he first them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.

For murthers done, which neuer erst was seene,
By those great beastes, as for the weakers good,
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,
Gainst those of might, of whom in feare they stood,
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
    Blith were the commons cattell of the fielde,
    Tho when they saw their foen of greatnes kilde.

But they or spent, or made of slender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light:
For by and by the horse faire bitts did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
    As for the gentle birds like case might reiue
    When falcon they, and gossehauke saw in mewe.

Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he vsed.
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'de to be abused,
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brused:
    At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
    At last for sport their sillie liues did spill.

But yet o man, rage not beyond thy neede :
Deeme it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; ioy not to see things bleede :
Thou fearest death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.
    And you poore beastes, in patience bide your hell,
    Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.

Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houres
To sheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull stowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
    The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
    Sure shepherds signe, that morne should soone fetch day.

According to the nature of diuerse eares, diuerse
judgements straight followed: some praising his voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, others the strangenes of the tale, and scanning what he shuld meane by it. But old Geron (who had borne him a grudge euer since in one of their Eclogues he had taken him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to make his reuenge, and said, He neuer saw thing worse proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beastes at such a sport-meeting, when rather some song of loue, or matter for ioyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, said he, This is the right conceipt of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiseliest, when they cannot vnderstand themselves. But little did the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraises, or the others praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there; where he was most despised. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensiuenesse, Geron invited Histor to answere him in Eclogue-wise; who indeed hauing bene long in loue with the faire Kala, and now by Lalus ouergone; was growne into a detestation of marriage. But thus it was.

**Geron.**

**Histor.**

**IN faith, good Histor, long is your delay,**

*From holy marriage sweete and surest meane:*

*Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.*

*I pray thee doo to Lalus sample leane:*

*Thou seest, how friske, and iolly now he is,*

*That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.*

*Beleeue me man, then is no greater blisse,*

*Then is the quiet ioy of louing wife;*

*Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse.*

*Friend without change, playfellow without strife,*

*Foode without fulnes, counsaile without pride,*

*Is this sweet doubling of our single life.*

**No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,**

*As for to finde a pasture strawed with guide,*

*He were a foole, if there he did not bide.*

*Who would not haue a Phœnix if he could?*

*The humming Waspe, if it had not a stinge,*

*Before all flies the Waspe accept I would.*

*But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,*

*Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions haue:*

http://darkwing.uoregon.edu/%7Erbear/arcadia1.html (135 of 142)04-03-2006 14:25:24
The wasp seems gay, but is a combersome thing.
If many Kalaes our Arcadia gave,
Lalus example I would soon ensue,
And think, I did myself from sorrow save.
But of such wives we finde a slender crew;
Shrewdnes so stirres, pride so puffs vp the hart,
They seldom ponder what to them is due.
With meager looks, as if they still did smart;
Puiling, and whimpring, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.
Ether dull silence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes;
If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.
Austere she is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iourney stayes.
She warre doth euer with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who frinds by nature are,
Envying shallow toyes with malice deepe.
And if forsooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating browes haue got,
Must goe for that, if for her lowres he care:
Or els; Nay faith, mine is the luckiest lot,
That euer fell to honest woman yet:
No wife but I hath such a man, God wot.
Such is their speech, who be of sober wit;
But who doo let their tongues shew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they spit?
The house is made a very lothsome cage,
Wherein the birde doth never sing but cry;
With such a will as nothing can asswage.
Dearely the servants doo their wages buy,
Reui'd for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doo lie.
Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.

Who for ech fickle feare from vertue shrinkes
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:
No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinkes.
The heau'n's doo not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:

Geron.
That still our little world may know his king.
But certainly so long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th"euent we neuer ought be sad.
Man oft is plag"de with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water dround, in earth his buriall is;
And shall we not therefore their vse desire ?
Nature aboue, all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse.
Thy father iustly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting vnto him a grandsires gaine.
Thy common-wealth may rightly grieued be,
Which must by this immortall be preserved
If thus thou murther thy posteritie.
His very being he hath not deserved,
Who for a selfe-conceipt will that forbeare,
Whereby that being aye must be conserved.
And God forbid, women such cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth speake aright, who speakes in feare.
Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.
These fiftie winters maried haue I beene;
And yet finde no such faults in womankind.
I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well she can command, and yet obay;
In ruling of a house so well shee's seene.
And yet in all this time, betwixt vs tway,
We beare our double yoke with such consent,
That neuer past foule word, I dare well say.
But these be your loue-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and loue not as you should,
But with much studie learne late to repent.
How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.
Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maist auowe,
And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.
Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdome bowe
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
And are not forst fonde thraldome to allow.
As we to get are framed, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home have care.

O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:
Thy house by thee must liue, or els be gone:
And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?
Riches of children passe a Princes throne;
Which touch the fathers hart with secret ioy,
When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.

Marrie therefore; for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthful head doo clime
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.

All the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fellowe,
and easilie perceiued in Histor, he liked Lalus fortune better,
then he loued his person. But Basilius to entermixe with these
light notes of libertie, some sadder tune, set to the key of his
own passion, not seeing there Strephon or Klaius, (who called
thence by Vranias letter, were both gone to continue their
suite, like two true runners, both employing their best speed,
but not one hindring the other) he called to one Lamo[n] of
their acquaintance, and willed him to sing some one of their
songs; which he redily performed in this doble Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

You Gote-heard Gods, that loue the grassie
mountaines,
You Nimphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies,
You Satyrs ioyde with free and quiet forrests,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,
Which to my woes giues still an early morning:
And drawes the dolor on till verry euening.

O Mercurie, foregoer to the euening,
O heauenlie huntresse of the sauage
mountaines,
O louelie starre, entitled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,
Which oft hath Echo tir'd in secrete forrests.
I that was once free-burges of the forrests,
Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at euening,
I that was once esteem'd for pleasant musique,
Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines
Of huge despaire, and fault afflictions vallies,
Am growne a shrich-owle to my selfe each morning.

I that was once delighted euery morning,
Hunting the wilde inhabiteres of forrests,
I that was once the musique of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is euening,
Hart-broken so, that molehilles seeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in steed of musique.

Long since alas, my deadly Swannish musique
Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing stre[n]gh clim'd highest mountaines:
Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:
Long since I see my ioyes come to their euening,
And state throwen downe to ouer-troden vallies.

Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,
Haue praide me leaue my strange exclaiming musique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, and ioyes of euening:
Long since I hate the night, more bate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish my selfe layd vnder mountaines.

Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,
Transforme themselves to lowe deicted vallies;
Me seemes I heare in these ill-changed forrests,
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their musique:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turnde to the mortall serene of an euening.

Me seemes I see a filthie clowdie euening,
As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of murdred men in forrests.

I wish to fire the trees of all these forrests;
I giue the Sunne a last farewell each euening;
I curse the fidling finders out of Musicke:
With envie I doo hate the loftie mountaines;
And with despite despise the humble vallies:
I doo detest night, euening, day, and morning.

Curse to my selfe my prayer is, the morning:
My fire is more, then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies:
I wish no evenings more to see, each euening;
Shamed I haue my selfe in sight of mountaines,
And stoppe mine eares, lest I growe mad with Musicke.

For she, whose parts maintainde a perfect musique,
Whose beautie shin'de more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,
In straightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternal euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.

For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,
She, whose lest word brings from the spheares their musique,
At whose approach the Sunne rose in the euening,
Who, where she went, bare in her forhead morning,
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyled forrests,
Turning to desarts our best pastur'de mountaines.

These mountaines witnesse shall, so shall these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,
Our morning hymne is this, and song at euening.

ZElmane seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but
Philocleas eares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sange these Sapphiques, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

*If mine eyes can speake to doo harty errande,*  
*Or mine eyes language she doo hap to iudge of,*  
*So that eyes message be of her receaued,*  
*Hope we do liue yet.*

*But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,*  
*Or if eyes language be not vnto her knowne,*  
*So that eyes message doo returne reiected,*  
*Hope we doo both dye.*

*Yet dying, and dead, doo we sing her honour;*  
*So become our tombes monuments of her praise;*  
*So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne;*  
*Hers be the glory.*

*If the spheares senselesse doo yet hold a musique,*  
*If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,*  
*If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,*  
*Yeldeth a lutes tune.*

*Are then humane mindes priuiledg'd so meanly,*  
*As that hateful death can abridge them of powre,*  
*With the vowe of truth to recorde to all worldes,*  
*That we be her spoiles?*

*Thus not ending, endes the due praise of her praise;*  
*Fleshly vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,*  
*Which is helde in loue, loue it is, that hath ioynde*  
*Life to this our soule.*

*But if eyes can speake to doo harty errande,*  
*Or mine eyes language she doo hap to iudge of,*  
*So that eyes message be of her receaued,*  
*Hope we doo liue yet.*

*What exclaiming praises Basilius gaue to Zelmanes songe,*  
*any man may ghesse, that knowes loue is better then a paire*  
*of spectacles to make euery thing seeme greater, which is*
see through it: and then is it neuer tongue-tied, where fit commendation (whereof womankind is so licorous) is offered vnto it. Yea, he fel prostrate on the ground, and thanked the Gods, they had preserved his life so long, as to heare the very musique they themselves vsed, in an earthly body. But the wasting of the torches served as a watch vnto them, to make them see the time waste; and therefore the King (though vnwilling) rose from the seate, which he thought excellently setled on the one side: and considering Zelmanes late hurte, perswaded her to take that farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

*The end of the first Booke.*

---

**Booke II.**

Renascence Editions
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia (1590). Book II.

Sir Philip Sidney.

Note on the e-text: this Renascence Editions text was transcribed by Risa Bear, November, 2003, from the Sommer facsimile of a British Museum copy of the Ponsonby edition of 1590. The text is in the public domain. Content unique to this presentation is copyright © 2003 The University of Oregon. For nonprofit and educational uses only.

THE SECOND BOOKE
OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

The loue-complaintes l of Gynecia, 2 Zelmane, 3 and Basilius. 4 Her, 5 and his wooing of Zelmane, and her shifting of both, 6 to bemone her selfe.

In these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessors, while the cup of poison (which was deeply tasted of this noble companie) had left no sinewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet neuer manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angerly, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of louers) had no sooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames vpon the tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull Gynecia (to whom rest was no ease) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places
those deserts were full of, going vp and downe with such vnquiet motions, as
a grieued & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered vn the eies
of her judgement the euils she was like to run into, with ougly infamie
waiting vp upon them: she felt the terrou[r]s of her owne conscience: she was
guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of
deformitie. The vittermost of the good she could aspire vn to, was a mortall
wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her euils was, that she
was wise to see her euils. In so much, that hauing a great while throwne her
cou[n]tenaunce ghastly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the
worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting vp her watrie eyes
to heauen, O Sunne (said she) whose vンspotted light directs the steps of
mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy
presence to such a dust-creeping worme as I am? O you heauens (which
continually keepe the course allotted vn to you) can none of your influences
preuaile so much vpon the miserable Gynecia, as to make her preserue a
course so lo[n]g embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for
you, since my hart can people you with wild rauenous beastes, which in you
are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous
thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart neuer but a
vaine name, and no essentiall thing, which hast thus left thy professed
seruant, when she had most need of thy louely presence? O imperfect
proportion of reason, which can too much forsee, & too little preuent.
Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one
excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all
succour, & my euill deseruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing els
did my husband take this straunge resolutio[n] to liue so solitarily: for nothing
els haue the winds deliuered this straunge guest to my country: for nothing els
haue the destinies reserued my life to this time, but that only I (most wretched
I) should become a plague to my selfe, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my
desire (how vniust so euer it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths
folowed it, and euery death were followed with a thousand shames; yet
should not my sepulcher receiue me without some contentment. But alas,
though sure I am, that Zelmane is such as can answere my loue; yet as sure I
am, that this disguising must needs come for some foretake[n] co[n]eipt.
And then, wretched Gynecia, where cast thou find any smal group[n]d-plot for
hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is Philoclea his hart is set vpon: it is my
daughter I haue borne to supplant me. But if it be so, the life I haue giuen thee
(vngratefull Philoclea) I will sooner with these handes bereaue thee of, then
my birth shall glory, she hath bereaued me of my desires. In shame there is no
co[m]fort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

Hauing spoke[n] thus, she began to make a piteous war with hir faire
haire, when she might heare (not far fro[m] her)
an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering
note, that she could not conceaue the wordes distinctly. But (as a

http://darkwing.uoregon.edu/%7Erbear/arcadia2.html (2 of 166)04-03-2006 14:26:05
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find some compato[n] of her misery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a number of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to vnderstand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceaue a Lute excellently well played vpon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

IN vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende
With flowing teares your fault of hasty sight:
Since to my hart her shape you so did sends;
That her I see, though you did lose your light.

In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burnd,
With sighes you seeke to coole your hotte desire:
Since sighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)
For bellowes serue to kindle more the fire.

Reason, in vaine (now you haue lost my hart)
My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte:
Since there mine eyes haue played so false a parte,
That to your strength your foes haue sure resorte.
Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,
To this strange death I vainely yeeld my life.

The ending of the song serued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heauy a burthe of cares) was faine to discharge it self of al sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in al sortes of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had euill joined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull minde then receiue euer thing to a ioyful consideration, then my carefull mind now makes ech thing tast like the bitter iuyce of care. The euill is inward, my Lute, the euill is inward; which all thou doost doth serue but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cause I finde of thinking, but lesse of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leaue thy master, since he is not afraide to forsake himselfe.

And thus much spoke[n] (in steed of a conclusion) was closed vp with so harty a groning, that Gynecia could not
refraine to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could serue fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of Zelmane, which was the party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodaine astonishment. Zelmane fearing, least shee had heard some part of those complaints, which shee had risen vp that morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe. But Gynecia a great while stoode still, with a kind of dull amasement, looking stedfastly vpon her: at length returning to some vse of her selfe, shee began to aske Zelmane, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to Zelmane, had opened some great flood-gate of sorrow (wherof her heart could not abide the viole[n]t issue) she sanke to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, Zelmane helpe me, O Zelmane haue pittie on me. Zelmane ranne to her, maruelling what sodaine sicknesse had thus possessed her: and beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offring her seruice to be imployed by her: Gynecia opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the torments of her owne conscience: O Zelmane, Zelmane, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poysnon? Or wilt thou doo me seruice, which hast alredie brought me into eternall slauerie? Zelmane then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fitte. Retire my selfe? (said Gynecia) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate guest) earnest to draw me fro[m] my selfe; blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counsaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee iudge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mischiefe. Zelmane the more astonished, the more she vnderstood her, Madam (said she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered Gynecia, what shall I say more? Take pitty of me, O Zelmane, but not as Zelmane, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell. Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding her selfe brought to this streight. But as shee was thinking what to answere her; they might see olde Basilius passe harde by them, without euer seeing them: complayning likewise of loue verie freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

Let not old age disgrace my high desire,
O heauenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflam'de, doth yeeld the brauest fire,
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.
Ne let white haires, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull hewe:
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes doo honour vnto you.

Old age is wise and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayed from raunging humor liues:
Old age hath knowne what euuer was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.

Which being done, he looked verie curiously vpon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had said, his strength had not yet forsaken him. But Zelmane hauing in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answere; looking vpon Gynecia, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an Amazon, neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed. If my seruice may please you, imploie it, so long as you do me no wrong in misiudgeing of me. Alas Zelmane (said Gynecia) I perceiue you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true louer. There is no one beame of those thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able discerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was Zelmane brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceiued his wife and mistres togither: so that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained Zelmane,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Ladie Zelmane. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ielousie in that point) obeyed the kings commaundement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all louing meanes to winne Zelmane, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her best resolutions, that euen her bodie (where the fiedle was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sicknesse waite vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it pruailed in her, the more it made her ielousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and Zelmane; hauing euer one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as Basilius was ridde of his wiuues presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie; which can make old age come to aske counsaile of youth;
and a Prince vnco[n]quered, to become a slaue to a stranger. And whe[n] you see that power of yours, loue that at lest in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loued. Worthy Prince (answered Zelmane, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your manner, and your speech are so straunge vnnto me, as I know not how to answere it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shal neuer displease me, since my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse, as to heare you, they shall conuay your words to such a mind, which is with the humblest degree of reuere [n]ce to receiue them. I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said Zelmane,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which may bring my honor into question. And therewith, with a braue counterfeited scorne she departed from the king; leauing him not so sorie for his short answere, as proud in himselfe that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with those thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making more of himselfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would haue growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But Zelmane being ridde of this louing, but little-loued company, Alas (said she) poore Pyrocles, was there euer one, but I, that had receiued wrong, and could blame no body? that hauing more then I desire, am still in want of that I would? Truly Loue, I must needes say thus much on thy behalfe; thou hast imploied my loue there, where all loue is deserued; and for recompence hast sent me more loue then euer I desired. But what wilt thou doo Pyrocles? which way canst thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To her whom I would be knowne to, I liue in darkenesse: and to her am reuauled, from whom I would be most secreat. What shift shall I finde against the diligent loue of Basilius? what shield against the violent passions of Gynecia? And if that be done, yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, well, sweete Philoclea, my whole confidence must be builded in thy diuine spirit, which cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

CHAP. 2.

1 Dametas-his enstructing of Dorus. 2 Zelmanes discourse to Dorus of her difficulties; 3 & his to her of his successe in loue. 4 His loue-suits made to Mopsa, meant to Pamela: with their answeres.

Vt as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue them, & yet hauing company do find it noysome; changing willingly outward obiects, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore Zelmane was no more weery of Basilius, then she was of her selfe, when Basilius was gone: and euer the more, the more she turned her eyes...
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

to become her owne iudges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her
friende Dorus; that vpon the shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen
of sorrow: and therefore went toward the other lodge: where among certaine
Beeches she found Dorus, apparelled in flanen, with a goats skin cast vpon
him, & a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres leaues on his head, wayting on
his master Dametas, who at that time was teching him how with his
sheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a little clod at
any one that strayed out of co[m]panie. And while Dorus was practising, one
might see Dametas hold his hand vnder his girdle behind him, nodding from
the wast vpwards, & swearing he neuer knew man go more aukewardly to
worke: & that they might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his
part, he neuer saw more vnfeatlie fellowes, then great clearks were.

But Zelmanes comming saued Dorus from further chiding. And so she
beginning to speake with him of the number of
his masters sheepe, and which Prouince of Arcadia bare the finest wooll,
drewe him on to follow her in such countrie discourses, till (being out of
Dametas hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her harte
would clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared vnto
him, vpon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed
to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; she remaining stil
in one plignt of ill fortune, sauing so much worse, as continuance of euill
dooth in it selfe increase euill. Alas my Dorus (said she) thou seest how long
and languishingly the weekes are paste ouer vs since our laste talking. And
yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and
weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the
insupportablenes of her desires, that Dorus eares (not able to shew what
woundes that discourse gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue
testimonie, how much they suffered for her suffering: till passion (a most
cumbersome guest to it selfe) made Zelmane (the sooner to shake it of)
earnestly intreate Dorus, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would
bestow a Mappe of his little worlde, vpon her; that she might see, whether it
were troubled with such vnhabitable climes of colde despaires, and hotte
rages, as hers was. And so walking vnder a fewe Palme trees, (which being
louing in their own nature, seemed to giue their shadow the willinglier,
because they held discourse of loue) Dorus thus entred to the description of
his fortune.

Alas (said he) deare Cosin, that it hath pleased the high powers to throwe
vs to such an estate, as the onely entercourse
of our true friendshipe, must be a bartring of miseries. For my parte, I
must confesse indeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am
crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather,
peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the
marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a
small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitife may the better remember
the light, of which he is depruied: or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selfe utterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serue in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the seruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princesse (in whom indeede statelines shines through courtesie) to let fall some gratious looke vpon me. Sometimes to see my exercises, sometimes to heare my songes. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable Pamela, see how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her seruice: and withall, straue to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, ioyned to so great affection, might preuaile something in the wisest Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepheards seruice was but considered of as from a shepheard, and the acceptation limitted to no further proportion, then of a good seruant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I sawe straight, Maiesty (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sworde of iust disdaine, that I remayned as a man thunder-striken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowen, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the suspitiousnes of Dametas, Miso, and my young Mistresse, Mopsa. For, Dametas (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wise, then by suspecting euery thing in his way. Which suspition Miso (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and Mopsa (for a very vnlikely enuie she hath stumbled vpon, against the Princesses vnspeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my seruice by this meanes lightlie regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe vnknowen) remayned no fuller of desire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desire. Which (alas) if these trees could speak, they might well witnesse. For, many times haue I stoode here, bewailing my selfe vnto them: many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the blessednes of it, that coulde beare Loue without sence of paine. Many times, when my masters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his loue. But how? with proud lookes, and ioyfulnes. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom witte (which should be the gouerner of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inherithe her blessings quietly; we, like bastards, are layd abroad, euen as foundlinges to be trayned vp by griefe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their sences are letted from enjoying their objects: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truely in such cogitatio[n]s haue I somtimes so long stood, that me thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with such a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might easilie haue bene persuaded to haue resigned ouer my very essence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pulled vp my
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

harte to remembrance, that nothing is atchieued before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying still doth never goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or never, to sharpen my invention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterprise; never ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other; how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at last, I lighted and resolved on this way, which yet perchaunce you will think was a way rather to hide it.

I began to counterfeite the extremest loue towards Mopsa, that might be: and as for the loue, so liuely it was indeed within me, (although to another subject) that litle I needed to counterfait any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlness I beheld Pamela's fayrenesse, still looking on Mopsa, but thinking on Pamela; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but Mopsa: to Mopsa my attendance was directed: to Mopsa the best fruitez I coulde gather were brought: to Mopsa it seemed still that mine eye conveyed my tongue. So that Mopsa was my saying; Mopsa was my singing; Mopsa, (that is onely suiteable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, setting forth both in sluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, she the blessing of mine eyes, she the ouerthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my ouer-throwe; she the sweetnesse of my harte, euen sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon me. In summe, what soever I thought of Pamela, that I saide of Mopsa; whereby as I gatte my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing lest I should winne the Princesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanely soever she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of Mopsaes worthinesse, she perceiued well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tel (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne loue, and estate, finding Mopsa (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with Pamela, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of clowdy fancies, tooke a harpe, and songe this songe.

Since so mine eyes are subject to your sight,
That in your sight they fixed haue my braine:
Since so my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;

Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want;
Since so your liuing image liues in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant;
How can you him vnworthy then decree,
In whose chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the midst with grieuous sighes, which ouertooke euery verse I sange, I let fall my harpe fro [m] me; & casting my eie sometime vpon Mopsa, but setting my sight principally vpon Pamela, And is it the onely fortune most bewtiful Mopsa (said I) of wretched Dorus, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of cruelty against me? Alas excellent Mopsa, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subiect, and the heauenly Sunne disdaines not to giue light to the smallest worme. O Mopsa, Mopsa, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteruaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet vniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that al these are but orname[n]ts of that diuine sparke within you, which being dese[n]ded from heauen could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercyfulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule deuoted to those perfections. Mopsa (who already had had a certaine smackring towardes me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most com[m]only with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you iest with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the euer-pleasing Pamela (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe Mopsa to her parte) was co[n]tent to urge a little further of me. Maister Dorus (said the faire Pamela) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require Mopsa to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers seruaunt; since she is not worthy to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staied a good while after her words, in hope she would haue continued her speech (so great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body) I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebellious handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you haue a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue
to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnvolle hart; shall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted vp to such a height, be counted base? O let not an excellent spirit doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthiness, since the weakest mist is not easilier drijuen away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gratious Pamela) but that the loue you beare to Mopsa, hath brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and that consideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But euen that then (you must confesse) you haue receiued of her, and so are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to presse any further, till you bring something of your owne wherby to claime it. And truely Dorus, I must in Mopsaes behalfe say thus much to you, that if her beauties haue so ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your harte more set vpon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said Mopsa, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the policie that I had vsed, had at lest wise procured thus much happinesse vnto me, as that I might euen in my Ladies presence, discouer the sore which had deeply festered within me, and that she could better conceaue my reasons applied to Mopsa, then she would haue vouchsafed them, whilst her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, using this fit occasion of Pameleas wit, and Mopsaes ignorance. Therfore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon Pamela, as if I had rather bene co[n]demned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to Mopsa, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire Mopsa (said I) well doo I finde by the wise knitting together of your answere, that any disputatio[n] I can vse is asmuch too weake, as I vnworthy. I find my loue shalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a vessell in who so high thoughts should be engraued. Yet since the Loue I beare you, hath so ioyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one can[n]ot depart, but that th'other will follow, before I seeke to obey you in making my last passage, let me know which is my vnworthines, either of mind, estate, or both? Mopsa was about to say, in neither; for her hart I thinke tu[m]bled with ouer much kindnesse, when Pamela with a more fauourable countenance the [n] before (finding how apt I was to fall into dispaire) told me, I might therein haue answered my selfe; for besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of Mopsaes perfectio[n]s had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deserued great allowance. But Dorus (sayd she) you must be so farre maister of your loue, as to consider, that since the judgement of the world stands vpon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to haue regardfull eie to
mens judgements, it is not for vs to play the philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise prince would be cou[n]ted wisdome, in vs wil be taken for a light-grounded affectio[n]: so is not one thing, one, done by diuers persons. There is no man in a burning feuer feeles so great contentme[n]t in cold water greedily receiued (which assoone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronouced words; & newly, & more viole[n]ty againe enflamed, assoone as she had closed vp her delightfull speach, with no lesse wel graced silence. But reme[m]bring in my self that aswell the Souldier dieth which standeth still, as he that giues the brauest onset: & seeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel witnessing how deeply my soule was possessed, & with the most submissiue behauior, that a thrall'd hart could expresse, eue [n]as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at le[n]gth spake to this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princesse (said I) & do not then your owne sweet words sufficie[n]ly testifie, that there was neuer ma[n] could haue a iuster actio[n] against filthy fortune, the I, since all other things being granted me, her blindnesse is my onely let? O heauely God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to discerne my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured Lady, if my miserable speeches haue not already cloied you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch become not hatefull in your eyes; let me reply thus much further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a storie, which happened in this same country long since (for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like vpon him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a mightie Princesse. Pamela gratiously harkened, and I told my tale in this sort.

CHAP. 3.

Dorus—his tale of his owne 1 education, 2 trauaile, 3 enamoring,
   4 meta-morphosing, 5 sauing from sea, 6 and being Musido-
   rus. 7 His octaue. 8 Pamela and Mopsas answere to his suit.
   9 His present to them; 10 and perplexitie in himselfe.

In the countrie of Thessalia, (alas why name I that accursed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I must) in Thessalia (I say) there was (well may I say, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, who bondage wholly possessed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named Musidorus. O Musidorus, Musidorus; but to what serue exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the sounde? This Musidorus, being yet in the tendrest age, his worthy father
paid to nature (with a violent death) her last dueties, leaving his childe to the faith of his friends, and the proofe of time: death gaue him not such pangs as the foresight-full care hee had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could haue seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sons miseries, which his knowledge could neither haue preuented, nor relieued. The young Musidorus (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, depriv'd of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselves for a greater mischiefe) lull'd vp in as much good luck, as the heed-full loue of his dolefull mother, and the florishing estate of his country could breed vnto him.

But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I thinke there was a conspiracy in all heauenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in foretime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowhead life, desiring the same her subiectes did, for the increase of her sonnes worthinesse. And here-to did Musidorus owne vertue (see how vertue can be a minister to mischiefe) sufficiently prouoke him: for indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likenesse of our mishaps makes me presume to patterne my selfe vnto him) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this togethier, was his vnclle the king of Macedon; who hauing lately before gotte[n] such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought vp togethier, to auoid the warres, with Musidorus) and for Musidorus himselfe, that his ioy might be the more full, hauing such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, till Pamela shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfie the king, tooke their way by sea, towards Thrace, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to succour him: he being at that time before Bizantium with a mighty Army beseeging it; where at that time his court was. But when the conspired heauens had gotten this Subiect of their wrath vpon so fit a place as the sea was, they streight began to breath out in boystrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Nauie, he onely with the Prince his cosin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would haue guided them. O cruell winds in your vnconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful mishaps fell to the young Prince of Macedon his cosen, I should too much fill your eares with
strange horrors; neither will I stay vpon those laborsome adue[n]tures, nor loathsome misaduentures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speach hastneth it self to come to the ful-point of Musidorus his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestile[n]t diseases do gather into themselves al the infirmitie, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace in the extremitie of it self all his former misciefes.

Arcadia, Arcadia was the place prepared to be the stage of his endlesse overthrow. Arcadia was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for euer should be enchaunted. For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heauenly beauty hath to throw it downe to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the Arcadian Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed so all his hopes of ioy, and ioyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleue, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they ca[n] be vnderstood; no outward utterance can command a conceipt. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captiued wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he cloathed himselfe in a shepheards weede, that vnder the basenesse of that forme, he might at lest haue free accesse to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate vp his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this estate is not alwayes to be reiecte, since vnder that vaile there may be hidden things to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast vp his eyes to the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this time buried. Pardon theryfore, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my dolorous tale, since if I be vnderstood, I haue said enough, for the defence of my basenesse; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their owne workemanship.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse might iudge that he ment himselfe, who spake so feelingly; her aunswere was both strange, and in some respect comfortable. For would you thinke it? she hath heard heretofore of vs both, by meanes of the valiant prince Plangus, and particularly of our casting away: which she (following my owne stile) thus delicately brought forth. You haue told (said she) Dorus, a prettie tale; but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the prince Musidorus with his cose
Pyrocles did both perish upon the coast of Laconia; as a noble gentleman, called Plangus (who was well acquainted with the historic) did assure my father. O how that speach of hers did poure ioyes in my hart? ô blessed name (thought I) of mine, since thou hast bene in that toong, and passed through those lips, though I can neuer hope to approch them. As for Pyrocles (said I) I will not denie it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspition might arise of your being, then your selfe would haue it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, since I onely said, I would not deny it. But for Musidorus (said I) I perceiue indeed you haue neither heard or read the story of that vnhappy Prince; for this was the verie obiection, which that peerelesse Princess did make vnto him, whe[n] he sought to appeare such as he was before her wisdome: and thus as I haue read it faire written in the certaintie of my knowledge he might answeare her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a treason was perished, and therfore that Plangus might easily be deceaued: but that he himselfe was cast vpon the coast of Laconia, where he was taken vp by a couple of shepheards, who liued in those dayes famous; for that both louing one faire maide, they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was song before you by the shepheard Lamon, and brought by them to a noble-mans house, neere Mantinea, whose sonne had a little before his mariage, bene taken prisoner, and by the helpe of this Prince, Musidorus (though naming himselfe by another name) was deliuered. Now these circumlocutions I did use, because of the one side I knewe the Princess would knowe well the parties I merit; and of the other, if I should haue named Strephon, Claius, Kalander, and Clitophon, perhappes it would haue rubd some conjecture into the heauie heade of Mistresse Mopsa. And therfore (said I) most diuine Lady, he iustly was to argue against such suspitions; that the Prince might easily by those parties be satisfied, that vpon that wrack such a one was taken vp: and therefore that Plangus might well erre, who knew not of anies taking vp againe: that he that was so preserued, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two since Plangus knew to be Musidorus and Pyrocles, he must needes be one of them, although (as I said) vpon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needes iudge, that no lesse then a Prince durst undertake such an enterprise, which (though he might gette the fauour of the Princesse) he could neuer defend with lesse the[n] a Princes power, against the force of Arcadia. Lastly, (said he) for a certaine demonstration, he presumed to shew vnto the Princesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare Mopsa: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may ascertaine her selfe, that I am Menalcas brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into Thessalia, secretly to be aduertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly
that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince *Musidorus*. Doo you not know further (saide she, with a setled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for euen here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke vpon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind of sheckeard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and sang these few verses.

**MY sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serue:**

*Their pasture is faire hilles of fruitlesse Loue:*

*On barren sweetes they feede, and feeding sterue:*

*I waile their lotte, but will not other proue.*

**My sheepehooke is wanne hope, which all vpholdes:**

*My weeds, Desire, cut out in endlesse foldes.*

*What wooll my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they liue,*

*In you it is, you must the judgement giue.*

And then, partly to bring *Mopsa* againe to the matter (lest she should too much take heed to our discourses) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answeres, I kneede downe to the Princesse, and humblie besought her to moue *Mopsa* in my behalfe, that she would vnarme her hart of that steely resistace against the sweet blowes of Loue: that since all her parts were decked with some particular orname[n]t; her face with beautie, her head with wisdome, her eyes with maiestie, her countenance with gracefulnes, her lippes with louelines, her tongue with victorie; that she woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

*Pamela*, without shew either of fauour or disdaine, either of heeding or neglecling what I had said, turned her speech to *Mopsa*, and with such a voice and action, as might shewe she spake of a matter which little did concerne her. Take heede to your selfe (saide she) *Mopsa*, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely, if he doo fully proue himselfe such as he saith, I mean, the honest shepheard *Menalchas* his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde thinke scorne of him. *Mopsa* though (in my conscience) she were euen then farre spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my queint speeches, she would keepe her honestie close inough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she would steppe neuer a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole word him selfe, no she would not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me, she threwe such a prospect vpon me, as might well haue giuen a surfet to any weake louers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that driuels speeches among my noble thoughts? but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a ful knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.
Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from vs, I tooke aiewell, made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to Mopsa, but bending to Pamela: The word about it was, By force, not choice; and still kneeling, besought the Princesse that she would vouchsafe to give it Mopsa, and with the blessednes of her hande to make acceptable vnto her that toye which I had founde, followinge of late an acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (sayd I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-share lighted vpon a great stone: we puld that vp, & so found both that, and some other prety thinges which we had deuided betwixt vs.

Mopsa was benummed with ioy when the Princesse gaue it her: but in the Princesse I could finde no apprehension of what I either said or did, but with a calme carelesnesse letting each thing slide, iustly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any way belong vnto vs) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her naturall maiestic, is of all others most terrible vnto me: for yet if I found she contemned me, I would desperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to ouercome it; if she onely misdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I woulde bring sufficient assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and either with infinitenes of desert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if nothing would serue, then I would giue her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell quietnes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to fauour; gratious, but gratious still after one maner; all her courtesies hauing this engrauen in them, that what is done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties; euer keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayses, nor curses, will spare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heauenlines of hers, (for how so euer my miserable is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach vnto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyrannic of despaire, not knowing any way of perswasio[n], where wisdome seems to be vnsensible. I haue appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a deuice I vsed with my master, perswading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparrel I had prouided, and so practise some thing on horsback before Pamela, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at Athens: my horse indeed was it I had left at Menalca's house, and Dametas got one by friendship out of the Princes stable. But how soeuer I show, I am no base bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get fome.

CHAP. 4.

1 Basilius his hauking. 2 Gynecias hurte by Dametas ouer-turning her coache. 3 Her ielousie ouer Zelmane. Philo-cleas 4 loue-passions, 5 vowe of chastitie, 6 reuocation; 7 lamentation.
Vt as Dorus was about to tell further, Dametas (who came whistling, & counting upon his fingers, how many load of hay his seventeen fat oxen eat up in a yeare) desired Zelmane from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said Dorus, taking his leave) the sum is this, that you may well find you have beate your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may well make your sorrow stonger. But Zelmane turning her speach to Dametas, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I have often conference with your seruaunt. In sooth (answered Dametas with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may prove wel enough, if he ouersoon thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make Zelmane find she might haue spe[n]t her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne ouerall the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore Zelmane yeelded her eares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answere, till they came to Basilius, and Gynecia, who atte[n]ded for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. Basilius and Gynecia sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to Philoclea. Zelmane was moued in her minde, to haue kissed their feete for the fauour of so blessed a seate: for the narrownesse of the coach made them joine from the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch wherof though it were barred by their enuious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an iuorie boxe, will thorow the boxe send forth his imbraced vertue to a beloued needle: so this imparadised neighbourhhood made Zelmanes soule cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuory case of her body, and the apparell which did ouer-clowd it. All the bloud of Zelmanes body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastely put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetnes of the beloued guest; her hart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but striuing violently (if it had bene possible) to haue leapt into the lappe of Philoclea. But Dametas, euen then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a little proud in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of Arcadia, draue the coach (the couer whereof was made with such joints, that as they might (to avoid the weather) pull it vp close when they listed, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horsebacke) till vpon the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Yeomen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe vnto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule ouer a riuier. But the sporte which for that daie Basilius
would principallie shewe to Zelmane, was the mountie at a Hearne, which
getting vp on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height,
(as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to flie
thorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to giue example
to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should show: whe[n] a
ierfaulcon was cast of after her, who streight spying where the pray was,
fixing her eie with desire, & guiding her wing by her eie, vsed no more stre[n]
gth then industry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his
stayre vpright, but winding almost the ful co[m]passe about, that the steepnes
be the more vnsensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursued chase, went
circkling, & co[m]passing about, rising so with the lesse sence of rising; &
yet finding that way scantly serue the greedines of her hast, as an ambitious
body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he
desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite out
another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, she
would either beate with cruell assaults the Heron, who now was driuen to the
best defence of force, since flight would not serue; or els clasping with him,
come downe together, to be parted by the ouerpartiall beholders.

Diuers of which flights Basilius shewing to Zelmane, thus was the
richesse of the time spent, and the day deceassed before it was thought
of, till night like a degenerating successour made his departure the better
remembred. And therefore (so constrained) they willed Dametas to driue
homeward, who (halfe sleeping, halfe musing about the mending of a vine-
presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele comming ouer a great stub of
a tree, it ouerturned the coach. Which though it fell violently vpon the side
where Zelmane & Gynecia sat, yet for Zelmanes part, she would haue bene
glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of Philoclea, but
that she feared she might receaue some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor
any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach,
sauing Gynecia, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her shoulder put out
of ioinct; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well
againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching
his ordinary companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine them both
in her bedde.

But neither was the feuer of such impatient heate, as the inwarde
plague-sore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the
jealousie she conceaue of her daughter Philoclea, lest this time of her
sicknesse might giue apt occasion to Zelmane whom she misdoubted.
Therefore she called Philoclea to her, and though it were late in the night,
commaundd her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and send Miso to her,
with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister Pamela. The meane
while Gynecia kepte Zelmane with her, because she would be sure, she
should be out of the lodge, before she licenced Zelmane. Philoclea not skild
in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then
full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete Philoclea) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which hauing caused in others, thou didst feele in thy selfe.

The sweete minded Philoclea was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill serueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an vnsotted simplicitie, then many, who rather cunningly seeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselves the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heauenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; so now the Ladie Philoclea (whose eyes and senses had receaued nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required; which fro[m] the tender youth had obediently liued vnder her parents behests, without framing out of her own wil the fore-chosing of any thing) whe[n] now she came to appoint, wherin her iudgeme[n]t was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his first toke[n]s, she was like a yong faune, who coming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that Zelmane had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heed-full attention; her coming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conversatio[n]; her wit & behauiour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, joined with the extreme shewes she made of most deuout honouring Philoclea, (carying thus in one person the only two ba[n]ds of good will, louelines & louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most frie[n]dly affectio[n]; which when it had gotten so ful possession of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no message fro[m] her senses, without that affection were the interpreter; the[n] straigh grew an exceeding delight stil to be with her, with an vn-measurable liking of al that Zelmane did: maters being so turned in her, that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while Zelmane was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was Zelmanes. The followed that most natural effect of co[n]forming ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be her selfe such an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation vpon so much an esteemed authentic: so that the next degree was to marke all Zelmanes dooings, speeches, and fashions, and to take them into herselfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminaltie of Passions, but agreed vnto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it self (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a
diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thorowly obserued. Then grew
on that not onely she did imitate the sobernes of her countenance, the
gracefulness of her speech, but euen their particular gestures: so that as
Zelmane did often eye her, she would often eye Zelmane; & as Zelmanes eyes
would deliuer a submissee, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as
yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answere in like pearcing
kindnesse of a looke. Zelmane as much as Gynecias iealousie would suffer,
desired to be neere Philoclea; Philoclea, as much as Gynecias iealousie
would suffer, desired to be neere Zelmane. If Zelmane tooke her hand, and
softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee
mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnes) shew she was loth to part from it. And
if Zelmane sighed, she would sigh also; whe[n] Zelmane was sad, she deemed
it wisdome, and therefore she would be sad too. Zelmanes languishing cou
[n]tenace with crost armes, and sometimes cast-vp eyes, she thought to haue
an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same
countenance: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not
onely the band, but the seruice; not only the signe, but the passion signified.
For whether it were, that her wit in continuance did finde, that Zelmanes
friendship was full of impatient desire, hauing more the[n] ordinarie limits, &
therfore she was content to second Zelmane, though her selfe knew not the
limits; or that in truth, true-loue (well considered) haue an infectiue power. At
last she fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wishing. First she would
wish, that they two might liue all their liues together, like two of Dianas
Nimphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there
would be more Nimphes besides them, who also would haue their part in
Zelmane. The[n] would she wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural
band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered,
that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be
robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or
Zelmane a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them.
But when that wish had once displaied his ensigne in her minde, then
followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine
battaile of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not.
Then dreames by night beganne to bring more vnto her, then she durst wish
by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image
of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they
are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are
almost impossible to be cured: so the sweete Philoclea, while she might
preuent it, she did not feele it, now she felt it, when it was past preuenting;
like a riuier, no rampiers being built against it, till alreadie it haue overflowed.
For now indeed, Loue puld of his maske, and shewed his face vnto her, and
told her plainly, that shee was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint
her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie
coulor was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time,
perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of paleness; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne proofe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more jealous her mother was, the more she thought the iewell precious, which was with so many lookes garded. But that prevailing so far, as to keepe the two louers from priuate conference, then began she to feel the sweetnesse of a louers solitarinesse, when freely with words and gestures, as if Zelmane were present, she might giue passage to her thoughts, and so as it were utter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull gestures and vncertaine paces, she did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood ; where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set togethier, as with the shade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of deuotion to looke vpon it. But true thoughts of loue banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade beguiled Phœbus of looking vpon her: There had she enioyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the Silvan gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before Zelmanes comming, had written these words vpon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspition her captiuitie made her thinke she liued in. The writing was this.

Y ou liuing powres enclosed in stately shrine  
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield  
Your scepters here, if to your eares diuine 
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yeld:
    This vowe receaue, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;
    My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.

Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present 
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth showe 
My tempred hart; by thee my promise sent 
Vnto my selfe let after-liuers know.
    No fancy mine, nor others wronge suspect
    Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.
O Chastitie, the chiefe of heauenly lightes,
Which makst vs most immortall shape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, establish thou my sprights:
To onely thee my constant course I beare.
Till spotlesse soule vnto thy bosome flye,
Such life to leade, such death I vow to dye.

But now that her memorie serued as an accuser of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the toppes together, as they might seeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly stone, which serued as an altar in that wooddie deuotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaued, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which neuer receiuedst spot but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she haue chaunged since. Enioy, enioy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would haue adioyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

My words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde,
This marble chase, as of like temper knowne:
But loe, my words defaste, my fancies blinde,
Blots to the stone, shame to my selfe I finde:
And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with constant marble stone.

My words full weake, the marble full of might;
My words in store, the marble all alone;
My words blache inke, the marble kindly white
My words vnseeene, the marble still in sight,
May witnesse beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.

But seeing she could not see meanes to ioyne as the this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire length vnder one of the trees) for a while she did nothing but turne vp and downe, as if she had hoped to turne away the fancie that mastred her, and hid her face, as if she could haue hidden her selfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whispring note to her selfe; O me vnfortunate wretch (said she)
what poysenous heates be these, which thus torment me? How hath the sight of this strange guest inuaded my soule? Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what strength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing betweene her sight and the moone, O Diana (said she) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as easily passe away, as you will quickly overcome this let; or els that you were for euer thus darkned, to serue for an excuse of my outragious folly. Then looking to the starres, which had perfittly as then beautified the cleere skie: My pare[n]ts (said she) haue told me, that in these faire heauenly bodies, there are great hidde[n] deities, which haue their working in the ebbing & flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars) iudge rightly of me, & if I haue with wicked inte[n]t made my selfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle lustes I framed my harte fit for such an impression, then let this plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made odious to womankind. But if extreame and vnresistable violence haue oppressed me, who will euer do any of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot helpe me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish obiections (simple Philoclea) it is the impossibilitie that dooth torment me: for, vnlawfull desires are punished after the effect of enioying; but vnpossible desires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times vnhappie that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth loue; in me despaire should be the bellowes of my affection: and of all despaires the most miserable, which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most couetous man longs not to get riches out of a grou[n]d which neuer can beare any thing; Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heauen; Why? because it is impossible. Alas then, Loue, why doost thou in thy beautifull sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What doo I, sillie wench, knowe what Loue hath prepared for me ? Doo I not see my mother, as well, at lest as furiouslie as my selfe, loue Zelmane? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible, or els impossible loues neede not misbecome me. And doo I not see Zelmane (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdome and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to loue me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes depose it to be true; what then? and if she can loue poore me, shall I thinke scorne to loue such a woman as Zelmane? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou louest me, excellent Zelmane, and I loue thee: and with that, embrasing the very grounde whereon she lay, she said to her selfe (for euen to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my Zelmane, gouerne and direct me; for I am wholly giuen ouer vnto thee.

CHAP. 5.
The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela. 2 Pamela's narration of her shepheardes making loue, 3 of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe, 4 of his hote pursueit, and her colde acceptance. 5 His letter. 6 Her relenting, 7 and Philocleas sole complaint.

In this depth of muzes, and diuers sorts of discourses, would she haue rauingly remained, but that Dametas and Miso (who were rounde about to seeke her, vnderstanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; Dametas saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or saue a chicken from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And Miso swearing that if it were her daughter Mopsa, she woulde giue her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But their iangling made Philoclea rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed Miso to waite vpon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serue her-selfe) she went alone vp to Pamelas chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and ioy her thoughts with the sweet conuersation of her beloued sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost ouer the back of it, & looking vpon a wax-ca[n]dle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronk vp the teares of her eyes, leauing in steed of them, crimsen circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which Philoclea finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But Pamela, rather seeming sore that she had perceiveid so much, then willing to open any further, O my Pamela (said Philoclea) who are to me a sister in nature, a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our cou[n]trey, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your fauour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you loue your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I shall not loue a sadde Pamela, so well as a ioyfull? Or be my eares vnwoorthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and seruant Philoclea? These wordes wanne no further of Pamela, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impouerished their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of Venus; and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements; with sweet, though cold kisses; it
might seeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreshe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But Philoclea earnestly againe intreated Pamela to open her griefe; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete Philoclea, let vs talke of some other thing: & tell me whether you did euer see any thing so ameded as our Pastoral sports be, since that Dorus came hether? O Loue, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? Philoclea had straight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (said she) I haue often wondred to my selfe how such excelle[n]cies could be in so meane a person; but belike Fortune was afraide to lay her treasures, where they should be staind with so many perfections: onely I marvaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare gifts vnder such a block as Dametas. Ah (said Pamela) if you knew the cause: but no more doo I neither; and to say the truth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while Dametas reades his rusticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger hansome for his oxen, when to vse the goade, & when the voice: givng him rules of a heardma[n], though he prete[n]ded to make him a shepheard) to see all the while with what a grace (which seemes to set a crowne vpon his base estate) he can descend to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serues this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my Pamela (said Philoclea) I haue caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disiointed speeches: you loue, dissemble no further. It is true (said Pamela) now you haue it; and with lesse adoo should, if my hart could haue thought those words suteable for my mouth. But indeed (my Philoclea) take heed: for I thinke vertue itself is no armour of proofe against affection. Therfore learne by my example. Alas thought Philoclea to her selfe, your sheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then Pamela being once set in the streame of her Loue, went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, & so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & euer kept from it (as wel because she shund it, seing and disdaining his mind, as because of her iealous iaylours) he had at length vsed the finest pollicie that might be in counterfaiting loue to Mopsa, & saying to Mopsa what soeuer he would haue her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore Mopsa beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shal know my teares come not, neither of repe[n]tance nor misery, who thinke you, is my Dorus fallen out to be? euen the Prince
Musidorus, famous over all Asia, for his heroic enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the stranger Plangus told my father; he not being drowned (as Plangus thought) though his cousin Pyrocles indeed perished.

Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or seen his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his love was, you would have matched in yourself (those two rarely matched together) pitié and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to do virtuously) can I without the detestable staine of vngratefulnesse abstaine from loving him, who (far exceeding the beautifullnesse of his shape with the beautifullnesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become Dametas seruaunt for my sake?

you will say, but how know I him to be Musidorus, since the handmaid of wisdome is slow belief? That consideration did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receive belief, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assurance: and that haue I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of comon sense, but by sufficient demonstrations.

Lastly he would haue me send to Thessalia: but truly I am not now in mind to do my honorable Loue so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, ye & detest him. For every day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

A few daies since, he & Dametas had furnished theselues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see Dametas, like rich Tissew furd with lambe skins? But ô how well it did with Dorus, to see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me on horseback, making maestic wait vpon humblenes? how at the first, standing stil with his eies bent vpo[n] me, as though his motio[n]s were chained to my looke, he so staide till I caused Mopsa bid him doo something vpon his horse: which no sooner said, but (with a kinde rather of quick gesture, then shew of violent) you might see him come towards me, beating the ground in so due time, as no daunce can observe better measure.

If you remember the ship we saw once, when the Sea went hie vpon the coast of Argos; so went the beast: But he (as if Centaurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was no more moued, then one is with the going of his owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both spurres and wandye, they seemed rather markes of soueraintie, then instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with most pleasing grace) comma[n]ding without threaten, & rather reme[m]bring then chastising, at lest if sometimes he did, it was so stolen, as neyther our eyes could discerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did co[m]plaine of it, he euer going so iust with the horse, either forth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hand somthing gently stir, but indeed so
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

The Countess Pembroke's Arcadia.

The sporte was to see Dametas, how he was tost from the sadle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giving his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before he had euer said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as braue a courtier as the best, so now brused with proofe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisedome, to put himselfe vnder the tuition of a beast; so as Dorus was fayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at lest my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, then descending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at lest (if they were diuers motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed Dametas found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

But how delightfull soeuer it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppresse it, or at lest to conceal it. Indeed I must confesse, as some Physitions haue tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not inwardly; so truly the colde ashes layed vpon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my brest swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often haue the teares, I draue backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore Dorus? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) coulde carry vnto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one inuention he would appeare vnto me to testifie his loue. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexteritie?) I thinke to make me see, that he had bene brought vp in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play Priamus while he plaide Paris. Thinke (sweet Philoclea) what a Priamus we had: but truely, my Paris was a Paris, and more then a Paris: who while in a sauage apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made louse to Oenone, you might wel see by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felte the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet Philoclea) did you euer see such a shepheard? tell me,
did you ever hear of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or unworthy assault have conquered me. Truly I would hate my life, if I thought vanity led me. But since my parents deal so cruelly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my own judgement. Yet hitherto have my looks been as I told you, which continuing after many of these his fruitless trials, have wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that word she laid her hand upon her quaking side) I do not a little fear him. See what a letter this is (then drew she the curtain and took the letter from under the pillow) which to day (with an afflicted humbleness) he delivered me, pretending before Mopsa, that I should read it vnto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomach; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

Most blessed paper, which shalt kiss that had, where to all blessedness is in nature a servant, do not yet disdain to carry with thee the woful words of a miser now despairing: neither be afraid to appeare before her, bearing the base title of the sender. For no sooner shal that divine hand touch thee, but that thy basenesse shall be turned to most high preferment. Therefore mourn boldly my Inke; for while she lookes vpon you, your blacknes wil shine: cri out boldly my Lametatio[n]; for while she reads you, your cries wil be musicke. Say then (O happy messenger of a most unhappy message) that the too soon borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe, vnto her heauenly highnesse) onely presumes to desire thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and in this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much vnto her sacred judgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the onely admiration, you that being armed by Loue, defie him that armed you, in this high estate wherein you haue placed me, yet let me remember him to whom I am bound for bringing me to your presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how mean so ever it be) it is reason you haue an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his grave, and will you suffer a temple (how poorly-built soeuer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be rased? But he dyeth: it is most true, he dyeth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complain: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dies, because in wofull language all his senses tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the most ruined Dorus, but his ende? Ende then, euill destined Dorus, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it suffiseth her wisedome to know, that her heauenly will be accomplished.

O my Philoclea, is he a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene, when with trembling hand he had deliuered it, how hee went away, as
if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to his sepulcher. Two times I must confesse I was about to take curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him euer since hath put me into such perplexitetie, as now you found me. Ah my Pamela (said Philoclea) leaue sorrow. The riuers of your teares will soone loose his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to stitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-grieued mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in Pamelaes faire weeping eyes.

Which when Philoclea found, wringing her hands, O me (said she) indeed the onely subiect of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more vnfortunate, then my sisters greatest vnfortunatenesse. Alas shee weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weepe because I can neuer be happie; her teares flow from pittie, mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare Pamela, I do not enuy thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

1 The Ladies vprising, 2 and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus. 3 His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies, 4 his entry on a most corrupt estate, 5 and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions. 6 His, and Dorilaus crosse-mariage to ech others sister, having by ech a sonne; their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.

Vt the darkenesse of sorrow ouershadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselues vnder the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked fro[m] dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent vnto. For then they were called vp by Miso; who hauing bene with Gynecia, had receiued commandement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let Zelnane and Philoclea hauue any priuate co[n]ferece, but that she should be present to heare what passed. But Miso hauing now her authentic encreased, came with skowling eyes to deliuer a slauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexion, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would haue made a handkerchifie by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence
answered her entertainement, and obeying her direction, couered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as Pamela was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of Dorus giuing a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to Mopsa, and willed her to fetch Dorus to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further judgement of him, before she would moue Dametas to graunt her in mariage vnto him. Mopsa (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with Dorus to Pamela, who entended both by speaking with him to giue some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which although fame had alreadie deliuered vnto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to haue it from so beloued an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition iealous, even ouer it selfe, suffred her not to enter abruptlie into questions of Musidorus (whom she was halfe ashamed she did loue so well, and more then halfe sorie she could loue no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of Pyrocles, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (said she) you told me the last day, that Plangus was deceaued in that he affirmed the Prince Musidorus was drowned: but withall, you confessed his cosen Pyrocles perished; of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of who[m] al me expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceaued. Most excellent Ladie (said Dorus) no expectatio[n] in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, the [n] to be thought worthy to be praised by your judgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no meanes get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you (leauing your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subiect of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of shape most louely, and yet of mind more louely; valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete Pyrocles, excellent Pyrocles, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequethed to him that euer must haue thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might haue found some more gratious acceptation? with that he imprisoned his looke for a while vpon Mopsa, who thereupon fell into a verie wide smiling. Truely (said Pamela) Dorus I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as Pyrocles was. Who shootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall neuer hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shoote higher, then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you Dorus (said she) tell me (since I perceau ye are well acquainted with that storie) what Prince was that Euarchus father to Pyrocles, of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then so
descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for
that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and losse: and therein
you may (if you list) say something of that same Musidorus his cosen,
because, they going together, the story of Pyrocles (which I onely desire) may
be the better vnderstood.

Incomparable Lady (said he) your commandement doth not onely giue me
the wil, but the power to obey you, such
influence hath your excellencie. And first, for that famous King
Euarchus, he was (at this time you speake off) King of Macedon, a
kingdome, which in elder time had such a soueraintie ouer all the
provinces of Greece, that euenn the particular kings therin did acknowledge
(with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as
among the rest, even this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of
Arcadia. But he, whe[n] he came to his crowne, finding by his later ancestors
either negligence, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those duties had
bin intermitted, would never stirre vp old titles (how apparant soeuer)
whereby the publike peace (with the losse of mane not guiltie soules) should
be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heauens
had placed him, shewed no lesse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despising,
then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the
earth hath since borne enow bleeding witnesses, that it was no want of true
courage. Whom as he was most wise to see what was best, and most iust in
the perfourming what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any
way contrary: so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and
contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull
threatning vpon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse
by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loued greatnesse, it was, because
therein he might exercise his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the
more goodly by a graue maiestie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward
graces; strong of body, and so much the stronger, as he by a well disciplined
exercise taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie
yeares when his Nephew Musidorus tooke on such shepherdish apparell for
the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whose father &
grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his
estate, when he came to age (which allowed his authentic) so disioynted
euen in the noblest & strongest lims of gouernmet, that the name of a
King was growne euennodious to the people, his autoriuty hauing bin
abused by those great Lords, & little kings: who[m] in those beutweene-times
of rainging (by vniust fauouring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing
them that woulde defende their libertie against them had brought in (by a
more felt then seene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of Oligarchic; that
is, whe[n] men are gouerned in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to
know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they hauing the
power of kings, but not the nature of kings, used the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a year they shall goe out: making the Kings sword strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loued: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serve to undermine the Royall soveraintie. For the Subjectes could taste no sweeter fruites of having a King, then grievous taxations to serve vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to preuent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priviledged place of vnbridled licentiousnes, then as a biding of him, who as a father, should give a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very dissolution of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer satisfied) grew factious among themselves: and the vnderlings, glad indeede to be vnderlings to them they hated lest, to preserve them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, lest their shining should discover the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nuisled in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformation; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els, by the custome of selfe-guiltie euill, glad to change though oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and so townes decayed for want of iust and naturall libertie; offices, euen of iudging soules, solde; publique defences neglected; and in summe, (lest too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the most wrie course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

In this, and a much worse plight then it is fitte to trouble your excellent eares withal, did the King Euarchus finde his estate, when he tooke vpon him the regiment: which by reason of the long streame of abuse, he was forced to establish by some euenu extreme seueritie, not so much for the very faultes themselues, (which he rather sought to preuent then to punish) as for the faultie ones; who strong, euen in their faultes, scorned his youth, and could not learne to disgist, that the man which they so long had vsed to maske their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundred a duetie into the subjectes hartes, he soone shewed, no basenes of suspition, nor the basest basenes of enuie, could any whit rule such a Ruler. But then shined foorth indeede all loue among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by iustice, did make that loue most louely; his first & principall care being to appeare vnto hi people, such as he would haue them be, & to be such as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his actions arising out of his deedes. So that within small time, he wanne a singular loue in his people, and engraffed singular confidence. For how could they chuse but loue him, whom they found so truely to loue the[m]? He euuen in reason disdayning, that they that haue charge of beastes, should loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that
was to goure the most excellent creature, should not loue so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to builde vpon false grounds of gouernment) make themselues (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their estate goes hiest when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselues most Kingses, when the subiect is most basely subiected: he contrariwise, vertuouslie and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof him-selfe was the head; euen so cared for them, as he woulde for his owne limmes: neuer restrayning their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousncs, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not imploied to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, broght that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. In summe (peelesse Princesse) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of gouernement, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sorte he flourished in the sweete comforthe of doing much good, when by an action of leauing his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of iustice.

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (lest I should too easilie fall to partiall prayses of her) of whom it may be iustly said, that she was no vnfit bra[n]ch to the noble stock wherof she came. Her he had giuen in manage to Dorilaus, Prince of Thessalia, not so much to make a fre[n]dship, as to co[n]firm the fre[n]dship betwixt their posteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, Dorilaus could neede no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who hath not heard (said Pamela) of the valia[n], wise, and iust Dorilaus, whose vnripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares fro[m] vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to speak of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable friendshippe (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was obserued to the last, of those two excellent men. But (said she) goe on I pray you. Dorilaus (said he) hauing maried his sister, had his manage in short time blest (for so are folke woont to say, how vnhappie soeuer the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named Musidorus: of whom I must needes first speake before I come to Pyrocles; because as he was borne first, so vpon his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was Musidorus made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that childe; whether the heauens at that time listed to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as euen at times to borow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly, so did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (euen descending to particularities, what kingdomes he should ouercome) that the King of Phrygia
(who ouer-superstitiously thought him selfe touched in the matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: because a skilful man (hauing compared his natiuity with the child) so told him. Foolish ma[n], either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it were a worke of the superiour powers, the heauens at length are neuer children. But so he did, & by the aid of the Kings of Lydia and Crete (joining together their armies) inuaded Thessalia, & brought Dorilaus to some behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother Euarchus came so mightily to his succour, that with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a just war, the best child, peace. In which time Euarchus made a crosse mariage also with Dorilaus his sister, & shortly left her with child of the famous Pyrocles, druen to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of Thrace, & his brother, King of Pannonia, had inuaded. The successe of those warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your eares, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to come vnto. But there was Dorilaus (valiantly requiting his frie[n]ds helpe) in a great battaile depreiued of his life, his obseques being no more sole[m]ised by the teares of his partakers, the[n] the bloud of his enimies; with so pearcing a sorrow to the constant hart of Euarchus, that the newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of comfort, although al the comfort that might be in a child, truth it selfe in him forthwith deliuered. For what fortune onely southsayers foretold of Musidorus, that all men might see prognosticated in Pyrocles; both Heauens & Earth giuing toke[n]s of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfectio[n] in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely loue was threatned, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and hauen of their best yeares. But as death may haue preuented Pyrocles, so vnworthinesse must be the death to Musidorus.

CHAP. 7.

1 The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus. 2 Their friend-ship, 3 nauigation, 4 and first shipwracke. 5 The straunge gratitude of two brothers to them, vpon their liber dulie to those two brothers.

Vt the mother of Pyrocles (shortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cause that Euarchus recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & those euil neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that Pyrocles taught admiration to the
hardest conceits: *Musidorus* (per-chaunce because among his subiectes) exceedingly beloued: and by the good order of *Euarchus* (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought vp, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in the[m], were so blowne to giue forth their uttermost heate that iustly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew the [m]. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receaue co[n]ceits not vnworthy of the best speakers: excellent deuises being vsed, to make euen their sports profitable; images of batailes, & fortificatio[n]s being then deliuered to their memory, which after, their stronger iudgemen[ts] might dispins, the delight of tales being co[n]uerted to the knowledge of al the stories of worthy Princes, both to moue them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Gramatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffering, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; & in sum, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no seruile feare vsed towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but stil as to Princes: so that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannic: Nature hauing done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builde.

Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aspire vnto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that *Musidorus* being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past ouer the humour of such contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reuere[n]ce ful of loue to *Musidorus*, & *Musidorus* had a delight full of loue in *Pyrocles*. *Musidorus*, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was so glad to learne of none, as of *Musidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to sixtene yeares of age, he seemed so to ouerrun his age in growth, strength, and al things following it, that not *Musidorus*, no nor any man liuing (I think) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliuer that strength more nimbly, or become the deliuerie more gracefully, or employ al more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull, but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subiect.

At which time vnderstanding that the King *Euarchus*, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all *Pannonia*, and almost *Thrace*, had now brought the co[n]clusion of al to the siege of *Bizantium* (to the raising of which siege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practise of those vertues, which they before
learned. And therefore the mother of *Musidorus* nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to the[m] both) the rather that they might helpe her beloued brother, they brake of all delayes; which *Musidorus* for his parte thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would neuer seeke the aduentures of armes, vntil he might go with him: which hauing fast bou[n]d his hart (a true slaue to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding him able euery way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themselves, and not onely bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themselues to the Sea, leauing the shore of *Thessalia* full of teares and vowes: and were receiued thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as if *Neptune* had as then learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a seruaunt, wayting behind them so iust, that they might fill the sailes as they listed; and the best saylers shewing themselues lesse couetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which so well could obey their maisters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies, some two or three of them would striue, who could (either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the advaantageous building of their moouing houses) leaue their fellowes behind them in the honour of speed: while the two Princes had leasure to see the practise of that, which before they had learned by booke: to consider the arte of catching the winde prisoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and vse can so well agree together, that of all the trinckets, where with they are attired, there is not one but serues to some necessary purpose. And (ô Lord) to see the admirable power & noble effects of Loue, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beauty (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing vnto it, and (like a vertuous mistresse) not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring forth the noblest deeds, that the children of the Earth can boast of. And so the Princes delighting their co[n]ceats with co[n]firming their knowledge, seing wherein the Sea-discipline differed from Land-servuice, they had for a day & almost a whole night, as pleasing entertainement, as the falsest hart could giue to him he meanes worst to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilden shewe of a good meaning, there arose euen with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inck powred into water) had blacked ouer all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mournefull stage for a Tragedie to be plaied on. For forthwith the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest instruments of commaundement; and blowing whole
stormes of hayle and raine vpon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they coulde almost bethinke themselves of chaunge. For then the traiterous Sea began to swell in pride against the afflicted Nauie, vnder which (while the heauen fauoured them) it had layne so calmly, making mountaines of it selfe, ouer which the tossed and tottering ship shoulde clime, to be streight carried downe againe to a pit of hellish darkenesse; with such cruell blowes against the sides of the shippe (that which way soeuer it went, was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay, nor way to escape. And shortly had it so disseuered the louing companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that most of them neuer met againe, but were swallowed vp in his neuer-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne) after long wandring returned into Thessalia; other recouered Bizantium, and serued Euarchus in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all industrie to saue themselues, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as if it would preuent the nights comming, vsurped the dayes right: which (accompanied sometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyses of the chafing winds) made the masters and pilots so astonished, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the sea straue with the winds which should be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastful noise to them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing those powers for enimies. Certainely there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdomes. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terriblenesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutio[n] of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euer before it, doth still vex the minde, euen when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with striking sailes to yeelde to be gouerned by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the fearefullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting their handes to euerie most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselues the best, and yet not to despise the worst. But so were they carried by the tyrannic of the winde, and the treason of the sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glass, then by the day cleerenes) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe euer was painted, lest the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driuen vpon a rocke: which hidden with those outrageous waues, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruel mind, till with an vnbeleeued violence
(but to them that haue tried it) the shippe ranne vpon it; and seeming willinger to perish then to haue her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diuerse manner of minds in distresse: some sate vpon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie begotten of manie roaring vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not preuented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes vsing the passions of fearing euill, and desiring to escape, onely to serue the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones selfe, lept to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, rioted with more likelyhood to doo seruice, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne seruants of theirs; and streight they foure were carryed out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the peece they were on sinking by little and little vnder them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was Leucippus, the younger Nelsus) shewed themselues right faithfull and gratefull seruants vnto them; gratefull (I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of Phrygia made vpon Thessalia, in the time of Musidorus his infancie; and hauing beeene solde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene these Realmes) could not be deliuered, because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found meanes both by selling all the iewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so much treasure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde of the boord, committing themselues to the seas rage, & euen when they went to dye, themselues praying for the Princes liues. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moued the Princes hartes as the tendernesse of that louting part, farre from glorie, hauing so few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, since themselues were sure to perish.

CHAP. 8.
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

1 Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia led prisoner to the King. 3 That suspicious tyrant naturalized. His intent to kill Pyrocles. 5 Musidorus--his escape from sea, and offer to dye for his friend. 6 Their contention for death. 7 Preparation for Musidorus execution. 8 His strange deliverie by Pyrocles, 9 and a sodaine mutinie. 10 Their killing the bad King, 11 and creating a better.

Vt now of all the royal Nauie they had left but one piece of one ship, whereon they kept themselves in all truth, having enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and counselling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were carried by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceedingly swiftly) Musidorus seeing (as he thought) Pyrocles not well vpon the board, as he would with his right hand haue helped him on better, he had no sooner vnfastned his hold, but that a waue forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But Pyrocles (then carelesse of death, if it had come by any meanes, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euen in it selfe to be vnto him.

For being cast on land much brused & beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and euen almost deadly tired with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walking vp to discover some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came straight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diverse places along the coast: who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence, to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuitie (though with much more busines then those vnder-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which he (vnused to such entertainment) did shortlie and plainly aunswere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But that no sooner knewne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for mischiese, not from mischiese) he was sent to the Kings court, which as then was not aboue a dayes iourney off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne serviceable diligence in discovering so great a personage; adding with all more then was true of his coniectures, because he would endeare his
owne seruice.

This country whereon he fell was Phrygia, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly sad, euer musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, because his minde had no eye to espie goodnesse: and therefore accusing Sycophantes, of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming Sycophantes, because of no euill they said, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing vnto him, but such as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofes of his wisedome: fearefull and neuer secure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any possibilitie of euent. A tode-like retyrednesse, and closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse of poyson, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discouered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous. But after that yeares beganne to come on with some, though more seldome shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of Musidorus destinie came to his eares (deliuered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardest interpretation, as though his subiectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gaue he himselfe indeede to the full currant of his disposition, espetially after the warre of Thessalia, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his vnsuccessings proceeded of their vnwillingnes to haue him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned, (knowing no countermine against contempt, but terror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault, without sharpe punishment: & when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it selfe seruiceable, so were there enow of those desperate ambitious, who would builde their houses vpon others ruines, which after shoulde fall by like practises. So as seruitude came mainly vpon that poore people, whose deedes were not onely punished, but words corrected, and euen thoughts by some meane or other puld out of the[m]: while suspitio[n] bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie stirred a new cause of suspition. And in this plight (ful of watch-full fearefulnes) did the storme deliuer sweete Pyrocles to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenaunce deserued both pitie and admiration) condemning theselues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloudy King knew what he was, and in what order he and his cosin Musidorus (so much of him feared) were come out of Thessalia, assuredly thinking (because euer thinking the worst) that those forces were provided against him; glad of the perishing (as he thought) of Musidorus, determined in publique sort to put Pyrocles to death. For hauing quite loste the way of noblenes, he straue to
clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking to make all men adread, to make such one an enemie, who would not spare, nor feare to kill so great a Prince; and lastly, hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend, thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemie. The day was appointed, and all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemne an order, as if they would set forth tyrany in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of invincible valour, yet so vniustly subjected to such outrageous wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanure so consta[n]tly, abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the greatest hope of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was preuented by a rare example of friendshipe in Musidorus: who being almost drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdome of Pontus; and being there, and understanding the full discourse (as Fame was very prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case Pyrocles was; learning withall, that his hate was farre more to him then to Pyrocles, he founde meanes to acquaint him selfe with a nobl-man of that Countrie, to whom largely discouering what he was, he found him a most fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-man had bene one, who in many warres had serued Euarchus, and had bene so mind-striken by the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subiect) he even profeste himselfe his seruaunt. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe Musidorus in a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of Phrygia vnderstande, that if he would deliuer Pyrocles, Musidorus woulde willingly put him selfe into his handes: knowing well, that how thirstie so euer he was of Pyrocles bloud, he woulde rather drinke that of Musidorus. The Nobleman was loath to preserue one by the losse of another, but time vrging resolution: the importunitie of Musidorus (who shewed a minde not to ouer-liue Pyrocles) with the affection he bare to Euarchus, so preuayled, that he carried this strange offer of Musidorus, which by that Tyrant was greedelie accepted.

And so vpon securitie of both sides, they were enterchanged. Where I may not omitte that worke of friendshipe in Pyrocles, who both in speache and cou[n]tenance to Musidorus, well shewed, that he thought himselfe injured, and not releueed by him: asking him, what he had euer seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as well as any man? and why he shoulde enuie him the glorie of suffering death for his friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession? But in this notable contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and safetie the punishment of the conquered) Musidorus preuayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the vnuste King, that wisht none well, to them worse then others, and to him worste of all: and as chearefully going towards, as Pyrocles went frowardly from-warde his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inouogh sure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one, whom he had
begun to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most feared enemie was fallen) and withal cut of such hopes from his suspected subjectes (when they should knowe certainly he was dead) with much more skilful cruelty, and horrible solemnitie he caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannic. And so the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done such service to Pyrocles, this strange encouter he had.

The excelling Pyrocles was no sooner deliuered by the kings servantes to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what wouldnot they bring to passe?) how ether to deliuer Musidorus, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent, suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (euen he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest bloud that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be seruant to the executioner that should put to death Musidorus: a farre notabler proofe of his friendship, considering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being ayled fit for such an estate, & hauing his beautie hidden by many foule spots he artificially put vpon his face, gaue him leave not onely to weare a sworde himselfe, but to beare his sworde prepared for the iustified murther. And so Pyrocles taking his time, when Musidorus was vpon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest, as allowed to say something) he stept vnto him, & putting the sworde into his hande not bound (a point of ciuility the officers vsed towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) Musidorus (said he) die nobly. In truth, neuer ma[n] betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after co[n]sidering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw Pyrocles, so neare me. But with that Dorus blushed, and Pamela smiled: and Dorus the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of him selfe to vse the third person. But Musidorus turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (said he) when they were with sworodes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making that a preseruation in not hoping to be preserued, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst the all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the scaffolde to annoy them. Wherein Pyrocles (the excellent Pyrocles) did such wonders beyond believe, as was hable to leade Musidorus to courage, though
he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, iust rage & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sorte of the beholders began to be almost superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not ashamed, the worlde should behold him a beholder) co[m]maunded his garde, and the rest of his souldiers to hasten their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were stil fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (co[m]mauded to go vp after his fellowes against the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more woud[n]ed in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him vpon the face, reuiling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight reuenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers; which seene, and not vnderstood by the people (vsed to feares but not vsed to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason; and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set vpon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such thinges often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was slaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the brauest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie ; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, set vpon the garde, and souldiers as chiefe instruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none of them aliue, nor any other in the cittie, who they thought had in any sorte set his hand to the worke of their seruitude, and (God knowes) by the blindnesse of rage, killing many guiltles personas, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) preuailed with the rest to make Musidorus their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp, Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his, neere had, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppresse this mutinie. But now they had run themselues too farre out of breath, to go backe againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to forget such an injury; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute to obey Musidorus. Who seing
what forces were in the citie, with them issued against the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practises might be used to disseuer them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to preuaile by time, (knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where him selfe was slaine by Musidorus, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of great courage & beautie, but fostred in bloud by his naughty Father) slaine by the hand of Pyrocles. This victory obteined, with great, and truly not undeserved honour to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gaue the crowne and all other markes of soueraigntie to Musidorus; desiring nothing more, then to liue vnnder such a gouernment, as they promised theseulues of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnes to giue a kingdome, then get a kingdome; vnderstanding that there was left of the bloud Roiall, & next to the succession, an aged Gentleman of approved goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power, but danger fro[m] him, and odiousnes for him) hauing past his time in modest secrecy, & asmuch from entermedling in matters of gouernment, as the greatnesse of his bloud would suffer him, did (after hauing receiued the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the noble-man: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure the people (with asmuch assurace as worldly matters beare) that not onely that gouernour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the gouernment, should be no way apt to decline to Tyrany.

CHAP. 9.

1 The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus. 2 Incostancy, 3 and enuie purtraied in the King & his Counsellor. 4 The aduancement & ouerthrow by them of those two brothers. 5 The reuenge thereof by the two Princes. 6 The cruelties of two reuengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes, 7 Their honours, and their honourable mindes.

His dooing set forth no lesse his magnifice[nc]e, then the other act did his magnanimitie: so that greatly praised of all, and iustly beloued of the newe King, who in all both wordes and behauiour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge those two serva[n]ts of theirs, of whose memorable faith, I told you (most excelle[n]t Princesse) in willingly giuing themselues to be drowned for their sakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull swimming vpon a rocke: fro[m] whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine lande of Pontus; the same cou[n]try on which
Musidorus also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspicion, greedines, or vnreue[n]gefulnes, as he of Phrygia, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choise of friends, or rather neuer hauing a frie[n]d, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearable, he could not otherwise rid himself, the[n] by killing the[m]: giuing somtimes prodigally, not because he loued them to whom he gaue, but because he lusted to giue: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at first for those vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like judgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.

He chau[n]ced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to haue next in vse about him, a ma[n] of the most enuious dispositio[n], that (I think) euer infected the aire with his breath: whose eies could not looke right vpon any happie ma[n], nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praise: co[n]trary to the natures of al other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his vnhappinesse, & good newes the argume[n]t of his sorrow: in sum, a man whose fauour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull seruants of theirs came in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at first to fauour them; and the King vnderstanding of their aduenture, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith vnto their Lordes) suddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praysing him selfe in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when advauncement (the most mortall offence to enuy) stirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occasion vpon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of Phrygia destroied by their two Lordes, who hauing bene a neere kinsman to this Prince of Pontus, by this enuious Councellour, partly with suspition of practise, partly with glory of in-part reue[n]ging his cousins death, the King was suddainly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in prison, as seruaunts to his enimies, whom before he had neuer knowne, nor (til that time one of his own subiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of. But now earnest in euery present humour, and making himselfe braue in his liking, he was content to giue them iust cause of offence, when they had power to make iust reuenge. Yet did the Princes send vnto him before they entred into war, desiring their seruants liberty. But he swelling in thier hu[m]blenes, (like a bubble swollen vp with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or neuer knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be striken off, by the aduice of his enuious Councellor (who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the happines in
hauing such, and so fortunate masters) and sent them with vnroyall reproches to Musidorus and Pyrocles, as if they had done traiterously, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall Cousen.

But that iniurie went beyond all degree of reconcilement; so that they making forces in Phrygia (a kingdome wholly at their commandement, by the loue of the people, and gratefulnesse of the King) they entred his country; and wholly conquering it (with such deeds as at lest Fame said were excellent) tooke the King; and by Musidorus commaundement (Pyrocles hart more enclined to pitie) he was slaine vpon the tombe of their two true Servuants; which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserue their deade liues. For his wicked Servant he should haue felt the like, or worse, but that his harte brake euen to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There might Pyrocles quietly haue enjoyed that crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well esteemed Ladie) looking for nothing more, then to be oppressed with her brothers ruines, gaue her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gouerning vertue, they did (in that kingdome and some other neere about) diuers afts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruell monsters, & monstrous men: all which in short time by priuate combats they deliuered the countries of.

Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatnesse & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept them[eslues in a castle seated vpon the top of a rocke, impregnable, because there was no comming vnto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while serued the King of Pontus, and in all his affaires (especially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they had shewed, as vnconquer[ed] courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprightly dealt with; rather impatient of iniury, then delighted with more then ordinary curtesies; and in iniuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly jewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that vnworthy Prince, after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more evident to them; because it sodainly fell from an excess of fauor, which (many examples hauing taught them) neuer stopt his race till it came to an headlong ouerthrow: they full of rage, retyred themselues vnto this castle. Where thinking nothing iuster the[n] reuenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward brauery and fiercenes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self
faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gave themselves to make all
the country about them (subject to that King) to smart for their Lords folly:
not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they
were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And
with use of evil, growing more and more evil, they took delight in
slaughter, and pleasing themselves in making others wracke the effect of their
power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a
serviceable power of the minde to doo publike good; so now vnbridled, and
blinde judge of it selfe, it made wickednesses violent, and praised it selfe in
excellencie of mischiefe; almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly
regarded by their carelesse and louelesse king. Till now these Princes finding
them so fleshed in crueltie, as not to be reclaimed, secreatly undertooke the
matter alone: for accompanied they would not have suffered them to have
mounted; and so those great fellowes scornfully receiuing them, as foolish
birds falne into their net, it pleased the eternall iustice to make the suffer
death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the sauers of
that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the numbers of wel-
deuised honors done vnto them: But as high honor
is not onely gotten and borne by paine, and daunger, but must be nurst
by the like, or els vanisheth as soone as it appeares to the world; so the
naturall hunger thereof (which was in Pyrocles) suffered him not to
account a resting seate of that, which euer either riseth, or falleth, but still to
make one action beget another; whereby his doings might send his praise to
others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his spirite. And
therefore having well established those kingdomes, under good governours,
and rid them by their valure of such giants and monsters, as before time
armies were not able to subdue, they determined in vknowne order to see
more of the world, & to imploy those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good
of mankinde; and therefore would themselves (vnderstanding that the King
Euarchus was passed all the cumber of his warres) goe priuately to seeke
exercises of their vertue; thinking it not so worthy, to be brought to heroycall
effects by fortune, or necessitie (like Ulysses and Aeneas) as by ones owne
choice, and working. And so went they away from verie vnwilling people to
leaue them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honour,
and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely
were they out of the confines of Pontus, but that as they ridde alone armed,
(for alone they went, one serving the other) they mette an adventure; which
though not so notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be
remembred for the vnused examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes,
as of wretched vngratefulnesse.

CHAP. 10.
The pitifull state, and storie of the Paph[la]gonian vnkinde King, and his kind sonne, first related by the son, then by the blind father. 4 The three Princes assaulted by Plexirtus and his traine: 5 assisted by their King of Pontus and his troupes. 6 Plexirtus succoured and saued by two brothers, that vertuously loued a most vicious man. 7 Beseeged by the new King, 8 he submitteth, & is pardon. 9 The two Princes depart to aide the Queene of Lycia.

T was in the kingdome of Galacia, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that neuer any winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: so that the Princes were euen compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it vnto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputation which made them steppe out; yet in such sort, as they might see vnseene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extremely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both these seemed to appeare a kind of noblenesse, not sutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well Leonatus (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to lead me to that which should end my griefe, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but miserie; feare not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (answered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I haue power to doo you seruice, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groned, as if sorrow strauue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse vpbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiousnes) I see well you are straungers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must be miserable. In deede our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our selues so knowne as may stirre pittie.
But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not ouer-runne hate. And if it
did, in truth our state is soncke below the degree of feare.

This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of
Paphlagonia, by the hard-harted
vngratefulnes of a sonne of his, deprivied, not onely of his kingdome
(whereof no forraine forces were ever able to spoyle him) but of his
sight, the riches which Nature grau[nt]s to the poorest creatures.
Whereby, & by other his vnnatural dealings, he hath bin driuen to such
griefe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this
rocke, thece to cast himselfe headlong to death: and so would haue made me
(who receiued my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble
Gentlemen (said he) if either of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull
affection is engraffed in a sonses hart, let me intreate you to conuey this
afflicted Prince to some place of rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie actes
it shall be none of the least, that a King, of such might and fame, and so
vniustely oppressed, is in any sort by you relieued.

But before they could make him answere, his father began to speake, Ah
my sonne (said he) how euill an Historian are
you, that leave out thechiefe knotte of all the discourse? my wickednes,
my wickednes. And if thou doest it to spare my eares, (the onely sense
nowe left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou dost mistake
me. And I take witnesse of that Sunne which you see (with that he cast vp his
blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light,) and wish my selfe in worse case
then I do wish my selfe, which is as euill as may be, if I speake vntruely; that
nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame.
Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I wish that it may
not proue ominous foretoke[n] of misfortune to haue mette with such a miser
as I am) that whatsoeuer my sonne (ô God, that trueth binds me to reproch
him with the name of my sonne) hath said, is true. But besides those truths,
this also is true, that haveing had in lawful manage, of a mother fitte to beare
royall children, this sonne (such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe
by my shorte declaration) and so enjoyed the expectations in the world of
him, till he was growe[n] to iustifie their expectations (so as I needed enuie
no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue an other ones-selfe
after me) I was caried by a bastarde sonne of mine (if at least I be bounde to
beleue the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to
mislike, then to hate, lastly to destroy, to doo my best to destroy, this sonne (I
thinke you thinke) vndeseruing destruction. What waies he vsed to bring me
to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much
poysouous hypocrisie, desperate fraude, smoothe malice, hidden ambition, &
smiling enuie, as in any liuing person could be harborde. But I list it not, no
remembrance, (no, of naughtines) delights me, but mine own; & me thinks,
the accusing his trainses might in some manner excuse my fault, which
certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gaue order to some
servants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forrest, & there to kill him.

But those theeues (better natured to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorely: which he did, giuing himselfe to be a priuate souldier, in a countrie here by. But as he was redy to be greatly aduaunced for some noble peeces of seruice which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (drone in my affection to that vnlawfull and vnnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my self so to be gouerned by him, that all fauors and punishments passed by him, all offices, and places of importance, distributed to his favourites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid vpon me) threw me out of my seat, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, neither imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feele my miserie; miserie indeed, if euer there were any; full of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so vniust meanes, as vniustlie he kept it, by force of stranger souldiers in Cittadels, the nestes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; disarming all his own countrimen, that no man durst shew himself a wel-willer of mine: to say the trueth (I think) few of the being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my vnkinde bastard:) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparks of vnstained duety lefte in them towards me, yet durst they not shewe it, scarcely with giuing me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenaunce of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came hether to doo this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my vnspeakable griefe; not onely because his kindnes is a glasse eu[n]to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that aboue all griefes, it greeues me he should desperatly aduenture the losse of his soul-deseruing life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deserts, as if he would cary mudde in a chest of christall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much soeuer (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slippe any aduantage to make away him, whose iust title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a neuer secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craued of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient vnto me. And now Gentlemen, you haue the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischieuous proceedinges may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of
you, which my sonne denies me: for neuer was there more pity in sauing any, then in ending me; both because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you preserve this excellent young man, who els wilfully folowes his owne ruine.

The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expressed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came therewith fortie horse, onely of purpose to murder this brother; of whose comming he had soone aduertisement, and thought no eyes of suffiicient credite in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selfe to be actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commaunded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sword) how falsely soeuer he was dealt with by others, would not betray him selfe: but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* were quickly become parties (so iust a defence deseruing as much as old friendship) and so did behaue them among that co[m]panie (more injurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their liues for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last preuailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made so) had not come vnlooked for to their succour. Who (hauing had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently vpon some great daunger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most deereely loued) was come in all hast, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundreth horses in that countrie, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had ben so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, & worse gotten honour should haue tumbled together to destructio[n]; had there not come in *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, with fortie or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought vp from their infancie with *Plexirtus*: men of such provwesse, as not to know feare in themselues, and yet to teach it others that should deale with them: for they had often made their liues triumph ouer most terrible daungers; neuer dismayed, and euer fortunate; and truely no more setled in their valure, then disposed to goodnesse and iustice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could haue learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of vertue. But bringing vp (rather then choise) hauing first knit their minds vnto him, (indeed craftie inough, eyther to hide his faultes, or neuer to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to
satisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: so as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not counsellors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this sodaine going out, with so small a company, in a country full of euil-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him; till they found him in such case as they were to venture their liues, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may justly say, Pyrocles & Musidorus had neuer till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the feates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they overcame not; yet were they not overcome, but caried away that vngratefull maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoever the Princes laboured to the contrary of the Princes so to leaue it; but in all hast making forces both in Pontus and Phrygia, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him but only that one strong place where he was. For feare hauing bene the onely knot that had fastned his people vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they all scattered from him; like so many birdes, whose cage had bene broken.

In which season the blind King (hauing in the chief cittie of his Realme, set the crowne vpo[n] his sonne Leonatus head) with many teares (both of ioy and sorrow) setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sonne to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become subiect) eue[n] in a moment died, as it should seeme: his hart broken with vnkindnes & affliction, stretched so farre beyond his limits with this exceess of co[m] fort, as it was able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new King (hauing no lesse louingly performed all duties to him dead, then aliue) pursued on the siege of his vnnatural brother, asmuch for the reuenge of his father, as for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those two brothers, then whom the Princes neuer found in all their trauell two men of greater habilitie to performe, nor of habler skill for conduct.

But Plexirtus finding, that if nothing els, famin would at last bring him to destruction[n], thought better by hu[m]blenes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainlye so had nature formed him, & the exercise of craft conformed him to all turnings of sleights, that though no ma[n] had lesse goodnes in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence argume[n]ts might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man felt lesse pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie: no ma[n] more impude[n]t to deny, where proofes were not manifest; no man more ready to confesse with a repenting maner of aggrauating his owne euil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that hauing gotten a pasport for one (that pretended he would put Plexirtus aliue into his hads) to speak with the King his brother,
he him selfe (though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in braue defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of Leonatus. Where what submission he vsed, how cunningly in making greater the faulete he made the faultines the lesse, how artificially he could set out the torments of his owne co[n]science, with the burdensome comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed to liue, he begd life, in the refusing it, I am not cunning inough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first sight Leonatus saw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amedment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednes, now betraied by the author thereof,) were deliuered to many cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the defence of an vnremediable mischieffe already co[m]mitted, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left these reco[n]ciled brothers (Plexirtus in all his behauior carying him in far lower degree of seruice, then the euer-noble nature of Leonatus would suffer him) & taking likewise their leaues of their good friend the King of Pontus (who returned to enjoy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they priately went thence, hauing onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs acco[m]pاني them, through diuers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though lesse famous, because they were but priuat chiualries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene Erona of Lycia, besieged by the puissant King of Armenia, they bent themselues to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Ladie,) & partly because they heard the King of Armenia had in his company three of the most famous men liuing, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince Plangus, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerlesse Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) Barzanes and Euardes, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie, was reposed. And of them, those two brothers Tydeus and Telenor (sufficient iudges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had euen a youthfull longing to haue some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into Lycia they ioyned the[m]selues with them that faithfully serued the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and ere long animated in such sort their almost ouerthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieue the towne, though they were deprivued of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister, Plexirtus: who (willingly hoodwinking themselves from seeing his faultes, and binding themselves to beleuue what
he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of
injustice. But now they were sent for to aduaunce a conquest he was about;
while Pyrocles and Musidorus pursued the deliuerie of the Queene Erona.

CHAP. 11.

1 Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsas waking.
2 The sisters going with Zelmane to wash themselues.
3 The pleasantnes of the riuer. 4 The pleasure Zelmane
had in seeing them, vttered 5 in speach, 6 and song. 7 She
led by a spaniel, to know, and hurte her noble riuall. 8 The
parting of that fraye.

I

Haue heard (said Pamela) that parte of the story of
Plangus whe[n] he passed through this country:
therfore you may (if you list) passe ouer that warre
of Eronaes quarrell, lest if you speake too much of
warre matters, you should wake Mopsa, which might
happily breed a great broile. He looked, and saw that
Mopsa indeed sat swallowing of sleepe with ope mouth, making such a noise
withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge.
Whereupon, willing to vse that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humble-
hartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) diuine
Lady, who haue wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of
the basest) to thinke all principalities base, in respect of the sheephooke,
which may hold him vp in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct
words my humble sute, while this drago[n] sleepes, that keepes the golden
fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination
faine to my selfe any thing which may be the lest spot to that heauenly vertue,
which shines in all your doings; I pray the eternal powers, that the words I
speak may be deadly poysons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my
hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne
confusion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, seeke onely that
fauour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which can[n]ot misbecome
your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue said further, but Pamela calling
aloud Mopsa, she sodainly start vp, staggering, and rubbing her eies, ran first
out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out,
or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe,
she asked Pamela, why she had called her. For nothing (said Pamela) but that
you might heare some tales of your servants telling: and therefore now (said
she) Dorus go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to
the story of himselfe, Philoclea came in, &
by and by after her, Miso; so as for that time they were faine to let Dorus
depart. But *Pamela* (delighted euen to preserue in her memory, the words of so wel a beloued speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner being come and gone, to recreate themselves something; (euen tyred with the noysomnes of *Misos* conversacion) they determyned to goe (while the heate of the day lasted) to bath themselves (such being the maner of the Arcadian nymphes often to doo) in the riuer of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnnder some shadow. But they could not stir, but that *Miso* with her daughter *Mopsa* was after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, *Zelmane* out of her window espied them, and so stale downe after them: which she might the better doo because that *Gynecia* was sicke, and *Basilius* (that day being his birth-day) according to his maner, was busie about his deuotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to finde some time to speake with *Philoclea*: but not a word could she beginne, but that *Miso* would be one of the audience; so that she was driuen to recommend thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they came to the riuers side; which of all the riuers of *Greece* had the price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in it, was accou[n]ted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon so fine and delicate a ground, as one could not easely iudge, whether the Riuer did more wash the grauell, or the grauel did purifie the Riuer; the Riuer not running forth right, but almost continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the Riuer had a delight to play with it selfe. The banckes of either side seeming armes of the louing earth, that faine would embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nymph which still would stirre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull trees, which resisted the sunnes dartes from ouermuch pearcing the naturall coldnes of the Riuer. There was the

But among the rest a goodly Cypres, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it seemed she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running Riuer. There the Princesses determining to bath themselues, though it was so priuiledged a place, vpon paine of death, as no bodie durst presume to come thither, yet for the more surety, they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe the riuer, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdaining that his smelling force coulde not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; & therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting vp againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the riuer, & shaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cause to vse it) in-weeded himselfe so, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulness: and inuiting *Zelmane* also to wash her selffe with them, and she excusing her selffe with haung taken a late cold, they began by peece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their apparell.
Zelmane would have put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a quivering, that she thought it more wisedome to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while Miso and Mopsa (like a couple of foreswat melters) were getting the pure siluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receaue kisses of the ground, Zelmane enuied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was euen iealous, and when that was taken away too, and that Philoclea remained (for her Zelmane onely marked) like a Dyamond taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient sight, the delight too strong for a stayed conceipt: so that Zelmane could not choose but runne, to touch, embrace, and kisse her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, 

http://darkwing.uoregon.edu/~rbear/arcadia2.html (57 of 166)04-03-2006 14:26:05
grudged, that her eyes should doo more homage, then they, to the Princesse of them. In somuch that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a diuine furie inspired; her voice would in so beloued an occasion second her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes musicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated; her soule the Queene which shoulde be delighted. And so togither went the vtterance and the inuention, that one might iudge, it was Philocleas beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend vtterance. The song was to this purpose.

**What toong can her perfections tell**

*In whose each part all pens may dwell?*

*Her haire fine threads of finest gould*

*In curled knots mans thought to hold:*

*But that her fore-head sayes in me*

*A whiter beautie you may see.*

*Whiter indeed; more white then snow,*

*Which on cold winters face doth grow.*

*That doth present those euen browes,*

*Whose equall line their angles bowes,*

*Like to the Moone when after chaunge*

*Her horned head abroad doth raunge:*

*And arches be to heauenly lids,*

*Whose winke ech bold attempt forbids.*

*For the blacke starres those Spheares containe,*

*The matchlesse paire, euen praise doth staine.*

*No lampe, whose light by Art is got,*

*No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,*

*Can liken them without all peere,*

*Saue one as much as other cleere:*  

*Which onely thus vnhappie be,*

*Because themselues they cannot see.*

*Her cheekes with kindly claret spred.*

*Aurora like new out of bed,*

*Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,*

*Blushing at sight of Phœbus pride.*

*Her nose, her chinne pure iuorie weares:*

*No purer then the pretie eares.*

*So that therein appeares some blood,*

*Like wine and milke that mingled stood*  

*In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,*

*Your eyes may tread a Louers maze.*

*But with such turnses the voice to stray,*
No talke vntaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.
   But who those ruddie lippes can misse?
Which blessed still themselues doo kisse.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roses new,
In worth, in taste, in perfitte hewe:
Which neuer part but that they showe
Of pretious pearle the double rowe,
The second sweetly-fenced warde,
Pier heau'nly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.

Faire vnder these doth stately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.
So good a say invites the eye,
A little downward to espie,
The liuelie clusters of her brests,
Of Venus babe the wanton nests: Like
pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.
With dearest tops of porphyrie.

Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
A way more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leades into the ioyous field,
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies such whose natuie smell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste
Mens liues, vntill it be imbraste.

There may one see, and yet not see
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes fomie face,
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.

In those delights the wandring thought
Might of each side astray be brought,
But that her nauel doth vnite,
In curious circle, busie sight:
A daintie scale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impression lackes.
   Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,
Iustly entitled Cupids hill.
A hill most fitt for such a master,
A spotlesse mine of Alablaster.
Like Alablaster faire and sleeke,
But soft and supple satten like.
In that sweete seate the Boy doth sport:
Loath, I must leaue his chiefe resort.
For such a vse the world hath gotten,
The best things still must be forgotten.
     Yet neuer shall my song omitte
Thighes, for Ouids song more fitt:
Which flanked with two sugred flankes.
Lift vp their stately swelling bankes;
That Albion diues in whitenes passe:
With hanches smooth as looking glasse.
     But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.
The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of loue.
Whose motion makes all graces moue.
Whose bought incau'd doth yeeld such sight,
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
The gartring place with child-like signe,
Shewes easie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the flesh doth rise
In her braue calues, like christall skies.
Whose Atlas is a smallest small,
More white then whitest bone of all.
     Thereout steales out that round cleane foott
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In shewe and sent pale violets,
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.
But back vnto her back, my Muse,
Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,
Along whose ridge such bones are met,
Like comfits round in marchpane set.
     Her shoulders be like two white Doues,
Pearching within square royall rooues,
Which leaded are with siluer skinne,
Passing the hate-sport Ermelin.
And thence those armes deriued are;
The Phœnix wings are not so rare
For faultlesse length, and stainelesse hewe,
     Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
Now course doth leade me to her hand,
Of my first love the fatal band.
Where whiteness doth for ever sit.
Nature her selfe enamelled it.
For there with strange compact dooth lie
Warne snow, moyst pearle, softe iuorie.
There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
Sweete Hands make in that sweete land.
As for the fingers of the hand.
The bludy shaftes of Cupids warre,
With ametists they headed are.

Thus hath each part his beauties part.
But how the Graces duo impart
To all her limmes a spetiall grace,
Becomming every time and place.
Which doth euen beautie beautifie,
And most bewitch the wretched eye.
How all this is but a faire Inne
Of fairer guestes, which dwell within.
Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,
Goodnes the penne, heauen paper is.
The inke immortall fame dooth lends:
As I began, so must I ende.

No tongue can her perfections tell,
In whose each part all tongues may dwell.

But as Zelmane was com[m]ing to the latter end of her song, she might see
the same water-spaniel which before had hu[n]ted, come and fetch away one
of Philocleas gloues ; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie
guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to Zelmane, to see that
the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who
quickly caried it out of sight among certaine trees and bushes, which were
very close together. But by & by he came againe, & amongst the raiments
(Miso and Mopsa being preparing sheets against their comming out) the dog
lighted vpon a little booke of foure or fiue leaues of paper, & was bearing that
away to. But then Zelmane (not knowing what importace it might be of) ran
after the dog, who going streight to those bushes, she might see the dog
deliuer it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily coming in,
the Ge[n]tleman rose vp, & with a courteous (though sad) countenance
presented himselfe vnto her. Zelmanes eies streight willed her mind to marke
him: for she thought, in her life she had neuer seene a ma[n] of a more goodly
presence, in whom strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie
fiercenesse: being indeed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring,
yet shewes she would faine make. But when she had a while (not without
admiration) vewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the gloue & paper, because they were the Ladie Philocleas; telling him withall, that she would not willingly let them know of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing theselues; because she knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my self the punishme[n]t. But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse, not my presumption. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the gloue (said he) since it is my Ladie Philocleas, give me leave to keepe it, since my hart can[n]ot persuade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that I will direct: my life to honour this gloue with serving her. O villain (cried out Zelmane, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (said she) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drew out her sworde, which (Amazon-like) she ever ware about her. The Gentle[n] reture himself into an open place from among the bushes; & the drawing out his too, he offred to deliver it vnto her, saying withall, God forbid I should use my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceiued) you are the same famous Amazon, that both defended my Ladies iust title of beautie against the valiant Phalantus, & saued her life in killing the Lion: therfore I am rather to kiss your hands, with acknowledging my selfe bound to obey you. But this courtesie was worse then a bastonado to Zelmane: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no lesse then his life should answere it. A hard case (said he) to teach my sworde that lesson, which hath euer vsed to turne it self to a shield in a Ladies presence. But Zelmane harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes & thrusts, that Nature & vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet stil courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart,would not be persuadew by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand vpon the best defensiuue gard he could; somtimes going backe, being content in that respect to take on the figure of cowardise; sometime with strong and well-met wards; sometime cunning auoidings of his body; and sometimes faining some blowes, which himself puld backe before they needed to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of Zelmane, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet disposicio[n], determining to kill him if he fought no better; & so redoubling her blowes, draue the stranger to no other shift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate respectes, who standes onely vpon defence, stands vpon no defence: For Zelmane seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall stept backe as he was accustomed, she stopt her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point,
ranne full at his breast; so as he was driuen with the pommell of his sworde (hauing no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne. But Zelmane retiring her sworde, and seeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily sorie, and euen ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could haue done more. In so much that she said, truly I am sorie for your hurt, but your selfe gaue the cause, both in refusing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could haue done. But (saide shee) because I perceaue you disdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinsman of mine, Pyrocles Prince of Macedon, and I giue you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this quarell against you. I would (answered Amphialus) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I loue & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to whom Mopsa (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed & seene Zelmane fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselues, & the water (with some drops) seemed to weepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of Zelmane (assuring themselves that any Arcadian would beare reverence to them) Pamela with a noble mind, and Philoclea with a louing (hastily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to saue Zelmane. But already they found them in talke, & Zelmane careful of his wound. But whe[n] they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous Amphialus; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselues were in such sort retired. But he craued pardon, protesting unto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possest him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, where while the dog hunted in the riuer, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his ouer-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the smart of his owne doings. But Philoclea (that was euen iealous of her self for Zelmane) would needs haue her gloue, and not without so mighty a loure as that face could yeeld. As for Zelmane when she knew, it was Amphialus, Lord Amphialus (said she) I haue lo[n]g desired to know you, heretofore I must confesse with more good will, but still with honoring your vertue, though I loue not your person: & at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, vpon co[n]dition you shal hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shalbe performed betweene vs. Amphialus answered in honorable sort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his loue to Philoclea, & prouoked more hate in Zelmane. But Mopsa had already called
certaine shepheards not far of (who knew & wel obsuerued their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away Amphialus, whose wound suffered him not without daunger to straine it: and so he leauing himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the sheetes, wherwith Philoclea had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and blesse the sword for that fauour.

CHAP.  12.

How Basilius found Plangus: 2 His lamentation. 3 Philoclea entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.

E being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had seene the[m] returned to the lodge-warde: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so pleasing a company, with going to performe a cumbersome obedience, Zelmane inuited them to the little arbour, only reserued for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, Pamela hauing a while made the lute in his la[n]guage, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, Zelmane deliuered vp the paper, which Amphialus had at first yeelded vnto her: and seeing written vpon the backside of it, the complaint of Plangus, remembrance what Dorus had told her, and desiring to know how much Philoclea knew of her estate, she tooke occasion in the presenting of it, to aske whether it were any secret, or no. No truely (answered Philoclea) it is but euen an exercise of my fathers writing, vpon this occasion: He was one day (somwhile before your comming hether) walking abroade, hauing vs two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of Megalopolis, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the propretst and best-graced men that euer I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then vnder a tree, while his seruaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme trauaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hasty he was vpon his iourney: and withall so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, euen groanes, teares, and passionate talking to him selfe, moued my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of griefe, that my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare vnto you. Zelmane willingly opened the leaues, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus.   Basilius.

Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last?
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

What greater ills haue now the heauens in store,
To couple comming harmes with sorrowes past?

Long since my voice is hoarce, and throte is sore,
With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.

Ah where was first that cruell cunning found,
To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruclion bound?

What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
Or wrapt in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?

Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themselves, infected with their cage,
Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.

Like players pla'st to fill a filthy stage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other shewes.
And all but iests, saue onely sorrowes rage.

The child feeles that; the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but serues, to haue true tast of woes.

A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this bodie so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.

So diuers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can neuer be
Made vniforme to any state reposed.

Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see
(Euen like a toppe which nought but whipping moues)
This man, this talking beast, this walking tree.

Griefe is the stone which finest judgement proues:
For who grieues not hath but a blockish braine,
Since cause of grieue no cause from life remoues.

How long wilt thou with monefull musicke staine
The cheerefull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect state maintaine?

Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire
For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.

Shall I that saw Eronaes shining haire
Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
With losse of purest blood themselues to teare?
Shall I that saw those brests, where beauties flow,
Swelling with sighes, made pale with mindes disease,
And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to shew,
Shall I, whose eares her mournefull words did seaze,
Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,
Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?
No, no: Despaire my dayly lesson saith,
And saith, although I seeke my life to flie,
Plangus must liue to see Eronaes death.
Plangus must liue some helpe for her to trie
Though in despaire, so Loue enforceth me;
Plangus doth liue, and must Erona dye? Erona dye?
O heauen (if heauen there be)
Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
Serue all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?
Let doltes in haste some altars faire erect
To those high powers, which idly sit aboue,
And vertue do in greatest need neglect.

O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do moue
To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.
Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do proue.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
Of our selfe-loue (so passions do deceaue)
We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.
To harme vs wormes should that high iustice leaue
His nature? nay, himselfe? for so it is.
What glorie from our losse can he receaue?
But still our dazeled eyes their way do misse,
While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
The kindly way to beate vs to our blisse.
If she must dye, then hath she past the line
Of lothsome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
That doost so well their miseries define?
But such we are with inward tempest blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in waues of will:
We mone that lost, which had we did bemone.

And shall shee dye? shall cruell fier spill
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
Hath she not force euen death with loue to kill?
Nay euen cold Death enflamde with hot desire
Her to enioy, where ioy it selfe is thrall.
Will spoils the earth of his most rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a riuall to vs all.

Basilius

Plan
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whose decay vertues faire shrine must fall.
O Virtue weake, shall death his triumph set
Upon thy spoiles, which neuer should lye waste?
Let Death first dye; be thou his worthy let.
By what eclipse shall that Sonne be defaste?
What myne hath erst throwne downe so faire a tower?
What sacriledge hath such a saint disgra'st?
The world the garden is, she is the flower
That sweetens all the place; she is the guest
Of rarest price, both heau'n and earth her bower.
And shall (ô me) all this in ashes rest?
Alas, if you a Phœnix new will haue
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would saue
Such beames so like his owne, which might haue might
In him, the thoughts of Phëtons damme to graue.
Therefore, alas, you use vile Vulcans spight,
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is all Asias light.
O Mars, for what doth serue thy armed axe?
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?
O Venus (if her praise no enuy frames,
In thy high minde) get her thy husbands grace.
Sweete speaking oft a currish hart reclaimes.
O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,
Her face which was more liuely in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place;
O hand, which toucht her hand when she did part;
O lippes, that kist her hand with my teares sprent;
O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart;
O soule, whose loue in her is onely spent,
What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or loue,
Let all for her, and unto her be bent.

Thy wailing words do much my spirits moue,
They uttered are in such a feeling fashion,
That sorrowes worke against my will I proue.
Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy passion,
And in thy case do glasse mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke most prone to feele compassion.
Yet Reason saith, Reason should haue abilitie,
To hold these worldly things in such proportion,
As let them come or go with euen facilitie.
But our Desires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force vs there to set our chiefe delightfulnes,
Where but a baiting place is all our portion.
But still, although we faile of perfect rightfulnes,
Seeke we to tame the childish superfluities:
Let vs not winke though void of purest sightfulnes.
For what can breed more peeuish incongruities,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let vs some grammar learne of more congruities.

If through mine eares pearce any consolation
By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I cease these hideous exclamations,
While that my soule, she, she liues in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the last worst malediction.
Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,
For any ioy, know fortunes vile displacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with vnlassing her?
Can I forget, from how much mourning plainefulnes
With Diamond in window-glasse she graued,
Erona dye, and end thy ougly painefulnes?
Can I forget in how straunge phrase she craued
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or smother.
As if by death she onely might be saued?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,
But if my memory must thus be thralled
To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,
Can thoughts still thinking so rest vnappalled?

Who still doth seeks against himselfe offences,
What pardon can auail? or who employes him
To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defenses?
Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward griefe, which most destroyes him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled:
Thus be our noblest parts dryed vp with sorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding spilled.
One day layes vp stuffe of griefe for the morrow:
   And whose good haps do leaue him vnprovided,
   Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and shade of good diuided,
   We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
   So are we from our high creation slided.
But Plangus lest I may your sicknesse misse
   Or rubbing hurt the sore, I here doo end.
The asse did hurt when he did thinke to kisse.

When Zelmane had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the speeche of Erona death, and therefore desirous to know further of it, but more desirous to heare Philoclea speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading the Dialogue, since it nether sets foorth what this Plangus is, nor what Erona is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, and him with sorow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to vnderstand the particular discourse thereof: because (I must confesse) some thing in my trauaile I haue heard of this strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered Philoclea) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrie, while he hoped to preuaile something with him in a great request he made vnto him, he was content to open fully vnto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie; which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and first of Erona, (being the chiefe Subiect of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I liste to spende about it) he recounted.

CHAP.  13.

Erona 1 irreligious against Loue, 2 must loue the base Antiphilus, 3 is loued, pursued, and beleaguered by the great Tiридates. 4 The two Greeke Princes ayde her. 5 They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. 6 Eronas hard-choice to redeeme him. 7 Tiridates slaine, Antiphilus deliuered, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, 8 and her hate to them.

F late there raigned a King in Lycia, who had for the blessing of his manage, this onely daughter of his, Erona, a Princesse worthie for her beautie, as much praise, as beautie may be praise-worthy. This Princesse Erona, being 19. yeres of age, seeing the countrie of Lycia so much deuoted to Cupid, as that in
every place his naked pictures & images were superstitiously adored (ether
toued theruto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could
breed wickednes, or the shamefast consideration of such nakednes) procured
so much of her father, as vtterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues
and pictures. Which how terriblie he punished (for to that the Lycians
impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not liued a yeare longer, when she was striken with most
obstinate Loue, to a yong man but of mean
parentage, in her fathers court, named Antophilus: so meane, as that he
was but the sonne of her Nurse, & by that meanes (without other desert)
became known of her. Now so euill could she conceale her fire, and so
wilfully perseeuered she in it, that her father offering her the manage of the
great Tiridates, king of Armenia (who desired her more then the ioyes of
heauen) she for Antophilus sake refused it. Many wayses her father sought to
withdwre her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threateninges; once
hiding Antophilus, & giuing her to vnderstand that he was fled the countrie:
Lastly, making a solemnne execution to be done of another, vnnder the name of
Antophilus, whom he kept in prison. But nether she liked perswasions, nor
f feared threateninges, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him
dead, she sought all meanes (as well by poyson as by knife) to send her soule,
at least, to be maried in the eternall church with him. This so brake the tender
fathers hart, that (leauing things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then
forthwith Erona (being seazed of the crowne, and arming her will with
authentic) sought to aduance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before she could acco[m]plish all the sole[m]nities, she was ouertake
[n] with a war the King Tiridates made vpon
her, only for her person; towards whom (for her ruine) Loue had kindled
his cruel hart; indeed cruell & tyrannous: for (being far too stro[n]g in
the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there
could be found no foile to set foorth the extremitie of his loue, but extremity
of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of his Loue, in the bloud, & tuned the
[m] in the cries of her subiects; although his fair sister Artaxia (who would
acco[m]pany him in the army) sought all meanes to appease his fury: till
lastly, he besieged Erona in her best citie, vowing to winne her, or lose his
life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull consent, or a
ruinous deniall; whe[n] there came thether (following the course which vertue
& Fortune led the[m]) two excellent you[n]g Princes, Pyrocles and
Musidorus, the one Prince of Macedo[n], the other of Thessalia: two princes,
as Pla[n]gus said, (and he witnessed his saying with sighes & teares) the most
accomplished both in body & mind, that the Sun euer lookt vpon. While
Philoclea spake those words, O sweete wordes (thought Zelmane to her self)
which are not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of
that mouth issueth.

[ ]These 2. princes (said Philoclea) aswel to help the weaker (especially
being a Ladie) as to saue a *Greeke* people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest *Lycians*, as woulde venture their liues to succour their Princesse: giuing order by a secreat message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set vpon *Tiridates* campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be ouerthrown: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* hors-men) especially ayded by the two mightie men, *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, rescued the foot-men, euen almost defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

Which when *Tiridates* found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in his retinue, against those two Princes and *Antiphilus*: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his felow: but of whose side the more ouercame, with him the victorie should remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he sawe it like enough, that the people (were of the miseries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they saw him shrinke, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selfe. So it was agreed vpon; and against *Pyrocles* was *Euardes*, King of *Bithinia*; *Barzanes* of *Hircania*, against *Musidorus*, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against *Antiphilus* he placed this same *Plangus*, being his own cousin germain, & sonne to the King of *Iberia*. Now so it fell out that *Musidorus* slewe *Barzanes*, & *Pyrocles Euardes*; which victory those Princes esteemed aboue all that euer they had: but of the other side *Plangus* tooke *Antiphilus* prisoner: vnder which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being ouercome of his side) *Tiridates* continued his war: & to bring *Erona* to a compelled yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne strike of *Antiphilus* head; without his suite in that space were graunted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectio[n]) that if in the meane time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be deuised should be layed vpon *Antiphilus*.

Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyranny of our own thoughts seeme as a God vnto vs. But whatsoeuer it was, then it did set foorth the miserablenes of his effectes: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the loue of him comaundred her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him comaundred him to preserue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that Loue in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doost thou loue Antiphilus, ô Erona, and shal Tiridates enjoy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon Antiphilus, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man haue thee, thou shalt neuer haue more part of Antiphilus the[n] if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affectio[n] shalbe gnawing, & the remorse still present. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt euer loue, and euer lacke. Thinke this beside, if thou marrie Tiridates, Antiphilus is so excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place maried: canst thou suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shall die. But it shalbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him liue to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said he) O Erona, and is thy Loue of Antiphilus come to that point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no ? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but loue of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide Tiridates: this is but loue of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed to looke vpo[n] him afterward; this is but feare of shame, & loue of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy selfe: he shalbe married ; if he be well, why should that grieue thee, but for loue of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, let Antiphilus die. Then the images of each side stood before her vnderstanding; one time she thought she saw Antiphilus dying: an other time she thought Antiphilus saw her by Tiridates enjoyed: twenty times calling for a seruant to carry message of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting, she was pale, whe[n] she reme[m] bred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her ha[n]ds, & tearing her haire, were indiffere[n]t of both sides. Easily she wold haue agreed to haue broken al disputatio[n]s with her owne death, but that the feare of Antiphilus furder torments staied her. At levgth, eue[n] the euening before the day apointed of his death, the determinatio[n] of yeelding preuailed, especially, growing vpo[n] a message of Antiphilus; who with all the coniuring termes he could deuise, besought her to saue his life, vpon any co[n] dition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to Tiridates, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, Pyrocles & Musidorus, & falling downe at their feet, desired the[m] to trie some way for her deliuerance; shewing her selfe resolued, not to ouer-liue Antiphilus, nor yet to yeeld to Tiridates.

They that knew not what she had done in priuate, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it fals out, that what is inco[n]stancy, seemes cu[n]ning; so did this cha[n]ge indeed stand in as
good steed as a witty dissimulatio[n]. For it made the King as reckles, as th
em dilige[n]t: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne, with who[m] she would needs go, either to die her self, or reskew Antiphilus, hauing no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what deuise (though Plangus at large described it) the conclusion was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so preuailed, that Antiphilus was succoured, and the King slaine. Plangus was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedie, co[n]ueied in safety into her country Artaxia, now Queene of Armenia; who with true lame[n]tations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way co[n]fort her in respect of her brothers losse, who she studied all meanes possible to reuenge vpon euery one of the occasioners, hauing (as she thought) ouerthrowne her brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch, that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to any priuate man, and her selfe in mariage to any Prince, that would destroy Pyrocles and Musidorus. But thus was Antiphilus redeemed, and (though against the consent of all her nobility) married to Erona; in which case the two GREEke Princes (being called away by an other aduenture) left them.

CHAP. 14.

1 Philocleas narration broken of by Miso. 2 Her old-wiuues tale, 3 and ballad against Cupid. 4 Their drawing cuts for tales. 5 Mopsas tale of the old cut: 6 cut of by the Ladies to returne to their stories.

Vt now me thinkes as I haue read some Poets, who when I they inte[n]d to tell some horrible matter, they bid men shun the hearing of it: so if I do not desire you to stop your eares fro[m] me, yet may I well desire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treason of Antiphilus, that brought her to this misery; and withall wish you al, that fro[m] al mankind indeed you stop your eares. O most happy were we, if we did set our loues one vpon another. (And as she spake that worde, her cheekes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.) And therefore since I haue named Plangus, I pray you sister (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I haue helde the stage long inough; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done Eronas, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falshood; & so betweene vs both, my Ladie Zelmane shall usnderstand both the cause and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beshrow me then (said Miso) I wil none of that, I promise you, as lo[n]g as I haue the gouernme[n]t, I will first haue my tale, & the[n] my Lady Pamela, my Lady Zelmane, & my daughter Mopsa (for Mopsa was then returned fro[m] Amphialus) may draw cuts, & the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you,
and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil haue first, and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestnesse she looked, hauing threatening not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & Miso (sitting on the grou[n]d with her knees vp, & her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quauering cough, thus discoursed vnto the[m]. I tel you true (said she) whatsoeuer you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennie as good siluer, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hasty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husba[n]d, the[n] Dametas. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of Cupid: here is Cupid, & there is Cupid. I will tell you now, what a good old woma[n] told me, what an old wise ma[n] told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you (said Philoclea) let vs see it, & read it. No hast but good (said Miso) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a seuen and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the streate of our village, but I might heare the young me[n] talke; O the pretie little eies of Miso; O the fine thin lips of Miso; O the goodly fat hands of Miso: besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, & the other cast daiseys at me: I must confesse, seing so many amorous, it made me set vp my peacocks tayle with the hiest. Which when this good old woma[n] perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may the bones rest of the good wold woma[n]) she cald me to her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her, and taking first a soppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the same wine that comes out of Candia, which we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her; Minion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies though I say it) I see a nu[m]ber of lads that loue you; Wel (said she) I say no more: doo you know what Loue is? With that she broght me into a corner, where ther was painted a foule fie[n]d I trow: for he had a paire of horns like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world so placed. This mo[n]ster sat like a ha[n]gman vpo[n] a paire of gallowes, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, & out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a ma[n] & a woma[n], & such a cou[n]tenance he shewed, as if he would perswade folks by those allureme[n]ts to come thither & be hanged. I, like a te[n]der harted wench, skriked out for feare of the diuell. Well (sayd she) this same is euen Loue: therefore do what thou list with all those fellowes, one after another; & it reck not much what they do to thee, so it be in secreat; but vpon my
charge, neuer loue none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come fro[m] the belly of the faire Fenus? for a few dayes before, our (priest betweene him & me) had tolde me the whole storie of Venus. Tush (said she) they are all deceaued: and therewith gaue me this Booke, which she said a great maker of balllets had giuen to an old painter, who for a little pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false Argus his father. And so she gaue me this Booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weepe, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carkasse of sorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her praier booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poore Painters oft with silly Poets ioyne,  
To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:
One brings the stubfe, the other stamps the coine,
Which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.
Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do
A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.
Is he a God, that euer flies the light?
Or naked he, disguis'd in all vntruth?
If he be blind, how hitteth he so right?
How is he young, that tamde old Phœbus youth?
But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:
Some hurt accuse a third with horny head.
No, nothing so; an old false knaue he is
By Argus got on Io, then a cow:
What time for her Iuno her Ioue did misse,
And charge of her to Argus did allow.
Mercury kill'd his false sire for this act,
His damme a beast was pardon'd beastly fact.
With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,
With Ioues disdaine at such a riuals seed,
The wretch compellel a runnagate became,
And learn'd what ill a miser state doth breed,
To lye, faine, gloze, to steale, pry, and accuse,
Naught in himsefl eoch other to abuse.
Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,
A horned head, clouen foote, and thousand eyes,
Some gazing still, some winking wilye shiftes,
With long large eares where neuer rumour dyes.
His horned head doth seeme the heauen to spight:
His clouen foote doth neuer treade aright.
Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,
Cloth'd in the shape which soonest may deceaue:
Thus halfe a beast, ech beastly vice he plants,
In those weake harts that his aduice receaue.

He proules ech place stil in new colours deckt,
Sucking ones ill, another to infect.
To narrow brests he comes all wrapt in gaine:
To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:
To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;
Creeping to ech with flattering of desire.

But for that Loues desire most rules the eyes,
Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lyes.

Millions of yeares this old drieull Cupid liues;
While still more wretch, more wicked he doth proue:
Till now at length that Ioue him office giues,
(At Iunos suite who much did Argus loue)
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all those fooles that will haue all they see.

These Ladies made sport at the description and storie of Cupid. But Zelmane could scarce suffer those blasphemies (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly besought Pamela she would perfourme her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered she, beautifying her face with a sweete smiling, and the sweetnes of her smiling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of disobedience. My gouernesse will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do so: and so perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (answered Zelmane) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But Pamela pleasantly persisting to haue fortune their iudge, they set hands, and Mopsa (though at the first for squeamishnes going vp & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulor of them) gaue her the preheminence: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cause) she thus tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there was a King, the mightiest man in all his country, that had by his wife, the fairest daughter that euer did eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great house, that euery body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was sitting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her head with a combe all of precious stones, there came in a Knight into the court, vpo[n] a goodly horse, one haire of gold, & the other of siluer; and so the Knight casting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into such loue with her, that he grew not worth the bread he
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

eate; till many a sorry day going over his head, with Dayly Diligence and Grisly Grones, he wan her affection, so that they agreed to run away together. And so in May, when all true hartes rejoyce, they stole out of the Castel, without staying so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as they went together, often all to kissing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought up among the water Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were euer askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and therefore charged her upon his blessing, that she neuer aske him what he was, nor whether he would. And so a great while she kept his commandement; til once, passing through a cruel wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not choose but aske him the question. And then, he making the greeuouest co[m]plaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vanisht quite away: & she lay down, casting forth as pitifull cries as any shrich-owle. But haung lain so, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) fiue dayes, & fiue nights, she gat vp and went ouer many a high hil, & many a deepe riuer; till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, & cried to her for helpe: and she for pittie gaue her a Nut, and bad her neuer open her Nut, til she was come to the extremest misery that euer tongue could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & neuer rested the euening, wher she went in the morning; til she came to a second Aunt; and she gaue her another Nut.

Now good Mopsa (said the sweete Philoclea) I pray thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shalbe thine. Mopsa was very glad of the bargaine, especially that it shuld grow a festiual Tale: so that Zelmane, who desired to finde the vtermost what these Ladies vnderstood touching her selfe, and haung vnderstood the danger of Erona (of which before she had neuer heard) purposing with her selfe (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the story of Plangus, as of Erona. Philoclea referred it to her sisters perfecter remembrance, who with so sweet a voice, and so winning a grace, as in themselues were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condiscended.

CHAP. 15.

1 Plangus-his parentage. 2 His trick of youth, 3 espied, 4 & turned over by, and to his old father. 5 An inueagling-womans arts. 6 A guilty stepmothers diuellish practises against Plangus. 7 Her ministers false informations. 8 Plangus perplexities. 9 His fathers ielousies. The Queens complots 10 to feede the ones suspicion, 11 & work the others overthrow. 12 Plangus taken; 13 deliuered flieth: 14 is pursued with old hate, & new treason. 15 Yet must he serue abroad, while a new heire
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

The father of this Prince Plangus as yet liues, and is King of Iberia: a man (if the judgement of Plangus may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himselfe mistake the euill, seeing it disguised vnder some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princess (who both from her auncesters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, Plangus. Not long after whose birth, the Queene (as though she had perfourmed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again vnto her maker. The King (sealing vp al thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after recompensing the griefe of that disioyning from her, in conioyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, Plangus. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may iudge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused: by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it selfe) loued a priuate mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly, then by which he was take[n] forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man perswaded himself he loued her: she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possible, that the outside onely can iustly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectio[n] with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorse in her harte, & to paint shame vpon her face. And so possesst he his desire without any interruption; he constantly fauouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue seene one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his minde (vnworthie so to be loste) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leauing of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came vnto the King; who (carefull of his onely sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie euill seruauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diuerted.

Whereupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow), vsed such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be euer lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his
witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as he coulde possiblie, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set foorth her chastitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie preuayled, his father beleued; and so beleued, that ere long (though he were alredy stept into the winter of his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gaue himselfe ouer vnto it; and (because he would auoide the odious comparison of a yong riuall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Prouince lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse worke, the of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him so worthilie, as euen to this country the fame therof came, long before his own coming: while yet his father had a speedier succes, but in a far vnnobler conquest. For while Plangus was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectio[n]) folowed his suite with all meanes of vnhonest seruants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vnlouelines.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent Plangus, or at lest not hoping of him to obtaine so aspiring a purpose, lefte no arte vnused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the fishe was alredy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself vpon the hooke, which he had greedely swalowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenaunce, yet neither forgetting hansomnes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were euer seasoned with sighes; and any fauour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might persuade cause of affection. And being growen skilfull in his humors, she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: neuer suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: neuer suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loued him; and a certaine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he straight was encountred with a maske of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible vnto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as Plangus tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo; & weep when she would, as (they say) some can doo; but (being most impudent in her hart) she could, when she would, teach her chokes blushing, and make shamefastnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely vse so the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but so the bit, that it ran on, eue[n] in such a careere as she would haue it; that within a while, the king, seeing with no other eyes but such as she gaue him, & thinking no other thoghts but such as she taught him; hauing at the first liberall measure of favors then shortned of the[m], when most his Desire was inflamed; he saw no other way but mariage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) louing, but
chastly louing. So that by the time \textit{Plangus} returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he fou[n]d his father, not only maried, but alredy a father of a sonne & a daughter by this woma[n]. Which though \textit{Pla[n]gus} (as he had euery way iust cause) was griued at; yet did his grief neuer bring forth ether co[n]temning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was growen a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condemnation: so much the more, as that she (vnchastly attempting his wo[n]ted fa[n]cies) fou[n]d (for the reuere[n]ce of his fathers bed) a bitter refusall: which breeding rather spite then shame in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not onely (as hating him) thirst for a reuenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeoured to doo harme vnto him. Therefore did she trie the vttermost of her wicked wit, how to ouerthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the fauour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cu[n]ning [h]ow to vndermine it. And therfore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her advauncing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neerer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excelle[n]cies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his successes: so as the father might finde in her a singular loue towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe sparkes of ielousie in him. Thus hauing gotten an opinion in his father, that she was farre from meaning mischiefe to the sonne, then fell she to praise him with no lesse vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets foorth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fitnesse in him to beare rule, the singular loue the Subiects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their fauors, or his courage in employing their fauours: that he was not borne to liue a subiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maiestie, such a Kingly entertainement, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprises: especially re-
membring those vertues, which in a successor are no more honoured by the subiects, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by putting-of obiectio[n]s, bring in obiectio[n]s to her husbands head, alredy infected with suspitio[n]. Nay (would she say) I dare take it vpon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might haue bene, who loued greatnes so well, as to build their greatnes vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, & euer urgeth on his own successes; hating nothing, but what may stop the[m]. But the Gods forbid, we should euer once dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praise, that he wil not hurt. Then euer remembring to strengthen the suspition of his estate with priuate ielousie of her loue, doing
him excesive honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speaches and graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be employed in all such dangerous matters, as ether he should perish in them, or if he preuailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to woun[n]d him, vntill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into euery accident.

Then tooke she help to her of a seruant neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hasty ambitio[n], and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischiefe. Him she vseth to deale more plainely in alleaging causes of iealousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with diuers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musitians, that singing diuers parts, make one musicke. He sometime with fearefull countenaunce would desire the King to looke to himselfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation of some suddaine change, vpon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the King to make much of his sonne, and holde his fauour, for that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he said) Plangus loued none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful countenaunce, & an humble gesture beare false witnesse for his true meaning) that he fou[n]d, not only souldiery, but people weary of his gouernment, & al their affections bent vpon Plangus. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment: so that within a while, all Plangus actions began to be translated into the language of suspition.

Which though Plangus fou[n]d, yet could he not auoid, euen co[n]traries being druen to draw one yoke of argume[n]t:
if he were magnificat, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mused vpon some daungerous plot. In summe, if he could haue turned himself to as many formes as Proteus, euery forme should haue bene made tedious.

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gaue the occasion of further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy supersticious through suspitio[n]) amazed him streight, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answeres, as while they straue, straue to be overcome. But euen while the doubts most boiled, she
thus nourished them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall me[n] of that cou[n]try, that at the great Parliame[n]t (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates perswade the King (being now stept deeply into old age) to make Plangus, his associate in gouernme[n]t with him: assuring the[m], that not only she would ioine with them, but that the father himself would take it kindly; chargeing the[m] not to acquaint Plangus withal; for that perhaps it might be harmeful vnto him, if the King should find, that he wer a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loued him, & truly, because such indeed was the minde of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed therto) accomplished her cou[n]sell: she indeed keeping promise of vehement perswading the same: which the more she & they did, the more she knew her husba[n]d would fear, & hate the cause of his feare. Plangus fou[n]d this, & hu[m]bly protested against such desire, or wil to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he disse[m]bled, accenting his integritie to be but a cu[n]ning face of falshood: and therfore delaying the desire of his subiects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands vpon his sonne: which his wife thus brought to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go vnto Pla[n]gus, & (enabling his words with great shew of faith, & endearing them with desire of secrsie) to tell him, that he found his ruine conspired by his stepmother, with certain of the noble men of that cou[n]try, the King himselfe giuing his consent, and that few daies should passe, before the putting it in practize: with all discouering the very truth indeed, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreeing with Plangus his owne opinio[n], made him giue him the better credit: yet not so far, as to flie out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see further. Wherupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistresse) told him one day, that the same night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his wife, & those noble me[n] together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding against Plangus: & therfore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he should heare all that passed; & so haue the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safetie. The poore Pla[n]gus (being subject to that only disaduantage of honest harts, credulitie) was perswaded by him: & arming himself (because of his late going) was closely conueied into the place appointed. In the meane time his stepmother making all her gestures cunningly counterfaite a miserable afflictio[n], she lay almost groueling on the flower of her cha[m]ber, not suffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, she told him (euen almost crying out every word) that she was wery of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husba[n] ds murther, or accuse her sonne, who had euer bene more deare, then a sonne
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

unto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne Plangus (soliciting her in the old affection betwenee them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; assuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were against it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitifull digressios, whe[n] in comes the same fellow, that brought Pla[n]gus: & run[n]ing himself out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beseeching him to saue himself, for that there was a man with sword drawen in the next roome. The King affrighted, we[n]t out, & called his gard, who entring the place, fou[n]d indeed Plangus with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but sta[n]ding suspiciously inough, to one already suspicous. The King (thinking he had put vp his sworde because of the noise) neuer tooke pleasure to heare his answer, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the eies & eares of his: friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them, who came, and by force deliuered him; although nu[m]bers on the other side (abused with the fine framing of their report) tooke armes for the King. But Plangus, though he might haue vsed the force of his friends to reuenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall loue of his father, and hate to make their suspition seeme iust, caused him rather to choose a volu[n]tarie exile, the[n] to make his fathers death the purchase of his life: & therefore went he to Tiridates, whose mother was his fathers sister, liuing in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, euer hoping by his intercession, and his owne desert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of Erona happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discoursed vnto you.

But his father had so deeply engraued the suspicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull guiltines, then of an humble faithfulnes; & therfore continued his hate, with such vehemencie, that he did euer hate his Nephew Tiridates, and afterwards his neece Artaxia, because in their Court he receiued countenance, leauing no meanes vnattempted of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked seruant of his, who undertooke to empoyson him. But his cu[n]ning disguised him not so well, but that the watchful serua [n]ts of Pla[n]gus did discouer him. Wherupo[n] the wretch was taken, & (before his wel-deserued execution) by torture forced to confesse the particularities of this, which in generall I haue told you.

Which co[n]fession autentically set downe (though Tiridates with solemne Embassage sent it to the King) wrought no effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the gouernment into his wiues hande, neuer did so much as reade it; but sent it stright by her to be considered. So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon Plangus,
for the death of their seruaunt. And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the wauering peoples affection towards Plangus, with aduauncing fit persons for faction, and gaunting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed so farre, as to cause the sonne of the second wife, called Palladius, to be proclaymed successour, and Plangus quite excluded: so that Plangus was driuen to continue his seruing Tiridates, as he did in the warre against Erona, and brought home Artaxia, as my sister tolde you; when Erona by the treason of Antiphilus, But at that word she stopped. For Basilius (not able longer to abide their absence) came sodainly among them, and with smiling countenance (telling Zelmane he was affraid she had stollen away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counsel in going then to their lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to set. They yeelded, Zelmane meaning some other time to vnderstand the storie of Antiphilus treason, and Eronas daunger, whose case she greatly tendred. But Miso had no sooner espied Basilius, but that as spitefully, as her rotten voice could vtter it, she set forth the sawcinesse of Amphialus. But Basilius onely attended what Zelmanes opinion was, who though she hated Amphialus, yet the nobilitie of her courage preuailed ouer it, and she desired he might be pardoned that youthfull error; considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he gouerned himselfe, as one remembering his fault. Basilius guing the infinite tearmes of praises to Zelmanes both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

CHAP. 16.

1 The cumber of Zelmanes loue and louers. 2 Gynecias loue-lamentations. 3 Zelmanes passions & sonet. 5 Basilius-his wooing, and Zelmanes answeres. 6 Philoclea feed atturney to plead her fathers cause.

O brought he them vp to visite his wife, where betwenee her, & him, the poore Zelmane receaued a tedious entertainement; oppressed with being loued, almost as much, as with louing. Basilius not so wise in couering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Louer thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But Gynecia (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vse the advantaage of her sexe in kissing Zelmane, as she sate vpon her bedde-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast vpon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once Zelmane could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene
poppets, whose motion stooe onely vpon her pleasure) Basilius with servisceable steppes, Gynecia with greedie eyes would follow her. Basilius mind Gynecia well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all Gynecias actions were interpreted by Basilius, as proceeding from iealousie of his amourousnesse. Zelmane betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beates him, will make him beleue it is for loue; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition sweares, the ill-tasting wallowish medicine he professes, is of a good taste) their loue was hatefull, their courteous troublesome, their presence cause of her absence thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to her selfe) deare Dorus, what ods is there betweene thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to doo in thy pursuit but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little enuous care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I haue now Miso, the worst of thy duels, let loose vpon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and iealousie. Alas, incomparable Philoclea, thou euer seest me, but dost neuer see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was imprisoned in libertie, and banished being still present? To whom but me haue lourers bene iailours, and honour a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her silent steps vpon the[m], they parted ech from other (if at lest they could be parted, of whom euery one did liue in another) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally vpon such eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in lest measure vpon Gynecia, who (when Basilius after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renue the curses of her birth; & the[n] in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chastest bed of mine (said she) which neuer heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receaue this desastred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feel, that thou hast no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here ô forgotten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice; while my soule was clothed with modestie, that was a comely ornament: now why should nature crowne that head, which is so wicked, as her onely despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would haue said, but that Basilius (awaked with the noise) tooke her in his armes, & bega[n] to co[m]fort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a iealous loue of him: which humor if she would a little haue maintained, perchance it might haue weakned his new conceaued fancies. But he finding her answeres wandering fro[m] the purpose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the adua[n]tage of a sleepe, which a little before day, ouerwatched with sorow, her teares had as it were sealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with Zelmane, who baited
on this fashion by these two louers, & euer kept from any meane to declare herselfe, found in her selfe a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a riuier the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was somtime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her vnhap. There would she kisse the ground, and thanke the trees, blisse the aier, & do dutifull reverence to euery thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; somtimes despair darkning all her imaginations, sometimes the actiuue passion of Loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-matched louers. But this morning Basilius himself gaue her good occasion to go beyond them. For hauing combd and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, comming where Zelmane was, he found her giuen ouer to her musicall muses, to the great pleasure of the good old Basilius, who retired himselfe behinde a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did vtter these passionate verses.

LOued I am, and yet complaine of Loue:
As louing not, accused, in Loue I die.
When pittie most I craue, I cruell proue:
   Still seeking Loue, loue found as much I flie.
Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
What I call wrong, I doo the same, and more:
Bard of my will, I haue beyond desire:
   I waile for want, and yet am chokte with store.
This is thy worke, thou God for euer blinde:
Though thousands old, a Boy entitled still.
Thus children doo the silly birds they finde,
With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
   Yet thus much Loue, O Loue, I craue of thee:
   Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Basilius made no great haste from behind the tree, till he perceaued she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to loose the pretious fruite of time, he presented himselfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old goueniesse of Danae is painted, when she sodainly saw the golde[n] shoure, O heauely woma[n], or earthly Goddesse (said he) let not my presence be odious vnto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend vpon this miserable old-ma[n], whose life hath hitherto bene maintained but to serue as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only haue ouer throwne me, & in my bondage co[n] sists my glory. Suffer not your owne worke to be despised of you: but looke vpon him with pittie, whose life serues for your praise. Zelmane (keeping a
cou[n]tenance ascanses she vnderstood him not) told him, It became her euil to suffer such exccessiue reuerence of him, but that it worse became her to correct him, to whom she owed duetie: that the opinion she had of his wisedome was such, as made her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themselues sounded so, as she could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (said Basilius, proud that that was brought in question) what may they intend, but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat, and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life is upheld, and my death threatened? Zelmane lifting vp her face as if she had receaued a mortall injurie of him, And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene bent vnto? said she: Is it the disdaine of my estate, or the opinion of my lightnesse, that haue emboldned such base fancies towards me? enjoying quoth you? now little ioy come to them that yeeld to such enjoying. Poore Basilius was so appalled, that his legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to his hart, a generall shaking all ouer his bodie possessed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to giue a stammering answere, when it came into Zelmanes head by this deuise to make her profile of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus said vnnto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnfit either for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large testimonie I see of your affection makes me willing to suppresse a great number of errors. Onely thus much I thinke good to say, that the same words in my Ladie Philocleas mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Basilius (whose senses by Desire were held open, and conceipt was by Loue quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answere out, but that (as if speedie flight might saue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speede his bodie would suffer him, towards his daughter Philoclea: whom he found at that time duetifullly watching by her mother, and Miso curiouslie watching her; hauing left Mopsa to doo the like seruice to Pamela. Basilius forthwith calling Philoclea aside, (with all the conjuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie vtter) besought her she would preserue his life, in whom her life was begonne; she would saue his graye haires from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth ouer-burdened with him, she would coole his fierie griefe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleased Zelmane; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitefull in the Sunnes continuall absence. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdaine any seruice (though neuer so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. Philoclea more glad then euer she had knowen her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enjoy the private conference of Zelmane, yet had so
sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast ouer her faire thoughts; but with humble grace answered her father: That there needed nether promise nor persuasian to her, to make her doo her uttermost for her fathers service. That for Zelmanes fauour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she woulde not pearce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interprete all his doinges to be accomplished in goodnes: and therfore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he woulde not imparte it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had euuer beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprong out of passion, and contrarie to the former. Basilius content to take that, since he could haue no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free accesse vnto Zelmane) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer than[kfully, desiring onely a speedy returne of comfort. Philoclea was parting, and Miso streight behind her, like Alecto following Proserpina. But Basilius forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharp-set vpon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in ouer-looking Philoclea: and so said to Basilius, that she did as she was com[m] anded, and could not answere it to Gynecia, if she were any whitte from Philoclea: telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But Basilius, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stird a foote to trouble his daughter) gaue her a stoppe for that while.

CHAP. 17.

1 Zelmanes teares, 2 and tearefull dittie. 3 Philoclea enters conference with her. 4 She shues, and shewes her selfe Prince Pyrocles. 5 Philoclea feares much, but loues more. 6 Their conclusion, 7 with reentrie to their intermitted historiologie.

O away departed Philoclea, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well she sawe, her father was growen her aduerse partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must fauour her Riuall; and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But she walkt but a little on, before she saw Zelmane lying vpon a banke, with her face so bent ouer Ladon, that (her teares falling into the water) one might haue thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the vnder-running riuier. But by and by, with speech she made knowen, as well that she liued, as that she sorrowed. Faire streames (said she) that do vouchsafe in your cleerenes to represent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of
my teares vnnto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleasure do not flie away from me. But if the violence of your spring commaund you to haste away, to pay your dueties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you these fewe wordes, and let the uttermost ends of the world know them. A Loue more cleer then your selues, dedicated to a Loue (I feare) more cold then your selues, with the cleerenes layes a night of sorow vpon me; and with the coldenes en-flames a worlde of fire within me. With that she tooke a willowe stick, and wrote in a sandie banke these fewe verses.

O
Ver these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes,
(Mine eyes euen great in labour with their teares)
I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes
Clusters of clowdes, which no Sunne euer cleares.
   In watry glasse my watrie eyes I see:
      Sorrowes ill easde, where sorrowes painted be.

My thoughts imprisonde in my secreat woes,
With flamie breathes doo issue oft in sound:
The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes force rebound.
   And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
      Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.

Now in this sande I would discharge my minde,
And cast from me part of my burndous cares:
But in the sand my tales foretold I finde,
And see therein how well the writer fares.
   Since streame, aier, sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:
      What hope to quench, where each thing blows the fire?

   And assoon as she had written them (a new swarme of thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her foot to giue the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But Philoclea (to whom delight of hearing and seeing was before a stay from interrupting her) gaue her self to be seen vnto her, with such a lightning of Beauty vpo[n] Zelmane, that nether she could looke on, nor would looke of. At last Philoclea (hauing a little mused how to cut the threede euen, betweene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each sange their pane, to make vp the harmonic of bashulnesse) began to say, My Father to whom I owe my self, & therefore, When Zelmane (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giuing vp her life to the lippes of Philoclea, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for
a while within the Paradise of her minde. For well she knew her fathers errand, who should soon receive a sufficient answer. But now she demaunded leave not to loose this long sought-for commoditie of time, to ease her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her destinie was to be condemned by Philocleas mouth, at lest Philoclea might know, whom she had condemned. Philoclea easily yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the riuer the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Nature, Zelmane doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthinesse of every worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

Most beloued Ladie, the incomparable excellencies of your selve, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning, and many circumstauences in the uttering my speech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the small opportunitie of envious occasion (by the malicious eie hateful Loue doth cast vpon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by respects due vnto you, in respect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preserued. I doo therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If euer the sound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue vnderstood, what force it hath had to conquere the strongest hartes, and change the most setled estates: receiue here an example of those strange Tragedies; one, that in him selfe conteineth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleewee that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see (I say) a liuing image, and a present storie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine. But alas, whether goest thou my tongue? or how doth my harte consent to aduenture the reuealing his neerest touching secrete? But peace Feare, thou commest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a miserable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes Pyrocles, Prince of Macedon, whom you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnused Metamorphosis: whom you onely haue made neglect his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake to be Pyrocles: the same Pyrocles, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, Pyrocles was drowned. O most true presage: for these traytors, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betraied me, will neuer leaue till they haue drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whom vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddesse of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred vpon me destruction. Your faire face hath
manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his
amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them
the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may be waied in the
ballances of Honour, and let vertue hold them. For if the highest Loue in no
base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be
without pittie. If otherwise you be (alas but let it neuer be so) resolued, yet
shall not my death be comfortles, receiuing it by your sentence.

The ioy which wrought into *Pygmalions* mind, while he found his beloued
image was softer, & warmer in his folded
armes, till at length it acco[m]plished his gladnes with a perfect womans
shape (still beautifued with the former perfections) was euen such, as by
each degree of *Zelmanes* wordes creepingly entred into *Philoclea*: till
her pleasure was fully made vp with the manifesting of his being; which was
such as in hope did ouer-come Hope. Yet Doubt would faine haue playd his
parte in her minde, and cald in question, how she should be assured that
*Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Loue streight stood vp & deposed, that a lie could
not come from the mouth of Zelmane. Besides, a certain sparke of honour,
which rose in her well-disposed minde, made her feare to be alone with him,
with whom alone she desired to be (with all the other co[n]tradictions
growing in those minds, which nether absolutly clime the rocke of vertue, nor
freely sinke into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soone gaue place, or at lest
gaue no more light in her mind, then a ca[n]dle doth in the Sunnes presence.
But euen sicke with a surfet of ioy, and fearefull of she knewe not what (as he
that newly findes huge treasures, doubtes whether he sleepe or no; or like a
fearfull Deere, which then lookes most about, when he comes to the best
feede) with a shrugging kinde of tremor through all her principall partes, she
gawe these affectionate wordes for answere. Alas, how painefull a thing it is
to a deuided minde to make a wel-ioyned answere? how harde it is to bring
inwarde shame to outward confession? and what handsomnes trow you can be
observed in that speeche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I
say ô *Zelmane*? Alas your wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince *Pyrocles*?
wretch that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well
say; If I had continued as I ought, *Philoclea, you had either neuer bene, or
euer bene Zelmane*: you had either neuer attempted this change, set on with
hope, or neuer discouered it, stopt with despaire. But I feare me, my
behaviour ill gouerned, gaue you the first comfort: I feare me, my affection ill
hid, hath giue you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the weakenesse of my
government before, made you thinke such a maske would be gratefull vnto
me: & my weaker gouernment since, makes you to pull of the visar. What
shall I doo then? shal I seeke far-fetched inuentions? shall I labour to lay
marble coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of
my virgin-minde be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word.

True it is, alas, too true it is, ô *Zelmane* (for so I loue to call thee, since in that
name my loue first began, and in the shade of that name my loue shall best lie
hidden,) that euen while so thou wert, (what eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired. Shall I say then, I am sorry, or that my loue must be turned to hate, since thou art turned to Pyrocles? how may that wel be, since when thou wert Zelmana, the despaire thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: vse it with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preserue me. Doost thou loue me? keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing looke, finding, that in her selfe she had (as it were) shot out of the bow of her affectio[n], a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded to haue done. But Pyrocles so caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuy the Gods felicitie, presented her with some iewels of right princely value, as some little tokens of his loue, & qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King Euarchus, vnto him, which euen in the Sea had amongst his iewels bene preserued. But little needed those proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with her selfe, rather then make any contrarie coniectures to Zelmanes speeches; so that with such imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meete, and their harts to kisse, as their mouthes did: which faine Pyrocles would haue sealed with the chiefe armes of his desire, but Philoclea commaunded the contrary; and yet they passed the promise of mariage.

And then at Philocleas entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occasions of remayning with Zelmane, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their departing from Erona, for the rest she had already vnderstood of her sister. For (saide she) I haue vnderstood, how you first in the companie of your Noble cousin Musidorus parted from Thessalia, and of diuers aduentures, which with no more daunger then glory you passed through, till your comming to the succour of the Queene Erona; and the ende of that warre (you might perceiue by my selfe) I had vnderstood of the Prince Plangus. But what since was the course of your doings, vntil you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not, the fame thereof hauing rather shewed it by pieces; then deliuered any full forme of it. Therefore, deere Pyrocles (for what can mine eares be so sweetly fed with as to heare you of you) be liberall vnto me of those things which haue made you indeede pretious to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I haue you here out of them, euen the remembraunce of them is pleasaunt. Pyrocles easily perceiued she was content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Loue shewed himselfe a cowardly boy, that durst not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue prooued him selfe valiant, that durst with the sworde of reuerent dutie gaine-stand the force of so many enraged desires. But so it was, that though he knewe this discourse was to entertaine him from a more streight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod, and gladly make much of the entertainement which she
allotted vnto him: and therefore with a desirous sigh chastning his brest for
too much desiring, Sweete Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophees, what
Triumph, what Monuments, what Histories may euer make my fame yeeld so
sweete a Musicke to my eares, as that it pleaseth you to lend your minde to
the knowledge of any thing touching Pyrocles, onely therefore of value,
because he is your Pyrocles? And therefore grow I now so proud, as to thinke
it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to giue it hearing. Therefore (onely
height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death of Tiridates, and
selling Erona in her gouernement; for setled we left her, howsoever since (as
I perceiued by your speech the last day) the vngrateful treason of her ill-
chosen husband ouerthrew her (a thing in trueth neuer till this time by me
either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without hauing such a minde
as Antiphilus, that so great a beautie as Eronas (indeed excellent) could not
haue held his affection? so great goodnes could not haue bound
gratefulnesse? and so high advancement could not haue satisfied his
ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to
a bottomlesse pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling,
then being fallen, to giue ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for
my Cosen, and me, vpon this cause we parted from Erona.

CHAP. 18.

1 Anaxius surcuidrie; 2 and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted.
3 The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-love.
4 Pyrocles-his intercession in the cause.
5 The lewd parts of that light lecher.
6 His scoffing excuses.
7 Didos reuenge on him stopped, 8 and his reuenge on her stayed by Pyro-
cles.

Vardes (the braue & mighty Prince, whom it was my
fortune to kill in the co[m]bat for Erona) had three
Nephewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set
among the foremost racks of Fame for great minds to
atte[m]pt, and great force to perfourme what they did
attempt; especially the eldest, by name Anaxius; to whom
al men would willingly haue yeelded the height of praise, but that his nature
was such, as to bestow it vpon himselfe, before any could giue it. For of so
vnsupportable a pride he was, that where his deede might well stirre enuie,
his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Gyants euer
made war against heauen, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company.
For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing vniust,
while his liking was his iustice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his
aid; because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince Pla[n]gus was by his
cosen Tiridates preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the
sword & speare in iudging of desert, how-much he esteemed himselfe before
*Plangus* in that, so much would he haue had his allowance in his service.

But now that he vnderstood that his vnCLE was slaine by me, I thinke rather
scorne that any should kil his vnCLE, then
any kindnesse (an vnused guest to an arrogant soule) made him seeke
his reuenge; I must confesse in manner gallant enough. For he sent a
challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the
kingdome of *Lycia*; where he would proue vpon me, that I had by some
trecherie ouercome his vnCLE, whom els many hundreds such as I, could not
haue withstood. Youth & successe made me willing enough to accept any
such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that your cosen *Amphialus*
(who for some yeares hath vniuersally borne the name of the best Knight in
the world) had diuers times fought with him, & neuer bene able to master
him; but so had left him, that euery man thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of
curtesie far short of him, in al other his match; *Anaxius* stil deeming himselfe
for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone,
because so I vnderstood for certaine, he was; and (I must confesse) desirous
to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince *Musidorus,*
because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to
any thing in my self, whatsoeuer before I had done. For of him indeed (as of
any worldly cause) I must grant, as receiued, what euer there is, or may be
good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giuing me in him so
liuely an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist ouer mine
eyes, as not to see, and to loue it, and all with such deare friendship and care,
as (ô heauens) how can my life euer requite vnto him? which made me
indeed find in my selfe such a kind of depending vpon him, as without him I
found a weakesnesse, and a mis-trustfulness of my selfe, as one strayed from
his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiuing to
ouer-rule me, I straue against it; not that I was vnwilling to depend vpon him
in iudgeme[n]t, but by weakesnesse I would not; which though it held me to
him, made me vnworthy of him. Therfore I desired his leaue, and obtained it:
such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne
tenderenesse; and so priuately went from him, he determining (as after I knew)
in secreat maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to mee,
to preuent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was *Erona*
to let vs depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to
her. But I, (ridde fully from those combers of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes
journey in my way toward *Anaxius*) met an adventure, (though in it selfe of
small importance) I will tell you at large, because by the occasion thereof I
was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

As I past through a Laund (ech side whereof was so bordred both with
high tymber trees, and copses of farre more humble growth, that it might
easily bring a solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the
wild burgesses of the forest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by
pawses to mine eares from within the wood of the right hand, made me well
assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was the voice of a man, though it were
a verie vnmanlike voice, so to crie. But making mine eare my guide, I left not
many trees behind me, before I saw at the botome of one of them a
gentleman bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might
tomble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Vpo[n] him (like so
many Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such, as one
might well enough say, they were hansomse. Each of them helde bodkins in
their handes, wherewith they continually pricked him, hauing bene before-
hand vnarmed of any defence from the wast vpward, but onely of his shirte:
so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported
themselves in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their
victorie.

I was moued to compassion, and so much the more that he straight
cald to me for succour, desiring me at lest to kill him, to deliuer him
from those tormenters. But before my-self could resolue, much lesse any
other tell what I would resolue, there came in cholerick hast towards me
about seuen or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me
away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge,
but with so ouer-mastring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke
it: & therfore (answering them, that how I would haue defended him from the
Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate first with him
particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners)
ioynly. But such was the end of it, that I kept the fiedle with the death of
some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie
victorie would bring forth) ranne away; sauing onely one; who was so flesht
in malice, that neither during, nor after the fight, she gaue any truce to her
crueltie, but still vsed the little instrument of her great spight, to the well-
itnest paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eies,
which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort
of seeing who preuailed ouer him. When I came in, and after much ado,
brought her to some conference, (for some time it was before she would
harken, more before she would speake; & most, before she would in her
speech leaue off" that remembrance of her bodkin) but at length whe[n] I puld
off my head-peece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she
was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increased in his owne
exercise) the[n] with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gaue her
griefe vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to
forbeare any time the executing of my iust reuenge vpon this naughtie creature,
a man in nothing, but in deceauing women; But because I see you are young,
and like enough to haue the power (if you would haue the mind) to do much
more mischiefe, then he, I am content vpon this bad subiect to reade a lecture
to your vertue.
This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I must confess is noble (but what is that to him, if it shalbe a staine to his deade auncestors to haue left such an offpring?) in shape as you see not vncomely (indeed the fit maske of his disguised falshood) in conuersation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie simplicitie, his words of hartie companablenesse; and such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed, as to thinke mischieuously: delighted in al such things, which by imparting their delight to others, makes the user therof welcome; as, Musicke, Daunsing, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede neuer wish a better companion. But under these qualities lies such a poysorous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say truely) he flies so into the fauour of poore sillie women, that I would be too much ashamed to confess, if I had not reuenge in my hande, as well as shame in my chequees. For his hart being wholy delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather, one bird caught, serued for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new mistresse, when he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakest theedes of his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Masters part of cunning, making vs now jealous, now envious, now proud of what we had, desirous of more; now giving one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subject to her; now with an estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that minde, which indeede could neuer be had: neuer ceasing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarked vs in some such disaduantage, as we could not return dry-shod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he vs his imperiousnes, that we had a delightfull feare, and an awe which made vs loath to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when sometimes with late repentance I thinke of it) I must confess, euin in the greatest tempest of my iudgeme[n]t was I neuer driuen to think him excellent, and yet so could set my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though therein had lain my felicitie: like them I haue seene play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde haue the ball, and yet euery one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had ether our hartes broken with sorrow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for euer lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie vsing of our faults. For neuer was there man that could with more scornful eyes beholde her, at whose feete he had lately laine, nor with a more vnmanlike brauerie vse his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had song Sonets of her praises: being so naturally inconstant, as I maruell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereeto it had bee so long vnited. For so hath he dealt with vs (vnhappie foole,) as we could
neuer tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enjoy, or after he once enjoyed, to forsake. But making a glorie of his own shame, it delighted him to be challengd of vnkindnesse: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Louers: yet so farre had we engaged our selues, (vnsfortunate soules) that we listed not complaine, since our complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accusation to our selues. But euerie of vs (each for her selfe,) laboured all meanes how to recouer him, while he rather daily sent vs companions of our deceipt, then euer returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confess) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so vnworthie a changeablenesse; leauing vs nothing but remorse for what was past, and despaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in friendshippe, who till that time, had employed our endeuours one against the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the iustifying of his loue to her by manage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) deuised how to get him among vs alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them, whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easilie gaue us opportunitie to doo.

And a man may see, euen in this, how soone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an authoritie among us, as if the Planets had done inough for us, that by us once he had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the other, to lay his unkindnesse unto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many (like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to iustifie his cruell falsheode, and all with such iestes, and disdainfull passages, that if the iniurie could not be made greater, yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it.

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall neuer forgette, how he woulde prooue it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Loue to an other, but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I euer loued my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Lovely: and where-soever I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly folowed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will loue her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their loue from fairenes to foulenesse, and from louelines to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will streight giue ouer himself to his mortall enemie: where I (whom you call inconstant) am euer constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this iollie scoffing brauerie he went over us all, saying, He left one, because she was over-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough;
a fourth, because she was over-gamesome; the fifth, because she was grown
with griefe subject to sickness; the sixth, because she was so foolish, as to be
jealous of him; the seventh, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to
another that he loued; the eight, because she was not secrete; the ninth,
because she was not liberall: but to me, who am named Dido, (and indeede
have mette with a false Æneas) to me, I say, (ô the ungratefull villain) he
could finde no other fault to object, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

But when he had thus plaide the careless Prince, we hauing those servants
of ours in readines, whom you lately so
manfully ouercame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that
trifling revenge, in which you found vs busie; but meaning afterwardes
to have mangled him so, as should haue lost his credit for euer abusing
more. But as you haue made my fellowes flie away, so for my part the
greatnesse of his wrong ouershadowes in my judgement the greatnesse of any
danger. For was it not enoough for him, to haue deceiued me, & through the
deceit abused me, & after the abuse forsaken me, but that he must now, of al
the company, & before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge?
Many fayrer? I trow eu[n]t in your judgement, Sir, (if your eies do not
beguile me) not many fayrer; & I know (whosoeuer saies the contrary) there
are not many fayrer. And of whom should I receive this reproch, but of him,
who hath best cause to know there are not many fayrer? And therefore how
soever my fellowes pardon his injuries, for my parte I will euer remember, &
remember to reuenge this scorne of al scornes. With that she to him afresh; &
surely would haue put out his eies (who lay muet for shame, if he did not
sometimes crie for feare) if I had not leapt from my horse, & mingling force
with intreaty, staied her furie.

But, while I was perswading her to meekenes, comes a number of his
friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they
should kill that woman, that had thus betrayed and disgraced him. But
then I was faine to forsake the ensigne; under which I had before serued,
and to spend my uttermost force in the protecting of the Lady; which so
well preuailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of
all sides. And so I leaving her in a place of securitie (as she thought) went on
my journey towards Anaxius, for whom I was faine to stay two daies in the
appointed place, he disdaining to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.

CHAP. 19.

1The monomachie betwenee Anaxius and Pyrocles; 2 ad-
diourned by Pyrocles to resuccour Dido. 3 The course of
Didos danger. 4 The miserablenesse of her father. 5 His
carlish entertainement to Pyrocles; 6 and his treason a-
against him. 7 Pyrocles hard bestead. 8 succoured by Mu-
sidorus: 9 both saued by the King of Iberia. 10 The exe-
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

cution of the traitors, and death of Dido.

Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont to say too much) like a man, whose courage was apt to clime ouer any daunger. soone as euer he came neere me, in fit distaunce for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran vpon me; which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, hauing kept my selfe ready for him, because I had vnderstood, that he obserued but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit ech other vpon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I must confesse) I neuer receiued the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonished, my minde forced them to quicken themselues, because I had learned of him, how little fauour he is woont to show in any matter of aduantage. And indeede he was turned, and comming vpon me with his sworde drawne, both our staues hauing bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to answere him, that truely I know not who gaue the first blowe. But whosoeuer gaue the first, it was quickly seconded by the second. And indeed (excellentest Ladie) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought betweene vs; he undoubtedely being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much loftinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, winning and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horse happened to come vpon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand vpward; so as it lighting vpon his hart, the horse died. He driuen to dismount, threatned, if I did not the like, to doo as much for my horse, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such sort, that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that vnconstant Pamphilus, whom I had deliuered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a dozen armed men after him; but before him he had Dido (that Ladie, who had most sharpely punished him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with most vnmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pittifull a sight vnto me, that it mooued me to require Anaxius to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perfourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distressed Ladie. But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he cals his mind) bad me leaue of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would be long betweene vs (longing in my hart to deliuer the poore Dido) giving him so great a blowe, as somewhat
staied him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the company, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that vse made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horse, Anaxius followed me: but his prowde harte did so disdaine that exercise, that I had quickly ouer-run him, & ouertaken my horse; being (I must confesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that euer shewed his shoulders to his enemie. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, (see how feare giues him wings) I turned to Anaxius, & aloud promised him to returne thether again, as soone as I had relieued the injured Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the base words angry contempt could endite; I said no more, but, Anaxius, assure thy self, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so vsing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurre, I ranne in my knowledge after Pamphilus, but in all their conceipts from Anaxius, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testified with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moued to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies misery ouer-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horse sometimes, then of myselfe, so rightly to hit the way) I ouergat them a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured castle, the place where I perceiued they meant to perfourme their vnknightly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the first with a lance, the iustnesse of the cause so enhabled me against the rest (falsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only Anaxius, deliuered her from those iniurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left vnpunished. As for Pamphilus, he hauing once seene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, euen from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to giue them thanks for their paines. But when I had deliuered to the Ladie a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had layd so vehement apprehension of death vpon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcilement) Pamphilus had set vpon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such maner as I had seene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father; to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his castle windowe (for this castle, she said, was his) he might haue the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approching crueltie. I was glad I had done so
good a deed for a Gentlewoman not vnhandsome, whome before I had in like sorte helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, euen out of countenaunce before she began her speach, much after this manner inuited me to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but abased by wordes, since the life I haue, I holde it now the second time of you: and therefore neede not offer seruice vnto you, but onely to remember you, that I am your seruaunt: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is very daungerous for murthering theeeues, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I must confesse, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, so the same loue makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spoke by ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With that she tolde me, that though she spake of her father (whom she named Chremes) she would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions, and riches, so was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, giuen to sparing, in so vnmeasurable a sorte, that he did not onely barre him selfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie vse thereof; scarsely allowing him selfe fitte sustenaunce of life, rather then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake onely he seemed to ioye in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occasion she had stumbled vpon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserued, yet she could not denie, but she was driuen thereby to receaue more then decent fauours. She concluded, that there at lest I should be free from iniuries, & should be assured to her-wards to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of foode and rest, by hunger and weariness, at that time well stored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, haung a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose vnthriftie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to cry a good while before we coulde haue answear, and to dispute a good while before answear would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a ioy to receaue his daughter, whome hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his heade by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne so wearie
of such entertainement, that no regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this Chremes, a driueling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarcely would giue me thanks for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulnesse might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a false welcome, I might perceae in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not ouer-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (serued onely by a company of rusticall villaines, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so sluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike lest I should haue proued a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not wish him worse, then to be himselfe. But there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; ouer-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates vnder his roofe: which she grieuing at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindnesse to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make euen his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demaundd my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Loue had not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directely my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceae by some ill-fauoured cheerefulness, which then first began to wrinkle it selfe in his face.

But the causes of their ioyes were farre different; for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke vpon one sheepe with pleasing conceipts, but the shepheard with minde to profile himselfe by preseruing, the butcher with killing him: So she reioyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and louingly reioyced: but his ioy grew, (as I to my danger after perceiued) by the occasion of the Queene Artaxias setting my head to sale, for hauing slaine her brother Tiridates; which being the summe of an hundreth thousand crownes (to whosoeuer brought me aliue into her hands) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne sake determined to betray me, so well deseruing of him, for to haue that which he was determined neuer to vse. And so knowing that the next morning I was resolued to go to the place where I had left Anaxius, he sett in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it belonged to the King of Iberia, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it)
doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of the fittest places where they might surprise me in the morning, the old caitiffe was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to suspect; since a churles curtesie rathely comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clownes, horst vpon such cart-iades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with my selfe, if that were thrift, I wisht none of my friends or subiectes euer to thriue. As for his daughter (the gentle Dido) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

So we went on together: he so old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life he had alreadie contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-side whereof men might easily keepe themselves vndiscouered, I was encompassed sodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horse and foote, who willed me to yeelede my selfe to the Queene Artaxia. But they coulde not haue vsed worse eloquence to haue perswaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will Artaxia bare me. And therefore making necessitie and iustice my best sword and shield, I vsed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little ease of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltlesnesse is not alwayes with ease oppressed. As for Chremes, he withdrew himselfe, yet so guilding his wicked conceipts with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent Musidorus came to my succour; who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with Anaxius, came to the niggards Castell, where he found all burnd and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leaue monuments of their malice therein: which Musidorus not staying either to further, or impeach, came vpon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cosen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath Musidorus by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not straunger for the number, then for the straunge blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserued death, might well delight me to speake off, but I should so holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth, there if euer, and euer, if euer
any man, did *Musidorus* shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

Yet what the unmeasurable excesse of their number woulde haue done in the ende I knoe not, but the triall thereof was cutte off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of Iberia, that same father of that worthy *Plangus*, whom it hath pleased you somtimes to mention: who, (not yeelding ouer to old age his country delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a Merline) brought to see this iniurie offred vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was straight known by the soldiers that assaulted vs, to be their King, and so most of them with-drew themselues.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motiue of this mischieuous practise; misliking much such viole[n]ce should be offred in his countrie to men of our ranke; but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confesse wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne *Plangus* against him, caused the Captaines head presently to be striken off, and the old bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chaunce slaine among his clownes, while she ouer-boldly for her weake sex sought to hold them from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

**CHAP. 20.**

1 *The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court.* 2 *Andromanas omniregencie.* 3 *Her parti-loue to them both.* 4 *Her faire and foule meanes to inueigle them.* 5 *Palladius loue to Zelmane.* 6 *Zelmanes loue to Pyrocles, and practise with her Louer to release her beloued.*

His iustice thus done, and we deliuered, the King indeede in royall sorte inuited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining vs so, as truely I must euer acknowledge a beholdingnesse vnto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some dayes being there (curing our selues of such wounds as we had receiued, while I, causing diligent search to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boasting in euerie place, how he had made me run away) we were
brought to receive the favour of acquaintance with this Queen Andromana, whom the Princesse Pamela did in so lively colours describe the last day, as still me thinkes the figure thereof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rarenes of affection, and after with the very use of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a-while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to gouern, without being gouerned by her: but finding an ease in not understanding, let loose his thoughtes wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affairs. A thing that may luckily fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was nether guided by wisdome, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slipte insensiblie into such an estate, that he liued at her vndiscreete discretion: all his subiectes hauing by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely fro[m] her, that it should haue neded a stronger vertue the[n] his, to haue vnwound so deeply an entred vice. So that either not striuing (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not striue) he scarcelie knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

Now we being brought knowen vnto her (the time that we spent in curing some very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were sooner then our selues expected) she continuallie almost haunted vs, till (and it was not long a doing) we discouered a most violent bent of affection: and that so strangely, that we might well see, an euill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely folow the sway of the desires alreadie within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected vs both: and so did her greatnes disdaine shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seemed, for a laste delight, that she delighted in infamy: which often she had vsed to her husbands shame, filling all mens eares (but his) with reproch; while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) lest of al me[n] knew who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting forth her beauties, (truely in nature not to be misliked, but as much adua[n]ced to the eye, as abased to the iudgeme[n]t by arte) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-dilige [n]t ministers, who ofte[n] cloyed our eares with her praises, & would needs teach vs a way of felicitie by seeking her fauor. But when she found, that we were as deaf to the[m], as dumb to her; then she listed no lon[ger] stay in the suburbs of her foolish desires, but directly entred vpo[n] the[m]; making her self an impudent suter, authorizing her selfe very much with making vs see that all fauor & power in that realm, so depe[n]ded vpon her, that now
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

(being in her hands) we were either to keep, or lose our liberty, at her discretion; which yet she so treated, as that we might rather suspect, she threatened. But when our wishes grew so, as that they gave us leave to travel, & that she found we were purposed to use all means we could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunities) cruised that, which in all good manners was either of us to be desired, or not granted. Truely (most faire & every way excelle[nt] Lady) you would have wondered to have seen, how before us she would confess the contentio[n] in her own mind, between that lovel[ly] (indeed most lovel[y]) brownes of Musidorus his face, & this colour of mine, which she (in the deceitful stile of affection) would intitle beautifull: how her eyes wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her words would beginne halfe of the sentence to Musidorus, & end the other half to Pyrocles: not ashamed (seeing the friendship be[teene] us) to desire either of us to be a mediator to the other; as if we should have played a request at Tennis between us: and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendship might meet; and be the knot which might tie our hearts together. Which proceeding of hers I doo the more largely set before you (most deare Lady) that by the foyle therof, you may see the noblenes of my desire to you, & the warrantablenes of your favour to me.

At that Philoclea smiled, with a little nod. But (saide Pyrocles) when she perceived no hope by suite to preuaile, then (persuaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to do any thing) she founde meanes to haue vs accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to overthrowe him in his owne estate. Which, because of the strange successes we had in the kingdoms of Phrigia, Pontus & Galatia) seemed not unlikely to him, who (but skimming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leave the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who forthwith caused us to be put in prison, hauing (while we slept) depriued us of our armour: a prison, indeed because a prison, but els well testifying affection, because in all respectes as commodious, as a prison might be: and indeed so placed, as she might at all houres, (not seen by many, though she cared not much how many had seen her) come vnto vs. Then fell she to sause her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so unworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by Loue, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claims an answering. And how much that loue might move vs, so much, and more that faultines of her mind removed vs; her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly injurious to him, that saued our lives: and to accuse a Ladie that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we esteemed almost as dishonorable: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be injurious to your ears, which should expresse the manner of her suite: while
yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnes; and wanton languishing borrowed of her eies the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time far from louing her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes sauing of our liues; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende vs worde, that vpon our liues, we should doo whatsoever she commaunded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preseruation of his estate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel she to seruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the schoole of Loue, or that an honest courage would not rather striue against, then yeele to injurie. All which yet could not make vs accuse her, though it made vs almost pine awaie for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past, and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes to poison me with roses, sometimes to heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the conclusion was such, as I must euer while I liue, think it worse then a wracke, so to haue bene preserued. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of themselues, & already acceptation of the inconstant people, as successour of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as vnworthie, in respect of the wrong was therby done against the most worthy Plangus: whose great desertes now either forgotten, or vngratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the fauourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchaunce not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giuing Plangus (who some yeares before was their only cha[m]pion) the poore co[m]fort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regiov, by name Palladius, did with vehement affection loue a young Ladie, brought vp in his fathers court, called Zelmane, daughter to that mischieuously vnhappie Prince Plexirtus (of whom already I haue, and sometimes must make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene Andromana, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so fel it out that this Zelmane, (though truely reason there was inough to loue Palladius) yet could not euer perswade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to Palladius, as they feele, that feele an vnloued loue. Yet louing indeede, and therefore constant, he vsed still the intercession of diligece and faith, euer hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought foorth this ende, whiche truely deserues of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.
Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie Zelmane (like some vnwisely liberall, that more delight to giue presentes, then pay debtes) she chose (alas for the pittie) rather to bestowe her loue (so much vndeserued, as not desired) vpon me, then to reco[m]pence him, whose loue (besides many other things) might seeme (euen in the court of Honour) iustly to claime it of her. But so it was ( alas that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preserue, and benefite doth follow vnfaine affection) she felt with me, what I felte of my captiuitie, and streight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by using the helpe therein of Palladius: who (true Louer) considering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed she concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his vttermost credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued son with a mother, faulty otherwise, but not hard-harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he sought to haue that by practise, which he could not by praier. And so being allowed often to visit vs (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her passion was either in the fit, or intermission) he vsed the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliuer vs.

CHAP.  21.

1 *The cause of the* Iberian yearely *iustes.* 2 *Queene Helens* prayses. 3 *The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reuerse.* 4 *The inventions and actions of seuen tilters.* 5 Palladius and the Princes *entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it.* 6 *Andromanas pursueit of them 7 to the death of her sonne 8 and her selfe.*

He time of the maryinge that Queene was euery year, by the extreame loue of her husband, & the seruiceable loue of the Courtiers, made notable by some publike honours, which indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then iusts, both with sword and launce, mainteined for a seuen-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to striue, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that diuers famous Knights came thither fro[m] the court of Helen, Queene of Corinth; a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens...
mouthes to ioyne with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie
hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of
comparison (for as for the two sisters of Arcadia, they are farre beyond
all conceipt of comparison) so hath her gouernment bene such, as hath bene
no lesse beautifull to mens judgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For
being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to
gouerne a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so vsed to
hard gournours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were
drawn. Yet could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that
they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of co[n]tempt:
& which was notable, even in the time that many countries were full of wars
(which for old grudges to Corinth were thought still would conclude there)
yet so ha[n]dled she the matter, that the threatens euer smarted in the
threatners; she vsing so stra[n]ge, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that
she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her
Ladies by Loue, chast. For by continuall martiaall exercises without bloud, she
made them perfect in that bloudy art. Her sportes were such as caried riches
of Knowledge vpo[n] the streame of Delight: & such the behauiour both of
her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not vpon waywardnes, but
by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to haue bene the manage
place of Loue and vertue, & that her selfe was a Diana appareld in the
garments of Venus. And this which Fame onely deliuered vnto me, (for yet I
haue neuer seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (Iknowe)
knowe her better, being your neere neighbour, because you may see by her
example (in her selfe wise, and of others beloued) that neither follie is the
cause of vehement Loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I thinke) was there
any woman, that with more vnremoueable determinatio[n] gaue her selfe to
the cou[n]cell of Loue, after she had once set before her mind the worthines
of your cousin Amphialus; & yet is nether her wisedome doubted of, nor
honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisdome, then to
discerne, what is worthy the louing? what more agreable to goodnes, then to
loue it so discerned? and what to greatnesse of hart, then to be constant in it
once loued? But at that time, that Loue of hers was not so publikely knowne,
as the death of Philoxenus, and her search of Amphialus hath made it: but
then seemed to haue such leasure to sende thither diverse choyse Knights of
her court, because they might bring her, at lest the knowledge, perchaunce the
honour, of that Triumph.

Wherein so they behaued themselues as for three daies they caried the
prize; which being come from so farre a place to
disgrace her seruaunts, Palladius (who himselfe had neuer vsed armes)
persuaded the Queene Andromana to be content (for the honour sake of
her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horse and armour, that he with vs
might undertake the recoverye of their lost honour: which she graunted; taking
our oth to go no further then her sonne, and neuer to abandon him. Which she
did not more for saving him, then keeping vs: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to have eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the young Prince, who (we saw) loued vs. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the field: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battle, till either the strangers, or that country Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a brave Knight, whose devise was to come in, all chained with a Nymph leading him: his

*Impresa* was

Against him came forth an *Iberian* whose manner of entering was, with bagpipes in stead of trumpets; a shepherd's boy before him for a Page, and by him a dozen apparelled like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in stuffe, who caried his launces, which though strong to give a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretily represented shepherds. His own furniture was drest over with wooll, so enriched with jewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a manage between the lowest and the highest. His *Impresa* was a sheep marked with pitch, with this word *Spotted to be knowne*. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windows, among them there was one (they say) that was the *Star*, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending upon *PHILISIDES* went among them singing an eclogue; one of them answering another, while the other shepherds pulling out recorders (which possesst the place of pipes) accorded their music to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise: I onely remember sixe verses, while hauing questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepherds soudaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

*ME thought some staues he mist: if so, not much amisse:*

*For where he most would hit, he euer yet did misse.*

*One said he brake acrosse; full well it so might be:*

*For neuer was there man more crossely crost then he.*

*But most cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest;*

*Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.*

Thus I haue digrest, because his maner liked me wel: But when he began to run against *Lelius*, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For *Philisides* breaking his staues with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne euer euer his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his staffe came swimming close over the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not
the stroke of Mars. But Philisides was much moued with it, while he thought Lelius would shew a contempt of his youth: till Lelius (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose injuries he could neuer otherwise returne, then honours.

But so by Lelius willing-missing was the odds of the Iberian side, and continued so in the next by the excellent run[ning] of a Knight, though fostred so by the Muses, as many times the verie rustick people left both their delights and profites to harken to his songs; yet could he so well perfourme all armed sports, as if he had neuer had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildnes, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaues, which though they fell not, still threatened falling. His Impresa was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, Data fata sequutus. But after him the Corinthian Knights absolutely preuailed, especially a great noble man of Corinth; whose devise was to come without any devise, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a liue bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure liuely representing the Phœnix: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the birde, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frozen Knight, frozen in despaire; but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so liuely answering therto, as yet did I neuer see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing sights haue carried me too farre in an vnecessary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the Corinthians that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; Palladius neither suffring vs, nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the afternoone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall Palladius (especially led by Musidorus, and somewhat aided by me) himselfe truely behauing himselfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of the Iberian side: And the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept by our party, He (that saw the time fitte for that deliuerie he intended) called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-wil, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commanding passage) we went after him vpon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obay Zelmane.
But his mother (as I learned since) understanding by the gard her sonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her greatnes, & resining modesty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for she her-selfe would follow vs. But what she did (being rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently she commanded, as a good while no body knew what she com[m]anded; so as we had gotten so far the start, as to be alredy past the confines of her kingdome before she ouer-tooke vs: and ouertake vs she did in the kingdome of Bythinia, not regarding shame, or daunger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about a three score hors-men) streight commaunded to take vs aliue, and not to regard her sonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, first by speach, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a iust defence, able to resist any vniust assaulters. And so Musidorus incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and Palladius, so good way, that we had little to doo to ouercome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when Palladium (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursued our assaylers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a speciall minion of Andromanas, and hated vs for hauing dispossest him of her hart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow slew his young Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had deliuered, iudge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called iustice in such a case: once, so it wroght in us, that many of his subiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while disdaine, strengthened by the furie of a furious loue, made Andromana stay to the last of the combat: & whe[n] she saw vs light down, to see what help we might do to the helplesse Palladius, she came run[n]ing madly vnto vs, then no lesse threatening, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she percieued it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that alredy his life had loste the vs of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owneouglinesse vpon his faulte, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especiallie, finding in vs rather detestation then pittie (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to depart, which stil she laboured to stay. But depruiued of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else could haue stayed it) strake her selfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her person, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while Musidorus labored about Palladius. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could
but receaue some few of her dying words; which were cursings of her ill set affection, and wishing vnto me many crosses & mischances in my loue, whe [n]soever I should loue, wherein I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from aboue granted. But the noise of this fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country people to some noble-men there-abouts, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let us go on our iourney, we hauing recommended those royal bodies vnto the[m] to be conueyed to the King of Iberia. With that Philoclea, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remembrance of Palladius, but much more of that which therupon grew, she would needs drinke a kisse from those eyes, and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she blushed, & yet kissed him againe to hide her blushing. Which had almost brought Pyrocles into another discourse, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie: for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know how to disobey.

CHAP. 22.

A new complaint of Pamphilus new change, 2 to a grace-
lesse curtisan. 3 Zelmanneloues, and as a Page serues Py-
rocles. 4 The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring
brothers. 5 The vnbrotherly braue combat of Tydeus and
Telenor. 6 Plexirtus his viperine vnkindnes to the kind-
est Leonatus. 7 His conquest by the two brothers, 8 and
his dogtrick to destroy them by themselues. 9 The regreete
of the dying brothers.

O (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had
much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we
sawe sitting vpon the drie sandes (which yeelded at
that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire
Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much
sorow, & every way shewed she cared not what paine she
put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide vnder so much
agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to
heare her speeches, and yet she not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation.
But wel we might understaund her at times, say, Thou doost kill me with thy
vnkind falshood: and, It greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art
the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine so much vexe me, as thy errorr.
For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it
torments me to be slain by thee. Thou art vntrue Pamphilus, thou art vntrue,
and woe is me therefore. How oft didst thou sweare vnto me, that the Sun
should loose his light, and the rocks runne vp and down like little kiddes,
before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy
shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for *Pamphilus* is false. But alas, the Sun keeps his light, though thy faith be darkned; the rockes stand still, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graspe water, and binde the winde. I might well haue know[n] thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my loue helped thy wordes to deceiue me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise, when thou didst forsake thy vnfortunate *Leucippe*. But it is no matter, *Baccha* (thy new mistres) will reuenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*, let *Pamphilus* liue happie, though I die.

And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that *Pamphilus*) slept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the same *Leucippe*, to whom the vnconstant *Pamphilus* had betrothed himselfe, which had moued the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his marriage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whom she complayned; one, that in diuers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie vnchaste woman of all *Asia*; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them (whom she made vnhappie with her fauour) to draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue souldiers: waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, because extremely faultie: and yet hauing no good thing to redeeme both these, and other vnlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied speeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, and withall, left his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one looke (in a cleere iudgement) would haue bene more acceptable, then all her kindenesse so prodigallie bestowed. For myselfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to *Dido*, ioyned to this, stirred me to seeke some reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leauing him to be punished by his owne election) we conueyed *Leucippe* to a house thereby, dedicated to vestall Nunnes, where she resolued to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised shoulde be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-doer.

But the next morning, we (hauing striuen with the Sunnes earlines) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there ouertoke vs a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to vs, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmane*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom vnconsulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leaue her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of *Andromanas* tumultuous pursuing vs, had apparerrell her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie
cutting of her golden haire, leaving nothing, but the short curles, to couer that noble head, but that she ware vpon it a faire head-peece, a shielde at her back, and a lunce in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horse, faire & lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did giue such a grace to what she did, that it did make hansome the vnhan somnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleue, that there was a praise in that vnskillfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borowed the help of her countenance to make themselues vnderstood) she desired me to accept her in my seruice; telling me, she was a noble-mans sonne of Iberia, her name Daiphantus, who hauing seene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of Andromanas following me, which by her I vnderstood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be) admitted this Daiphantus about me: who well shewed, there is no seruice like his, that serues because he loues. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought vp with tenderest education, vnapt to seruice (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate;) yet Loue enioyned such diligence, that no apprentice, no, no bondslaue could euer be by feare more readie at all commaundementes, then that yong Princesse was. How often (alas) did her eyes say vnto me, that they loued? and yet, I (not looking for such a matter) had not my conceipt open, to vnderstand them. How ofte would she come creeping to me, betweene gladnes to be neere me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I marvailing, to see her receiue my comandements with sighes, and yet do them with cheere-fulnes: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experie[n]ce: but since returning to my reme[m]brane, they haue come more neere vnto my knowledge: & pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I vse many words: for her affection to me deserues of me an affectionate speach.

In such sort did she serue me in that kingdom of Bythinia, for two moneths space. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the King of Bythinia and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (diuiding our selues to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our selues) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene the[m] selues, as loue towards vs, for hauing made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of Galatia, towarde Thrace, to ease the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly past, should haue litle rest in their thoughts, till they saw vs.

But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whe[n] by the noise of a
great fight, we were guided to a pleasant valey,
which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities somewhere doth
giue a pleasant spectacle of run[n]ing horses; so of either side stretching
it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by woodyd hilles; as if indeed
Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we
behelde one of the cruellest fights betweene two Knights, that euer hath
adorned the martial storie. So as I must co[n]fesse, a while we stood
wondring, another while delighted with the rare brauery therof; till seing such
streams of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them
to part them. But we were preuented by a dosen armed Knights, or rather
villains, who using this time of their extreame feeblenesse, all together set
vpon them. But common daunger brake of particular discorde, so that (though
with a dying weakenes) with a liuely courage they resisted, and by our help
draue away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to
take aliue the principall. But going to disarme those two excellent Knights,
we found with no lesse wonder to vs, then astonishment to themselues, that
they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, Tydeus and
Telenor; whose adventure (as afterwarde we made that vngratious wretch
confesse) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince Leonatus had by his fathers death succeeded in the
kingdome of Galatia, he (forgetting all
former injuries) had receiued that naughtie Plexirtus into a streight
degree of fauour, his goodnesse being as apt to be deceiued, as the
others crafte was to deceiue. Till by plaine proofe finding, that the
vngratefull man went about to poyson him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse
to be overme, not by iustice it selfe: but calling him to him, vsed wordes to
this purpose. Plexirtus (said he) this wickednesse is founde by thee. No good
deedes of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counsell
me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing, but as daungerous, as
wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remembring what fathers
sonne thou arte. But since it is the violence of ambition, which perchaunce
puls thee from thine owne judgement, I will see, whether the satisfying that,
may quiet the ill working of thy spirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie of
Trebisonde; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this
crowne, now vniustly possessed, and as vniustly abused by those, who haue
neither title to holde it, nor vertue to vse it. To the conquest of that for thy
selfe I will lende thee force, and guie thee my right. Go therfore, and with
lesse vnnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be possible,
learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forsworne excuses with false-meant promises,
gladly embraced the offer: and hastilie sending backe for those two
Brothers (who at that time were with vs succouring the gratious Queen
Erona) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obteyned the conquest of that
goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gauë them such an authentic,
that though he reigned, they in effect ruled, most men honouring them, because they onely deserved honour; and many, thinking therein to please Plexirtus, considering how much he was bound vnto them: while they likewise (with a certaine sincere boldenesse of selfe-warranting friendship) accepted all openly and plainly, thinking nothing should euer by Plexirtus be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could co[n]sttrue no other end of me[n]s doings, but self seking) sode[n]ly feared what they could doo; and as sodainely suspected, what they would doo, and as sodainely hated them, as hauing both might, and minde to doo. But dreading their power, standing so strongly in their owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open way against them; and as harde it was to take a secrete, they being so continually followed by the best, & euery way hablest of that region: and therfore vsed this diuelish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most wicked man) to turne their owne friedship toward him to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the new King of Pontus, neuer since he succoured Leonatus and vs, to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderstand that of late there had passed secrete defiance betweene them, to meete priuately at a place apointed. Which though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himself weake by some counterfait infirmitie, the day drawing neere, he requested each of them to go in his stead; making either of the sweare, to keep the matter secret, ever ech fro[m] other, deliuering the selfe same particularities to both, but that he told Tydeus, the King would meet him in a blew armour; & Telenor, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subtiltie (as if it had bene so apointed) caused Tydeus to take a black armour, & Telenor a blew; appointing them waies how to go, so as he knew they should not meet, til they came to the place appointed, where each had promised to keep silence, lest the King should discouer it was not Plexirtus: and there in await had he laied these murtherers, that who ouerliued the other, should by them be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselues by themselues were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose loue was no lesse, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull lamentation, when they knew their miseeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo vnto them) striuing who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breastes for not sooner suffering: detesting their vnfortunately-spent time in hauing serued so vngrateful a Tyraunt: and accusing their folly in hauing beleued, he could faithfully loue, who did not loue faithfulnes:
wishing vs to take heed, how we placed our good wil vpon any other ground, then proove of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a sausive harte; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beseeching vs to leaue the cure of him that besought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselues, and vs, no possibilitie, they desired to be joined; and so embracing and cruaying that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselues, they gaue vs a most sorrowfull spectacle of their death; leauing fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull hertes, we caused those bodies to be conueyed to the nexte towne of Bythinia, where we learning thus much (as I haue tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to co[n]clude his history, with his owne well-deserued death.

CHAP. 23.

1 Zelmanes griefe for Plexirtus fault. 2 Otauues, and his Gyants warre on Pontus. 3 Plexirtus endaungered, needes helpe of the dead brothers. 4 Zelmane thought-sicke, vnmaskes her selfe. 5 Her dying teares 6 and last requestes. 7 Musidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to saue Plexirtus. 8 The sourse and course of his deaths-doome, 9 stayed by Pyrocles. 10 The combat of Pontus well ended. 11 The Asian Princes meeting, to honour the two Greekes.
slaine by Musidorus, in the battaile of the six Princes) had entred vpo[n]
the kingdome of Pontus, partly vpon the pretences he had to the crowne,
but principally, because he would reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we
loued) the losse of his brother: thinking (as indeede he had cause) that
wheresoever we were, hearing of his extremitie, we would come to relieue
him; in spite whereof he doubted not to preuaile, not onely vpon the
confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially because he had in his
compny two mighty Giants, sonnes to a couple whom we slue in the same
realm: they hauing bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned,
willingly entered into his seruice, hating (more then he) both vs, and that
King of Pontus. We therefore withall speede went titherwarde, but by the
way this fell out, which whensoever I remember without sorrow, I must
forget withall, all humanitie.

Poore Daiphantus fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquere the
delicacie of her constitution, and force her selfe to
waite on me: till one day going towarde Pontus, we met one, who in
great hast went seeking for Tydeus & Telenor, whose death as yet was
not knowne vnto the messenger; who (being their seruant and knowing
how deerely they loued Plexirtus) brought them word, how since their
departing, Plexirtus was in pre[se]nt daunger of a cruel death, if by the
valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were not reskewed:
we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he should now to his losse
finde what an vnprofitable treason it had bene vnto him, to dismember
himselfe of two such friendes) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to
make him know his masters destruction, by the falshood of Plexirtus.

But the griefe of that (finding a bodie alreadie brought to the last degree of
weakenesse) so ouerwhelmed the little
remnant of the spirits left in Daiphantus, that she fell sodainely into
deadly soundings; neuer comming to her selfe, but that withall she
returned to make most pittifull lamentations; most straunge vnto vs,
because we were farre from ghessing the ground thereof. But finding her
sicknesse such, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al hast
possible to conuey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a
bed, both we, & she might find in herselxe, that the harbinger of ouer-hastie
death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which she vndoubtedly
feeling, with a weake chearefulnes, shewed co[m]fort therin; and then
desiring vs both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be present; with
pale, and yet (euen in palenes) louely lippes, Now or neuer, and neuer indeed,
but now it is time for me (said she) to speake: and I thanke death which gaue
me leaue to discouer that, the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the
 sharpest spur, that hath hasted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and
especially you my Lord and master, Pyrocles that your page Daiphantus is
the vnfortunat Zelmane, who for your sake caused my (as vnfortunate) louter,
and cosen, Palladius, to leaue his fathers court, and co[n]sequently, both him
& my Aunt his mother, to loose their liues. For your sake my selfe haue become, of a Princesse a Page: and for your sake haue put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you judge not more mercifully) modestie. We were amazed at her speach, and the[n] had (as it were) new eyes giue vs to perceve that which before had bene a present stra[n]ger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of Zelmane, who before we had knowen in the court of Iberia. And sorrow and pittie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the best I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recovery.

But she that had inward ambassadors from the tyra[n]t that should shortly oppresse her. No, my deere master (said she) I neither hope nor desire to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (& with that she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering manie wayes my vnworthines. It sufficeth me that the strange course I haue take[n], shall to your remembrance, witnesse my loue: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would discouer my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether vnmodest. Thinke of me so, deare Master, and that thought shal be my life: and with that, languishingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (said she) euen by these dying eies of mine (which are onely sorrie to dye, because they shall lose your sight) and by these pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my sex, now in their short curles, the testimonie of my seruitude) and by the seruice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes, though ye cannot with loue. And whensoever ye shall make any other Ladie happie with your placed affectio[n], if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princesse of my life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her manners, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so pearced me, that I, though I had diuerse griefes before, yet me thought I neuer felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth all resolution. For I coulde not chuse, but yeeld to the weakenes of abundant weeping; in trueth with such griefe, that I could willingly at that time haue chaunged liues with her.

But when she saw my teares, O God (said shee) howe largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests vnto you. I besought her to doo, vowing the performance, though my life were the price therof. She shewed great ioy: The first (said she) is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you haue iustly conceiued against him, and for this once succour, him out of the daunger wherin he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you, whensoever you remember him to be the faultie Plexirtus, remember withall that he is Zelmanes father. The second is, that when you come into Greece, you will take vnto your selfe this name (though vnlucky) of Daiphantus, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shal I be sure, you shall haue cause to remember me: and let it please your noble cousin to be...
called Palladius, that I doo that right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet liue vpon the earth in so excellent a person: and so betwene you, I trust sometimes your vnluckie page shall be (perhaps with a sigh) mencioned. Lstly, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your own countrie) you cause my bones to be conueied thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for such a suter; which yet she so earnestly craued, that I was faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing me, & often desiring me not to condemne her of lightnesse, in mine armes she deliuered her pure soule to the purest place: leauing me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and sorow could make an honest harte. For I must confesse for true, that if my starres had not wholy reserued me for you, there els perhaps I might haue loued, & (which had bene most strange) begun my loue after death: whereof let it be the lesse marvaile, because somwhat shee did resemble you: though as farre short of your perfectio[n], as her selfe dying, was of her flourishing: yet somthing there was, which (when I saw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my reme[m]brance, and made my harte as apte to receiue the wounde, as the power of your beauty with vnresistable force to pearce.

But we in wofull (& yet priuat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was presentlie to be succoured, or by death to passe the neede of succour. Therfore we determined to diuide our selues; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and Musidorus toward the King of Pontus, who stood in no lesse need then immediate succour, and euen readie to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him, who after some enquirie found vs, giuing vs to vnderstand, that he trusting vpon vs two, had apointed the combat betweene him & vs, against Otaues, and the two Gyants. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour Plexirtus, & be there, where my honour was not onely gaged so far, but (by the straunge working of vniust fortune) I was to leaue the[m] standing by Musidorus, whom better then my selfe I loued, to go saue him whom for iust causes I hated. But my promise giuen, & giuen to Zelmane, & to Zelmane dying, preuailed more with me, then my friendship to Musidorus: though certainly I may affirme, nothing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because Musidorus himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heauy mindes (more careful each of others successe, the[n] of our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I understood Plexirtus was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely gouerning a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other soueraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to Plexirtus, grew for a kinsman of his, who he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he raigned in Galatia, he fou[n]d him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother Leonatus. This old Knight,
still thirsting for revenge, used (as the way to it) a policy, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had married Zelmanes mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of Armenia; where (as he was comming to winne favour) he obtained great good liking of Artaxia, which he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he falsely got his fathers king-dome; and then neglected his former love: till thrown out of that (by our means) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in Trebisonde, understanding that Artaxia by her brothers death was become Queen of Armenia, he was hotter then euer, in that pursuit, which being understood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as might be written from Artaxia, entreating his present (but very priuie) repaire therether, giving him faithfull promise of presente mariage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfully, and publiquely protested, that she would neuer marrie any, but some such Prince who woulde giue sure proofe, that by his meanes we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to iudge hopes) bitte hastely at the baite, and in priuate maner poasted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruell enough, if any thing may be both cruell and just. For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliver him to be devoured by a monstrous beast, of most ugly shape, armed like a Rhinoceros, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre; whom he hauing kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastly monster with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any so well loued him, as to venture their liues against this beast, for him, if they ouercame, he should be saued: not caring how many they were (such confidence he had in the monsters strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of Tydeus and Telenor, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principall instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if Zelmane had known what danger I should haue passed, she would rather haue let her father perishe, then me to haue bidden that aduenture. But my word was past, and truely, the hardines of the enterprise, was not so much a bitte, as a spurre vnsto me; knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that Plexirtus should be deliuered if I were victorious, I undertooke the combatte: and (to make shorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakenes blessed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I slewe that monster, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order giuen, to haue the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of Asia. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loued me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imploied to
saue a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he
deliuere, and accompanied me to the kingdome of Pontus, whether I would
needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance
the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had
bene thus finished.

The vertuous Leonatus vnderstanding two so good friends of his
were to be in that danger, would perforce be one him selfe: where he
did valiantly, and so did the King of Pontus. But the truth is, that both
they being sore hurt, the incomparable Musldorus finished the combat by the
death of both the Giants, and the taking of Otaues prisoner. To whom as he
gau his life, so he gotte a noble friend: for so he gaue his worde to be, and he
is well knowen to thinke him selfe greater in being subiect to that, then in the
greatnes of his principalitie.

But thither (vnderstanding of our being there) flocked great multitudes of
many great persons, and euen of Princes;
especially those, whom we had made beholding vnto vs: as, the Kings
of Phrygia, Bythinia, with those two hurte, of Pontus and Galatia, and
Otaues the prisoner, by Musidorus set free; and thither came Plexirtus
of Trebisonde, and Antiphilus, then King of Lycia; with as many mo great
Princes, drawen ether by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge
them selues obliged vnto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in
those partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not
scene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo vs the
highest honors, which such persons (who might commaund both purses and
inventions) could perfourme. All from all sides bringing vnto vs right royall
presents (which we to auoide both vnkindnes, and im-portunitie, liberally
receiued,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from vs, their
crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with many other excessiue
honors, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe
vnto you.

CHAP. 24.

1 The causes and provisions of the Princes embarking for Ar-
cadia, 2 Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by
one, 3 attempted by another of his ministers. 4 Sedition and
slaughter in the shippe about it. 5 Their shipwrack by fire.
6 Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea.
7 The amarous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe
storie, both broken of by Miso.
Vt wee quickly aweary thereof, hasted to Greece-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I understooode that Anaxius with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to Peloponnesus where from Court to Court he made enquyrie of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deedes, as might hap to aucthorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this countrey in our way, so renowned ouer the worlde, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it Argalus and Amphialus (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent iudges, that speake thereof, account this countrie as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed mouing vs to come by this land, we embarked our selues in the next porte, whether all those Princes (sauing Antiphilus who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from Erona) conueied vs. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by Plexirtus, who made all thinges so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repe[n]tance in his eies, friendship in his gesture, & vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete Zelmane to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to fauour; perswading our selues with a youthfull credulitie, that perchance things were not so euil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous Leonatus, who with the king of Po[n]tus, would haue come with vs, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdomes) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleets to guard vs: but we, that desired to passe secretly into Greece, made them leaue that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing vnto us. But so co[m]mitting our selues to the vncertaine discretio[n] of the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to Greece, to take the names of Daiphantus and Palladius, as well for our owne promise to Zelmane, as because we desired to come vnknowne into Greece) left the Asian shore full of Princely persons, who euen vpon their knees, recommended our safeties to the deuotion of their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfaithfulncs) as Plexirtus.

So hauing sailed almost two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had seene of great trust with Plexirtus, and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto us, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentaunce, began to tell vs, that he had taken such a loue
ven to vs (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a seruaunt, and a seruaunt of such trust about Plexirtus, as that he had committed ven to him euen those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reueale at this time a most pernitious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that Plexirtus (in hope thereby to haue Artaxia, endowed with the great Kingdome of Armenia, to his wife) had giuen him order, when we were neere Greece, to frnde some opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now sirs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poysoned with such a mischiefe: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippe, Plexirtus hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of Artaxia. And my selfe, (before the consideration of your excellencies had drawne loue and pittie into minde) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischiefe. Therefore, I wishe you to stand vpon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see (if it come to the pushe) by me perfourmed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deserued, and from that time would no more disarme our selues, nor the one sleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: so that it delaied the going forwarde of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then prouidence, which made vs so behaue our selues.

But when we came within halfe a daies sayling of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done. Then (and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Councellour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) disswading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if Plexirtus bad him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, aliue or dead; encouraging the with the spoile of vs, which he said, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich iweels. But the Councellour (according to his promise) commanded them they should not com[m]it such a villany, protesting that he would sta[n]d betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) the we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gaue him a sore blow vpon the head, who honestly did the best he could to reuenge himselfe.

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischiefe. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was enuironned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the
councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of vs, made draw their swords of our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the uncertainty in such a tumult how to know frie[n]ds from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we neuer perfourmed lesse in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our selues, and succouring them who came for it, draue vs to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against vs, we thought it lesse euill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hiest to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdred persons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driuen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who receiued a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & wish peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceiue hope of liuing, but being lefte aliue: and therefore euery one was willing to make him selfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselues.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the children of Cadmus) we continued still to slay one an other, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to separate, or accidentally while all things were cast vp and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of us, (who onely thought to preserue, or reuenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principall partes of the ship. Then necessitie made vs see, that a common enimy sets at one a ciuill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) streight went to resist that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and deuoure from the sterne, to the wast of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prowe of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preserue life, as long as we could: while truely it was a straunge and ougly sight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were constrained to bide it no longer, but disarming and stripping our selues, and laying our selues vpon
such things, as we thought might help our swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength to beare vs) my cousin and I threw our selues into the Sea. But I had swimme a very little way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the trauaile, and therefore seeing the maste (whose tackleing had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ship, I swamme vnto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a pece of canuas) had honge to the maste. I was glad, because I loued it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship, and of all this mischiefe; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne him selfe vp with that, till he had set him selfe upon the mast. But when I perceiued him, Villaine (said I) doost thou thinke to ouerliue so many honest men, whom thy falsehood hath brought to destruction? with that bestriding the mast, I gat by little and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are wont (if euer you saw that sport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honestie, set him selfe to resist. But I had in short space gotten within him, and (giuing him a sound blowe) sent him to feede fishes. But there my selfe remainde, vntill by pyrates I was taken vp, and among them againe taken prisoner, and brought into Laconia.

But what (said Philoclea) became of your cousin Musidorus? Lost said Pyrocles. Ah my Pyrocles, said Philoclea, I am glad I haue take[n] you. I perceiue you louers do not alwaies say truely: as though I know not your cousin Dorus, the sheepeheard? Life of my desires (saide Pyrocles) what is mine, euen to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare Pyrocles, I lo[n]g to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-warde is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet Philoclea (said Pyrocles) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leysure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale vpon? Is my loue quiet inough to be an historian? Deare Princesse, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himselfe. But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her desire (once for euer) might serue, that no spotte might disgrace that loue which shortly she hoped shold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, til she threatned anger. And then the poore louer durst not, because he durst not. Nay I pray thee, deare Pyrocles (said she) let me haue my story. Sweet Princesse (said he) giue my thoughts a litle respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the lesse harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene Erona was betraied into such da[n]ger, and why Plangus sought me. For in deede, I should pitie greatly any mischance fallen to that Princesse. I will, said Philoclea smiling, so you giue me your worde, your handes shall be quiet auditours. They shal, said he,
because subject. Then began she to speak, but with so prettie and delightfull a majestick, when she set her countenaunce to tell the matter, that Pyrocles could not chuse but rebell so far, as to kishe her. She would haue pul’d her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fedde vpon her wordes: but shee gate away. Howe will you haue your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (said he) will I reuenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by Miso: who taking her time, while Basilius backe was turned, came vnto them: and told Philoclea, she deserued she knewe what, for leauing her mother, being euill at ease, to keepe companie with straungers. But Philoclea telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandemet, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.

1 Gynecias diuining dreame. 2 Her passionate ielousie in actions, 3 speach, and 4 song described. 5 Her troubling Philoclea and Zelmane, 6 The rebels troubling her. 7 Rebels resisted by Zelmane. 8 Zelmane assisted by Dorus. 9 Dorus and Zelmanes fiue memorable strokes.

O went vp Miso to Gynecia, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molestted her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor treadsafely going forward. In this case she thought Zelmane, being vpon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and easie in apperance, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, Zelmane was vanished, and she found nothing but a dead bodie like vnto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was readie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes, and said, Gynecia, leaue all; for here is thy onely rest.

With that she awaked, crying very loud, Zelmane, Zelmane. But remembring her selfe, and seeing Basilius by, (her guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected) she turned her call, and called for Philoclea. Miso forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at Basilius, as though she would speake though she died for it) tolde Gynecia, that her daughter had bene a whole houre togethier in secrete talke with Zelmane: And (sayes she) for my part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are brought vp in such awe) though I tolde her of your pleasure sufficiently. Gynecia, as if she had heard her last doome pronounced agaynst
her, with a side-looke and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde (said she)
what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? Basilius (that aymed
nothing at the marke of her suspition) smillingly tooke her in his armes,
sweete wife (said he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but they must
be youthes of other mettall, then Zelmane, that can endaunger her. O but;
cryed Gynecia, and therewith she stayed: for then indeede she did suffer a
right conflict, betwixt the force of loue, and rage of iealousie. Manie times
was she about to satisfie the spite of her minde, and tell Basilius, how she
knewe Zelmane to be farre otherwise then the outwarde appearance. But those
many times were all put backe, by the manifolde obiections of her vehement
loue. Faine she would haue barde her daughters happe, but loth she was to cut
off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set vppon a wager of
quicke rysing, as weake as she was, she gat vp; though Basilius, (with a
kindnesse flowing onely from the fountaine of vnkindnesse, being in deede
desirous to winne his daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it,
swearing he sawe sickenesse in her face, and therefore was loath she should
aduenture the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie Gynecia, possessed with; those deuils of
Loue and iealousie, did rid herselwe from
her tedious husbande: and taking no body with her, going toward the
[m]; O iealousie (said she) the phrensie of wise folkes, the well-wishing
spite, and vnkinde carefulnesse, the selfe-punishment for others faults,
and selfe-miserie in others happiness, the cousin of enuie, daughter of loue,
& mother of hate, how couldest thou so quietly get thee a seate in the vnquiet
hart of Gynecia, Gynecia (said she sighing) thought wise, and once vertuous?
Alas it is thy breeders power which plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie
of affection, that works the chilling accesse of thy feuer, in such sort, that
nature giues place; the growing of my daughter seemes the decay of my
selfe; the blessings of a mother turne to the curses of a competitor; and the
faire face of Philoclea, appeares more horrible in my sight, then the image of
death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought tooke a right
measure of her present mind.

With two strange fires of equall heate possesst,
The one of Loue, the other iealousie,
Both still do worke, in neither finds I rest:
For both, alas, their strengthes together tie:
The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.
    Loue wakes the iealous eye least thence it moues:
    The iealous eye, the more it lookes, it loues.

These fires increase: in these I dayly burne:
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:
My louely ioyes to dolefull ashes turne:
Their flames mount vp, my powers prostrate lie:
They live in force, I quite consumed die.
One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:
The fuell small: how be the fires so great?

But her vnleasured thoughtes ran not ouer the ten first wordes; but going
with a pace, not so much too fast for her
bodie, as slowe for her minde, she found them together, who after Misos
departure, had left their tale, and determined what to say to Basilius. But
full abashed was poore Philoclea, (whose conscience nowe began to
knowe cause of blushing) for first salutation, receyuing an eye from her
mother, full of the same disdainefull scorne, which Pallas shewed to poore
Arachne, that durst contende with her for the prize of well weauing: yet did
the force of loue so much rule her, that though for Zelmanes sake she did
detest her, yet for Zelmanes sake she vsed no harder words to her, then to bid
her go home, and accompany her solitarie father.

Then began she to display to Zelmane the storehouse of her deadly desires,
when sodainly the confused rumor of a
mutinous multitude gaue iust occasion to Zelmane to breake of any such
conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices they
heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could,
towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces,
they were ouertaken by an vnruuly sort of clownes, and other rebels, which
like a violent floud, were caried, they themselues knewe not whether. But
assoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged
beastes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to
runne against them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a
great aduancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their
mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; some, Kill;
some, Saue: but euen they that cried saue, ran for companie with them that
meant to kill. Euerie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief
Captain, that was most ragefull.

Zelmane (whose vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her sword,
which vpon those il-armed churls gieuing as
many wounds as blowes, & as many deaths almost as wounds
(lightning courage, and thundering smart vpon them) kept them at a bay,
while the two Ladies got theselues into the lodge: out of the which,
Basilius (hauing put on an armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie
among his subiects, or at lest, to aduenture his life with his deare mistresse, to
who[m] he brought a shield, while the Ladies tremblingly attended the issue
of this dangerous aduenture. But Zelmane made them perceiue the ods
betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with such a nimble stayednes, and such an
assured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow had
her sword in his guts.
And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased by the comming of Dorus, who hauing been making of hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; and hauing streight represented before the eies of his carefull loue, the perill wherein the soule of his soule might be, he went to Pamelas lodge, but found her in a caue hard by, with Mopsa and Dametas, who at that time would not haue opened the entrie to his father. And therfore leauing them there (as in a place safe, both for being strong, and vnknowen) he ranne as the noise guyded him. But when he saw his friend in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage) made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with that ouerthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword from him, and withall, helpt him from euer being ashamed of losing it. Then lifting vp his braue head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the earth, how euill their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the verie killing wearying them (fearing, lest in long fight they should be conquered with coquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in such sort, that still their terror went forwarder like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulles backe by the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull imbracement) though his pace be backwarde, his gesture is foreward, his teeth and eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the advancing: so guided they themselues homeward, neuer stepping steppe backward, but that they proved themselues masters of the ground where they stept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who fetching his courage onelie from their going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to Zelmane. But as he came within her distace, turning his swerd very nicely about his crown, Basilius, with a side blow, strake of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters daughter, and therfore not a little grieued for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because he had hard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleaue on againe. But as his hand was on the grounde to bring his nose to his head, Zelmane with a blow, sent his head to his nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother to him in a cup of wine) & lifted vp a great leauer, calling Zelmane all the vile names of a butcherly eloquence. But she (letting slippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters remembrance had serued. O (said a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitch-forke at Dorus: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it ouerrunne his feet, so that he fell withall, just betwene the legs of Dorus: who setting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the
other which took it very unkindly, to feel such newes before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But Dorus (leaving the miller to vomit his soul out in wine and blood) with his two-hand sword strake of another quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed he was grown a couple, and (interpreting it he should be married) had brag'd of his dream that morning among his neighbors. But that blow astonished quite a poor painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfeit the skirmishing between the Centaures and Lapithes, and had been very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more lively to express them; and this morning (being caried by the stream of this company) the foolish fellow was even delighted to see the effect of blows. But this last, (hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still, while Dorus (with a turne of his sword) strake of both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with never a hand to perform his skill.

CHAP. 26.

1 Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie. 2 A bone of division cast by her, 3 and caught by them. 4 Her pacificatorie oration. 5 The acceptation and issue of it.

In this manner they recovered the lodge, and gave the rebels a face of wood of the out-side. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to get themselves entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe fear with love, especially Philoclea, who ever caught hold of Zelmane, so (by the follie of love) hindering the help which she desired. But Zelmane seeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of those villains still increasing, and their madnesse still increasong with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnused boldenesse, and with danger to auoide danger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (Dorus and Basilius standing redie for her defence) she issued againe among them. The blows she had dealt before (though all in generall were hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them soudainly ouer-neere her, so that she had time to gette vp to the judgement-seate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that country) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand vnto them, & withall, speaking aloud, that she had something to say vnto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries; and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the country sort, and was caught in a little affection towards Zelmane) hoping by this kindnesse to have some
good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I sweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we should shewe our selues so vnciuill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say little. His sententious speech so preuailed, that the most parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulnes, & such a quiet magnanimitie represented in her face in this vttermost perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks vpon her, in this sorte began vnto them.

It is no small comfort vnto me (said she) hauing to speake something vnto you for your owne behoofs, to find that I haue to deale with such a people, who shew indeed in theselesues the right nature of valure, which as it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subiect of their wrath, doth of it self vnloked-for offer it self into their hands, it makes the at lest take a pause before they determine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to say vnto you; that your Prince Basilius himselfe in person is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, who a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but because she would haue them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I sent vnto you, as fro[m] a Prince to his well approoued subjectts, nay as from a father to beloued children, to know what it is that hath bred iust quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way wro[n]ged you? what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulnes) he commaunds you presently to set downe, & to choose among your selues some one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes vnto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) asswaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demau[n]ds that he might haue Zelmane for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made such a confused Miming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of co[n]mons: some would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. Al cried out to haue new coucellers: but when they should think of any new, they liked the[m] as well as any other, that they could reme[m]ber, especially they would haue the treasure so looked vnto, as that he should neuer neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarieties. For the Artisans, they would haue corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so stil: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The cou[n]trimen demaunded that every man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like
of. The peasa[n]ts would haue the Gentleme[n] destroied, the Citizens
(especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that liued most on
Gentlemen) would but haue them reformed. And of ech side were like
diusions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no
confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one
dispraising such a one, who another praised, & demanding such a one to be
punished, whom the other would haue exalted. No lesse ado was there about
choosing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses,
as Marchants Prentises, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdaining
the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdaining
them: all they scorning the countrimens ignoraunce, & the countrymen
suspecting as much their cu[n]ning: So that Zelmane (finding that their vnited
rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a crossing one of another,
& that the mislike growne among theselues did wel allay the heat against her)
made toke[n]s againe vnto the[m] (as though she tooke great care of their wel
doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake vnto the[m].
They now growne iealous one of another (the stay hauing inge[n]dred diuisio
[n], & diuisio[n] hauing manifested their weaknes) were willing inough to
heare, the most part striuing to show themselues willinger then their fellows:
which Zelmane (by the acquaintaunce she had had with such kinde of
humors) soone perceiuing, with an angerles brauery, & an vnabashed
mildnes, in this manner spake vnto them.

An vnused thing it is, & I think not heretofore seene, ô Arcadians, that a
woma[n] should giue publike cou[n]sel to
men, a stra[n]ger to the cou[n]try people, & that lastly in such a
presence by a priuate person, the regall throne should be possessed. But
the straungeties of your action makes that vsed for vertue, which your
violent necessitie imposeth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to such
men, who haue forgotte al manlike gouernment: a straunger may with reason
instruct such subiects, that neglect due points of subiection: and is it marvaile
this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie
yeares gouernment) dare not shew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare
therefore ô Arcadians, & be ashamed: against who hath this rage bene stirred?
whether haue bene bent these ma[n]full weapons of yours? In this quiet
harmles lodge are harbourd no Argians your ancient enemies, nor Laconians
your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting
vsurers. Here lodge none, but such as either you haue great cause to loue, or
no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princesse, and their
children, but my self. Is it I then, ô Arcadians, against whom your anger is
armed? Am I the marke of your veheme[n]t quarrell? if it be so, that
innocencie shall not be a stop for furie; if it be so, that the law of hospitalitie
(so long & holily obserued among you) may not defend a straunguer fled to
your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiaunt mens
courages can be enflamed to the mischiefe of one silly woman; I refuse not to
make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignatio[n], so it go no further, I am content to pay the great fauours I haue receiued amog you, with my life, not ill deseruing I present it here vnto you, ô Arcadians, if that may satisfie you; rather the[n] you (called ouer the world the wise and quiet Arcadians) should be so vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the rest of your countrie wil abhor; the[n] you should shew your selues so vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of so many yeares peaceable gouernment; or so vnnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any furie over-maistred. For such a hellish madness (I know) did neuer enter into your harts, as to attept any thing against his person; which no successor, though neuer so hatefull, wil ever leaue (for his owne sake) vnreuenged.

Neither can your wonted valour be turned to such a basenes, as in stead of a Prince, deliuered vnto you by so many roiall ancestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subiect, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth rauenous couetousnes, and the newnes of his estate, suspectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more wish vnto you, then to see your owne estate with your owne handes vndermined? O what would your fore-fathers say, if they liued at this time, & saw their offspring defacing such an excellent principalitie, which they with so much labour & bloud so wisely haue establisht? Do you thinke them fooles, that saw you should not enjoy your vines, your cattell, no not your wiues & children, without gouernment; and that there could be no gouernment without a Magistrate, and no Magistrate without obedience, and no obediece where euery one vpon his owne priuate passion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your present example to you. What sweetnes (in good faith) find you in your present condition? what choise of choise finde you, if you had lost Basilius! vnder whose ensigne would you go, if your enimies should inuade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to speake for you, how wil you agree vpo[n] one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tel what, one is troubled, and with that passed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull haruest, but that it was more hote then pleasant? Haue any of you childre[n], that be not sometimes cumbersome? Haue any of you fathers, that be not sometime weerish? What, shall we curse the Sonne, hate our children, or disobey our fathers? But what need I vse these wordes, since I see in your countenances (now vertuously settled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your only sakes the gouernme[n]t is embraced. For al what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; iudging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the action. Your grieues, and desires, whatsoever, & whensoever you list, he wil consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to co[n]clude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same loue lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must co[n]fesse ouer-vehement affection: the only continuaunce might prooue a wickednes.
But it is not so, I see very wel, you bega[n] with zeale, & wil end with reuere [n]ce.

The action Zelmane vsed, being beautified by nature and appareld with skill, her gestures beyng such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they serued as a shadow, to make the picture more liuely and sensible, with the sweete cleernesse of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felte, whose beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gaue such a way vnto her speach through the rugged wildernesse of their imaginations, who (besides they were striken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a co[n]fused muttring, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leaue: most of them could haue bene co[n]tent, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But Zelmane thinking it no euil way in such mutinies, to giue the mutinous some occasio[n] of such seruice, as they might thinke (in their own iudgement) would counteruaile their trespasse, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which she feared might begin to wauer, Loiall Arcadians (said she) now do I offer vnto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that haue taken armes for the Princes safetie, let them turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person.  O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie onely doth guide to well doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and ech may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie felow among them, named Clinias, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of Zelmanes mouth, but that there were some shouts of ioy, with, God saue Basilius, and diuers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

1 A verball craftie coward purtrayed in Clinias. 2 His first raising, and with the first, relenting in this mutinie, 3 puished by the farmer. 4 The vprore reenforced, & weakned by themselues. 5 Clinias-his Sinon-like narration of this dru[n]ken rebellions original. 6 The kings order in it.
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

His *Clinias* in his youth had been a scholar so far, as to learn rather words than manners, and of words rather plenty then order; and oft had used to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingness of language, acquaintance with many passions, and to frame his face to bear the figure of them: long used to the eyes and ears of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastness; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in private practices.

This fellow was become of near trust to *Cecropia, Amphialus*—his mother, so that he was priy to all the mischievous devises, wherewith she went about to ruin *Basilius*, and his children, for the advancing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his love to be doing, taught him in any evil to be secret; and had by his mistresse been used (ever since the strange retiring of *Basilius*) to whisper rumors into the peoples ears: and this time (finding great aptness in the multitude) was one of the chiefest that set them in the uprore (though quite without the consent of *Amphialus*), who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so have advanced the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiving the flood of their furie began to ebb, he thought it politic to take the first of the tide, so that no man cried louder then he, upon *Basilius*. And some of the lustiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his commandment to lift him up, & then as if he had had a prologue to utter, he began with a nice gravity to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would tear the stars from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowly, that not only *Zelmane*, but *Basilius* might hear him. O unhappy men, more mad then the Giants that would have plucked *Jupiter* out of heaven, how long shall this rage continue? why do you not all throw down your weapons, and submit your selves to our good Prince, our good *Basilius*, the *Pelops* of wisdom, & *Minos* of all good government? when will you begin to believe me, and other honest and faithful subjects, that have done all we could to stop your furie?

The farmer that loved *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speak of conditions, hoping to have gotten great souverainties, & among the rest *Zelmane*: so now perceiving, that the people, once any thing down the hill from their furie, would never stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yielding, and so that he should be nearer fears of punishment, then hopes of such advancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdaining this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefest make-bates, strike him a great wound upon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and
quaking for feare of more.

But as soone as that blow was giuen (as if Æolus had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle,
ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to
him. For being diuided in minds & not diuided in co[m]panies, they that
would yeeld to Basilius were intermingled with the[m] that would not
yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood vpo[n] it; those men to get fauor
of their Prince, conuerted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, &
by a true judgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed the
[n] those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by being so, had
taught them, that they did leade disobediece to the same leaders. And many
times it fel out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger
whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe Zelmane;
and Basilius with Dorus issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those
of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such hauocke
(amo[n]g the rest Zelmane striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as
before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side
were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods vpon the frontiers; where
feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were disciplined for their
dronken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score onely
escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe souldiers, were returned from the
chase, Basilius calling them togither, partly for policy sake, but principally
because Zelmane before had spoken it (which was to him more the a diuine
ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to
their houses, and therafter be more circupect in their proceedings: which
they did most of them with share-marks of their folly. But imagining Clinias
to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him
particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie
had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the trueth of al, sauing what did touch
himself, or Cecropia, first, dipping his hand
in the blood of his wou[n]d, Now by this blood (said he) which is more
dear to me, then al the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your
safety: this to[n]gue (perchance vnfortunate, but neuer false) shall not
now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me most beloued. Then stretching out his
hand, and making vehement countenances the vs hers to his speches, in such
maner of tearms recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-
day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of Enispus, to do
honour to the day, were a four or fiue thousand people (of all conditions, as I
thinke) gathered together, spending al the day in dancings and other
exercises: and when night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare,
and meaning to obserue a wassaling watch all that night for your sake.
Bacchus (the learned say) was begot with thunder: I think, that made him euer
since so full of stur & debate. Bacchus indeed it was which souded the first
trupet to this rude alarum. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to thinke with vice to do honor, & with actiuitie in beastlines to shew abunda[n]ce of loue, made most of the[m] seeke to she[w] the depth of their affectio[n] in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (hauing spent al the night, & some pece of the morning in such reuelling) & imblossed by your absented maner of liuing, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of that grew not to be a subject of their winie conference. I speake it by proffe: for I take witnes of the gods (who neuer leaue periuries vnpunished) that I ofte cried out against their impudency, & (whe[n] that would not serue) stopt mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their blasphemies, till with buffets they forced me to haue mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were mingled with priuate grudges, neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretende some cause of mislike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and saying nothing had his vttermoste prayse in ignoraunce. At the length, your sacred person ( alas why did I liue to heare it? alas how do I breath to vtter it? But your comandement doth not onely enioine obedience, but giue me force: your sacred person (I say) fell to be their table-talke: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatnes, hauing put on the shew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very vn-brideled vse of words hauing increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to codemne their own want of knowledge) they descended (O neuer to be forgotten presumption) to a direct mislike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched constructions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes, change could not impaire) began to say, that your gouernment was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had leuied amog the[m]) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into counsel, that the com[m]ons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opinio[n]s: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tel whether you were not betraied in this place, where you liued? nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see; and if you were here, to know (if Arcadia were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouernement an adherent to the countrie, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (said they) let vs beginne that, which all Arcadia will folowe. Let vs deliuer our Prince from daunger of practises, and our selues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which hauue their force but in our force. Lastly, to haue saide & heard so much, was as da
[n]gerous, as to have attempted: & to have attempted they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These words being spoke (like a furious storme) presently carried away their well inclined brains. What I, and some other of the honester sort could do, was no more, then if with a puffe of breath, one should goe about to make a saile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sounde of so many voices, was the chiefe token of their vnmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battle, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life, to monstrous threatening of your estate; the solemnizing your birthday, tended to have beene the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seekes to hurt, the lesse it considers how to be able to hurt: they neuer weyed how to arm theirselues, but tooke vp euery thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swords, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, converting husbandrie to sooulderie: some caught hold of spittes (things serviceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to use it (as he could) to your mischiefe. Thus armed, thus governed, forcing the vnwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong towards this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolued in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo when he came hether. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthening one euill by another, and so multiplie in it selfe, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preserve you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preserve you for the preservation of Arcadia) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not used for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as mine) and some (I must confess) honest minds, (who alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred part of our dueties?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we have cause to rejoice that we are Arcadians.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: so as Basilius, that was not the sharpest pearcer into masked minds, toke a good liking to him; & so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therfore pitying his wound, willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the shepheards being come (for that day was appointed for their
pastorals) he sent one of them to Philanax, and an other to other principal
noble-men, and cities there abouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore,
and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes & villages neere vnto
him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more security, vpo[n]
the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

CHAP. 28.

1 *The praises of Zelmanes act*.
2 *Dametas his caroll for sa-
ving himself, and his charge.*
3 *Basilius his conference with
Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.)*
4 *His wrong-construfiion of it.*
5 *His hymne to Apollo.*
6 *His cour-
ting turnde ouer to tale-telling.*

His, *Clinias* (hauing his eare one way when his eye was an
other) had perceiued; & therefore hasted
away, with mind to tell *Cecropia* that she was to take
some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those
examinations would both discouer, & ruine her: and
so went his way, leauing that little companie with
embracements, and praising of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to shew,
that no decking sets foorth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she
stoode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, euerie angrie
countenance any of them made, seemed a knife layde vpon their owne
throates; so vnspeakable was now their ioy, that they saw (besides her safetie
& their owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her meanes, in whom
they had placed all their delightes. What examples *Greece* could euer alledge
of witte and fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this
action.

But as they were in the midst of those vnfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, ill-
played on, accompanied with a hoarce
voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses, and to be merie in spite
of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noysed song. The song
was this.

*A Hatefull cure with hate to heale:*
*A blooddy helpe with blood to saue:
A foolish thing with fooles to deale:
Let him be bold that bobs will haue.

   But who by meanes of wisdome hie
   Hath saud his charge? it is euen I.

*Let other deck their pride with skarres,*
*And of their wounds make braue lame showes:*
First let them die, then passe the starres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.
  But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
  Who hath sau'd all? it is euon I.

They had soone found it was Dametas, who came with no lesse lifted vp countenance, then if he had passed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point he thought he had perfourmed, in vsing the naturall strength of a caue. But neuer was it his dooing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a great storme there euer fell a fewe droppes before it be fully finished. But Pamela (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Louers hart) vsed this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed aswel for that cause, as being vnquiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepheard had gone through the danger. But Basilius with the sight of Pamela (of whom almost his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was sodainly striken into a deuout kind of admiration, remembrance the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne best, and with the willing blindnessse of affection (because his minde ran wholly vpon Zelmane) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deepely thinking of the matter, one of the shepheards tolde him, that Philanax was already come with a hundred horse in his company. For hauing by chaunce rid not farre of the little desert, he had heard of this vprore, and so was come vpon the spurre (gathering a company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. Basilius was glad of it; but (not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giuing order vnto him of placing garrisons, and examining these matters; and Philanax with humble earnestnesse beginning to entreate him to leaue of his solitarie course (which already had bene so daungerous vnto him) Well (said Basilius) it may be ere long I wil codiscend vnto your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my solitarinesse. But, (said he) doo you remember, how earnestly you wrote vnto me, that I should not be moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution? Full well Sir (answered Philanax) for though it pleased you not as then to let me knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one degree of reputatio[n], it suffised me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you fro[m] your owne course. Well (said Basilius) I will now tell you the worde; which before I thought not good to doo; because when al the euents fall out (as some already haue done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sorte.

Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face
By princely meane be stolne, and yet not lost.
Thy yonger shall with Natures blisse embrace
An vncouth loue, which Nature hateth most.
Both they themselues vnto such two shall wed,
Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;
Why thee (a liuing man) they had made dead.
In thy owne seate a forraine state shall sit.
And ere that all these blowes thy head doo hit,
Thou, with thy wife, adultry shall commit.

For you forsoth (said he) when I told you, that some super-naturall cause
sent me strange visio[n]s, which being co[n]firmed with presagious chaunces,
I had gone to Delphos, & there receiued this answere: you replied to me, that
the onely super-naturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such
melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceipts, apt
to make presages of things, which in the[m]selues were meerly chaungeable:
& with all as I say, you reme[m]ber what you wrot vnto me, touching
authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue some notable triall of the truth therof,
which herafter I wil more largely com[m]unicate vnto you. Only now, know
that the thing I most feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine state
should possesse my throne. For that hath ben done by Zelmane, but not as I
feared, to my ruine, but to my preseruatio[n]. But whe[n] he had once named
Zelmane, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praises
run on in such sort, that (Philanax found) was more exquisite then the only
admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at,
made him shrinke away as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of
importance, which Basilius had enioyned vnto him.

Basilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe construing the oracle,
that in that he said, his elder care should by
Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it was now
perfourmed, since Zelmane had as it were robd from him the care of his
first begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of
it remained. That his younger should with Natures blisse embrace the loue of
Zelmane, because he had so commaunded her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde
it be with as much hate of Nature, for being so hatefull an opposite to the
jealousie hee thought her mother had of him. The sitting in his seate he
deemed by her already perfourmed: but that which most co[m]forted him,
was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should commit
with Zelmane, whom afterwards he should haue to his wife. The point of his
daughters marriage, because it threatned his death withall, he determined to
preuent, with keeping them vnmaried while he liued. But hauing as he
thought, gotten thus much vnderstanding of the Oracle, he determined for
three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to Apollo: and euen then began
with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearely vsed.
Apollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
Which euer shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
Whose lights do euer liue, but in our darkenesse fade;
Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythos skin:
(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakish kinne)
Latonas sonne, whose birth in paine and travaile long
Doth teach, to learne the good what travailes do belong:
In travaile of our life (a short but tedious space)
While brickie houreglas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Give vs foresightfull mindes: giue vs minds to obaye
What foresight tels; our thoughts vpon thy knowledge staye.
Let so our fruites grow vp, that nature be maintainde:
But so our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not staine.
Let this assured holde our judgements overtake,
That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forsake.

Assone as he had ended his deuotion (all the pruilledged shepheards being now come) knowing well inough he might lay
all his care vpon Philanax, he was willing to sweeten the fast of this passed tumult, with some rurall pastimes. For which while the shepheards prepared themselues in their best maner, Basilius tooke his daughter Philoclea aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found Zelmane. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake Zelmane was content to descend from her former resolutio[n], as to heare him, whosoeuer he would speake; & further then that (she said) as Zelmane had not graunted, so she nether did, nor euer would desire. Basilius kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vsed the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sicknes before his onely physition. But Zelmane (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words vnderstand, that the time in respect of the co[m]panie was vnfit for such a parley, & therfore to keep his braines the busier, letting him vnnderstand what she had learned of his daughters, touching Eronas distresse (whom in her travaile she had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for so far as Pla[n]gus had told him; Because she said (& she said truly) she was full of care for that Ladie, whose desart (onely except an ouer-base choise) was nothing agreeable to misfortune. Basilius glad that she would commaund him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the vnfitnesse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.
1 Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie.
2 His vnkinde hating the louing Erona, and fond loving of hating Artaxia. 3 Artaxias trap to take them both. 4 The mans weakenesse; and the womans strength in bearing captiuitie. 5 Plangus loue to her, employed by her to saue Antiphilus, 6 who againe betraies himselfe and them. 7 His execution by women. 8 Plangus hardy attempts to saue Erona, 9 The conditions of her death. 10 Her sorrow for Antiphilus, 11 and Plangus travaile for her: with his crosses, and course therein.

Adame (said he) it is very true, that since yeares enhabled me to iudge what is, or is not to be pitied, I neuer saw anything that more moued me to iustifie a veheme[n]t compassion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceauce you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had so pulled downe, as to lie vnder sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subiect, which I perceiue you haue seene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you, It may please you to vndersta[n]d, since it pleaseth you to demau[n]d, that Antiphilus being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes Musidorus & Pyrocles (led the[n]ce by the challenge of Anaxius, who is now in these prouinces of Greece, making a dishonorable enquirie after that excellent prince Pyrocles alreadie perished) Antiphilus (I say) being crowned, and deliuered from the presence of those two, whose vertues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had not stre[n]gth of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discouering what maner of man he was. But streight like one caried vp to so hie a place, that he looseth the discerning of the ground ouer which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyo [n]d the leuell of his owne discourse, that remembring only that himselfe was in the high seate of a King, he coulde not perceiue that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at injuries. But imagining no so true propertie of souereigntie, as to do what he listed, and to list whatsoeuer pleased his fansie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniscourt, where his subiects should be the balles; not in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far vpon himselfe, that what he did was liked of euery bodie: nay, that his disgraces were fauours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an vnknowvne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as euerie winde of passions puffed him. Whereto nothing helped him better, then that poysonous sugar of flatterie: which some
vsed, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning vpon the greatest; others secretly hating him, and disdayning his great rising so suddenly, so vndeseruedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his overthrow; like the bird that caries the shell-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall. But his minde (being an apt matter to receiue what forme their amplifying speeches woulde lay vpon it) daunced so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthyest, and best beloved, that euer gaue honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out vnblushing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, vniustly dispossesst by Eronas auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selfe, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his basenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise Erona, as of whom he had receiued no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres manage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an vnlawfull law of hauing mo wiues then one, he still keeping Erona, vnder-ha[n]d, by message sought Artaxia, who no lesse hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choise) the naughtie King Plexirtus, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of Armenia, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gotte eies to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of al the Princes of Asia being to do honour to the neuer sufficiently praised Pyrocles & Musidorus, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bene yong master among those great estates, as he was amog his abusing vnderlings. But so many valorous Princes, in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing vpon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-co[m] fortlese flatterers (perswading him, it was enuie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him hast away fro[m] that company, & without further delay appointed the meeting with Artaxia; so incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright shining of his roialty, that he could thinke such a Queene could be content to be joined-patent with an other to haue such an husband. Poore Erona to all this obeied, either vehemecy of affection making her stoop to so ouerbase a seruitude, or astonished with an vnlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful resolutio[n], or (as many times it falles out euen in great harts when they can accuse none but the[m]selues) desperatly bent to maintaine it. For so went she on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-set affection, she was brought to write to Artaxia, that she was content, for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and euen woo Artaxia for him.

But Artaxia (mortally hating them both for her brothers sake) was content
to hide her hate, til she had time to shewe it: and pretending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of vertue, *Musidorus & Pyrocles*, euen met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-side, druien to what they did by the euer-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she promised nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promised himselfe all that she woulde haue him thinke. And so a solemne enter-view was appointed. But (as the Poets say) *Hymen* had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For *Artaxia* laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since *Antiphilus* thought she ouerran him in loue) when he came euen ready to embrace her, shewing rather a countenaunce of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (having much aduantage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the sword; but such as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* she caused him and *Erona* both to be put in irons, hasting backe toward her brothers tombe, vpon which she ment to sacrifice them; making the loue of her brother stand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diuersitie in them two quickly discouered it selfe for the bearing of that affliction. For *Antiphilus* that had no greatnesse but outwarde, that taken away, was ready to fall faster then calamitie could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to giue his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manie promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But *Erona* sadde in-deede, yet like one rather used, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the ioyes of her hart alreadie broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for *Antiphilus*, remembiring his guiltlesnesse, being at that time prisoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant princes slue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to iudge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by her birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made this noble prince *Plangus*, who (neuer almost from his cousin *Artaxia*) was nowe present at *Eronaes* taking, to perceyue the shape of louelinesse more perfectly in wo, then in ioyfulnesse (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeing to like; and liking to loue; and louing straight to feele the most incident effects of loue, to serue and preserue. So borne by the hastie tide of short leysure, he did hastily deliuer together his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mentioned her life, to which she had not leisure to attend) desired him if he loued her, to shew it, in finding some way to saue *Antiphilus*. For her, she found the world but a wearisom stage vnto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought
him, not to cast his love in so unfruitful a place, as could not love it selfe: but for a testimonie of constancie, and a suitablenes to his word, to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her sake Antiphilus were saued. He tolde me how much he argued against her tendering him, who had so vngratefully betraied her, and foolishly cast away himselfe. But perceiving she did not only bend her very goodwits to speake for him against her-selfe, but when such a cause could be allied to no reason, yet love would needs make it-self a cause, & barre her rather from hearing, then yeeld that she should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in whom the power of Loue (as they say of spirits) was subject to the love in her, with griefe consented, & (though backwardly) was diligent to labor the help of Antiphilus: a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to Erona, but enuied as a possessor of Erona. Yet Loue swore, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a servant to his riuall. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading Artaxia, which the authority of so neere, and so vertuous a kinsman would giue vnto him. But she to whom the eloquence of hatred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, rejected all such motions; but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of Tiridates (which was very nere) to execute Antiphilus, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to vse the same rigor toward's Erona. Plangus much grieued (because much loving) attempted the humors of the Lycians, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is used in the game of kingdoms) had no sooner his mistres in captiuitie, but he had usurped her place, & making her odious to her people, because of the vnfit election she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to Artaxia, perswading the iusticing her, because that vniustice might giue his title the name of iustice. Wanting that way, Plangus practised with some deere friends of his, to saue Antiphilus out of prison, whose day because it was much neerer then Eronaes, & that he wel found, she had twisted her life upon the same thread with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: & to that end having prepared all matters as well as in such case he could, where Artaxia had set many of Tiridates old servants to haue well-marking eyes, he conferred with Antiphilus, as (by the auffhoritie he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time and maner, how he should by the death of some of his iaylors escape.

But all being well ordered, and Plangus willinglie putting himselfe into the greatest danger, Antiphilus (who, like a bladder, sweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that being out, was so abjected, as apt to be trode on by euery bodie) when it came to the point, that with some hazard, he might be in apparant likelihoode to auoide the uttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he should) gat a conceite, that
with bewraying his practise, he might obtaine pardon: and therefore, euen a little before Plangus should have come vnto him, opened the whole practise to him that had the charge, with vnpityed teares idly protesting, he had rather die by Artaxias commaundement, then against her will escape: yet begging life vpon any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she woulde lay vpon him. His keeper provided accordingly, so that when Plangus came, he was like, himself to haue bene entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discovered, he retired; and (calling his friendes about him) stood vpon his guard, as he had good cause. For, Artaxia (accounting him most vngrateful considering that her brother and she, had not onely preserued him against the malice of his father, but euer vsed him much liker his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the martiall men had gotten so great loue, that he could not onely keepe himself from the malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of Eronas aduersitie.

But for the succour of Antiphilus he could gette no bodie to ioyne with him, the contemt of him hauing not bene able to qualifie the hatred; so that Artaxia might easilie vpon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble suite of all the women of that citie) to deliuer him to their censure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a lawe of Polygamie, after many tortures, forste him to throwe himselfe from a high Pyramis, which was built ouer Tiridates tombe, and so to end his fallse-harted life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

But Plangus well perceiuing that Artaxia staied onely for the appointed day, that the faire Eronas bodie, (consumed to ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeply her brothers death was engrauen in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friendes, who[m] his vertue (though a stranger) had tied vnto him, by force to giue her libertie. Contrariwise, Artaxia, to whom Anger gaue more courage then her sexe did feare, vsed her regall authoritie (the most she could) to suppressse that sedition, and haue her will: which (she thought) is the most princely thing that may be. But Plangus, who indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour) that are trained in the schoole of Mars, in a conflict ouerthrew Artaxias power, though of far greater number: and there toke prisoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she deerly affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune (whatsoever it was) that Erona did: & happy was that threatning for her; for els Artaxia had hastened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-me[n] of that countrie interposing the[m] selues) it was agreed, that all persons els fullie pardoned, and all prisoners (except Erona) deliuered, she should be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare fro[m] Tiridates death, Pyrocles and Musidorus did not in person combat, & overcome two knights,
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

who she appointed to maintain her quarrell against Erona and them, of hauing by treason destroyed her brother, that the[n] Erona should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be deliuered; but vpon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all toke solemnne oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of Plangus partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condiscended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resist. But Artaxia was more, and vpon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had euen newly receiued newes fro[m] Plexirtus, that vpon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held her selfe sure of the match.

But poore Plangus knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it falles out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them; & then obtained leaue of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite Erona, whom he founde full of desperate sorowe, not suffering, neither his vnwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the naturall conclusion of all worldly acts) either to couer with forgetfulnes, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but euen glorying in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to haue no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie. So that when Plangus came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had seene the death of Antiphilus, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striuing) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe iniured; in steede of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht her to doo) crauing nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of iust hate) beloued Antiphilus.

So that Plangus hauing nothing but a rauisht kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towarde Greece, whether-ward he vnderstooode the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by Artaxia to Plexirtus: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had euer fauoured, so much the rather, as he had perfourmed the conditions of her mariage, in bringing to their deserued end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes, as he might well perceiue, it was by some treason wrought in Plexirtus shippe. whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippe himselfe, and came into Laconia, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shippe was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for Pyrocles and Musidorus, it was assuredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in Greece) would quickly els haue bene a large witnesse to the contrarie. Full of grieve with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sorie for Eronas sake, who now by them could not be relieued. A new aduertisement from Armenia.
ouertooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguish. It was a message
from the Nobleman who had Erona in ward, giuing him to vndersta[n]d, that
since his departure, Artaxia (using the benefite of time) had besieged him in
his castell, demaunding present deliuerie of her, whom yet for his faith giuen,
he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he
foresaw, lo[n]g he should not do for want of victuall, which he had not so
wisely prouided, because he trusted vpon the generall oth taken for two
yeares space: & therfore willed him to make hast to his succour, & come with
no small forces; for all they that were of his side in Armenia, were consumed,
& Artaxia had encreased her might by mariage of Plexirtus, who now
crowned King there, stickt not to glory in the murder of Pyrocles and
Musidorus, as hauing iust cause thereto, in respecl of the deaths of his sister
Andramana, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter Zelmane, all whose
losse he vniustly charged them withal, & now openly stickt not to co[n]fesse,
what a reuenge his wit had brought forth. Plangus much astonished herewith,
bethought himselfe what to doo. For to returne to Armenia was vaine, since
his friends there were vtterly ouerthrowne. The[n] thought he of going to his
father; but he had already (euen since the death of his stepmother, & brother)
attempted the recouering his fauour, & all in vaine. For they, that had before
joined with Andromana to do him the wrong, thought no life for the[m]
if he returned, & therfore kept him stil (with new forged suspicions) odious to
his father. So that Plangus reseruing that for a worke of longer time, then the
sauing of Erona could beare, determined to go to the mighty and good King
Euarchus: who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered
his enimies, but established good gouernment in their countries, he hoped he
might haue present succour of him, both for the iustnes of the cause, &
reuenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murthered. Therefore
with diligence he went to him; & by the way (passing through my country) it
was my hap to find him, the most ouerthrowne ma[n] with griefe, that euer I
hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had Erona at a stake before his eies;
such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the
comfort I could giue him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was
moued not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces
my daughters & I haue deliuered vnto you. Fayne he would haue had succour
of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely
accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great
Euarchus: for my parte hauing had some of his speeches so feelingly in my
memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wise,
in such manner as you haue seene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed
you in this storie; wherein if it well please you to consider, what is the
straunge power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercise
therein the true noblenesse of your judgement, and doo the more right to the
vnfortunate Historian. Zelmane (sighing for Eroneas sake, yet inwardly
comforted in that she assured her selfe, Euarchus would not spare to take in
hande the iust deliuering of her, ioyned with the iust reuenge of his childrens losse) hauing now what she desired of Basilius, to auoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.

The second Eclogues.

He rude tumulte of the Enispians gaue occasion to the honest shepheards to beginne their pastorals this day with a dauce, which they called the skirmish betwixt Reason and Passion. For seuen shepheards (which were named the Reasonable shepheards) joined theselves; foure of them making a square, and the other two going a little wide of either side, like winges for the maine battell; and the seuenth man for-most, like the forlorne hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seuen appassionated shepheards; all keeping the pase of their foote by their voice, and sundry consorted instrume[n]ts they held in their armes. And first, the formost of Reasonable side began to sing.

R. **Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde.**
And the other that met with him answered.

P. **No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine shall be the fields.**

R. *Can Reason then a Tyraunt counted be?*

P. **If Reason will, that Passions be not free.**

R. *But Reason will, that Reason gouerns most.*

P. **And Passion will, that Passion rule the rost.**

R. **Your will is will; but Reason reason is.**

P. **Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.**

R. **Whom Passion leades vnto his death is bent.**

P. **And let him die, so that he die content.**

R. **By nature you to Reason faith haue sworne,**

P. **Not so, but fellowlike together borne.**

R. **Who Passion doth ensue, liues in annoy.**

P. **Who Passion doth forsake, liues void of ioy.**

R. **Passion is blinde, and treads an vnknowne trace.**

P. **Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.**

Then as they approched neerer, the two of Reasons sides, as if they shot at the other, thus sange.

R. **Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?**

P. **And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?**

R. **O foolish thing, which glory doth destroye.**

P. **O glorious title of a foolish toye.**

R. **Weaknes you are, dare you with our strength fight?**

P. **Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.**
R.  *O* sacred *Reason*, *helpe* our *vertuous toiles*.  

P.  *O* Passion, *passe* on *feeble Reasons spoiles*.  

R.  *We with ourselues* abide *a daily strife*.  

P.  *We gladly vse the sweetnes of our life*.  

R.  *But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede*.  

P.  *We now haue peace, your peace we doo not neede*.  

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in stead of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.

R.  *We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood*.  

P.  *Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good*.  

R.  *Though we cannot orecome, our cause is iust*.  

P.  *Let vs orecome, and let vs be vniust*.  

R.  *Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reasons stroke*.  

P.  *What shall we winne by taking Reasons yoke?*.  

R.  *The ioyes you haue shall be made permanent*.  

P.  *But so we shall with griefe learne to repent*.  

R.  *Repent indeed, tut that shall be your blisse*.  

P.  *How know we that, since present ioyes we misse?*.  

R.  *You know it not: of Reason therefore know it*.  

P.  *No Reason yet had euer skill to show it*.  

R.  *Then let vs both to heauenly rules giue place, Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface*.  

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praises of the[m] according to Zelmanes liking; whose vnrstrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free course to the delicate Philoclea, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her ieaulous mother. But Dicus (that had in this time taken a great liking of Dorus for the good partes he found aboue his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subiect which he him selfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus.  Dorus.

**Dorus.**

*Tell me, where is thy wonted motion*

To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?  

*Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy devotion.*  

*For who doth holde his loue in estimation,*  

*To witnes, that he thinkes his thoughts delicious,*  

*Thinks to make ech thing badge of his sweet passion.*  

*But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicous*  

*Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?*  

Dicus.
Who others vertue doubt, themselues are vicious.
Not so; although my mettall were most mutable,
Her beames haue wrought therin most faire impression:
To such a force some chaunge were nothing sutable.

The harte well set doth neuer shunne confession:
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.
   Who glories in his loue, doth make Loue glorious:
But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,
Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his state opprobrious.
   Thou then, that framste both words & voice most skilfully.
Yeeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation,
If Loue tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.

If Sunnie beames shame heauenly habitation;
If three-leau'd grasse seeme to the sheepe vnsauorie,
Then base and sower is Loues most high vocation.
   Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie,
To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slauerie.
   No, no: no wordes ennoble selfe-nobilitie.
As for your doubts; her voice was it deceaued me,
Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.

Thy words well voiced, well gra'ste had almost heaued me
Quite from my selfe to loue Loues contemplation;
Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende bereaued me.
Goe on therefore, and tell vs, by what fashion
In thy owne proofe he gets so straunge possession,
And how possest he strengthens his inuasion?

Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression,
His childhood woorder, prenticeship attention,
His youth delight, his age the soules oppression:
Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in inuention;
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes;
Beautie his boote, his play louers dissention:
His eyes are curious search, but vailde with carefulesse:
His wings desire oft dipt with desperation:
Largesse his hands could neuer skill of sparefulesse.
But how he doth by might, or by persuasion
To conquere, and his conquest how to ratifie,
Experience doubts, and schooles holde disputation.
But so thy sheepe may thy good wishes satisfie
With large increase, and wooll of fine perfection,
So she thy love, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt giue our soules a deare refecction,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.

Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
Whose wounds are salues, whose yokes please more then pleasure doth:
Her staines are beames; vertue the fault she blamed is.
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,
Yet haruest brings. Doth she alas absent herselfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadows cumber not.
But when to giue some grace she doth content herselfe,
O then it shines; then are the heau'ns distributed,
And Venus seemes, to make vp her, she spent herselfe.
Thus then (I say) my mischiefes haue contributed
A greater good by her diuine reflection;
My harms to me, my blisse to her attributed,
Thus she is framde: her eyes are my direction;
Her loue my life; her anger my destruction.
Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.

Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slaue to seruile Sense.
A weake defence where weakenesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearely bought.

If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,
My brest to swords, my soule to hell haue solde
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O beards take heed; for I a woolfe haue found;
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His breast doth fill with earth of others, ioyes,
And laden so puts downe, puld downe destroys.
O sheepheards boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

Which do enuene both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who iudge that honour, which hath scope to slander.

Dorus you wander farre in great reproches
So loue encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.
Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancie
   In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soone may haue some helpe, or change of passion.
   She oft her lookes, the starres her fauour bend to thee:
Fortune store, Nature health, Loue grant perswasion.
   A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,
Thus I commend to thee all our former loue,

Well do I proue, errour lies oft in zeale,
Yet it is seale, though errour, of true hart.
Nought could impart such heates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,
   Whose onely face the little heauen is,
Barred from their chiefest obiect of delightfulnesse,
Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confusions.
   As for thy wish to my enraged spitefulnesse,
The louely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is
Thou mayest loue her that I may see thy sightfulnesse.
   The quiet mind (whereof my selfe empairer is,
As thou doest thinke) should most of all disquiet me
Without her loue, then any mind who fairer is.
   Her onely cure from surfet-woes can diet me:
She holds the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in stormes can quiet me.
   Nay rather then my ease discontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deicted be
From any ioy, which might her griefe occasion.
   With so sweete plagues my happie harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loues protected be.
   Thus for ech change my changelesse hart I fortifie.

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants, especially of
Zelmane, who neuer forgat to giue due com[m]edations to her friend Dorus,
the more to advance him in his pursuete (although therein he had brought his matters to a more wished conclusion then yet she knew of) out starte a iolly yonker, his name was Nico, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And having spied one Pas, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this maner of salutation vpon him, and was with like reverence requited.

Nico.  Dorus. [Pas]

And are you there old Pas? in troth I euer thought, Among vs all we should find out some thing of nought.

And I am here the same, so mote I thrive and thee, Despairde in all this flocke to find a knaue, but thee.

Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind: Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.

My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray, Not like the scrippe thou stol'ste, while Dorcas sleeping lay.

Mine was the scrippe: but thou, that seeming raid with loue, Didst snatch from Cosmas hand her greeny wroughte gloue.

Ah foole; so Courtiers do. But who did liuely skippe, When for a treene-dish stolne, thy father did thee whippe?

In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred pilfring Lalus lambe, with crouch to bless thy head.

My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our iudge: Of singing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge

Couldst thou make Lalus flie? so nightingales auoide When with the kawing crowes their musicke is annoide.

Nay like to nightingales the other birds giue eare: My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forsweare.

I thinke it well: such voice would make one musicke hate: But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.

Another sure as is a gander from a goose: But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.

Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day;
The neighbours all did crie, alas what asse doth bray?

But here is Dicus old; let him then speake the woord,
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers affoord.

Content: but I will lay a wager hereunto,
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.
I haue (and long shall haue) a white great nimble cat,
A king vpon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine eares, long taile he hath, with Lions curbed clawe,
Which oft he lifteth vp, and stayes his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-mewing showest
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,
And if I better sing, let me thy Cosma kisse.

Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse. I haue a better match;
A prettie curre it is; his name iwis is Catch,
No eare nor taile he hath, least they should him disgrace,
A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long spectled face:
He neuer musing standes, but with himselfe will play
Leaping at every flie, and angrie with a flea:
He eft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt vpright.
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus judgement show:
Such oddes I willing lay; for him and you I know.

Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,
Or else who singeth worst my skill will hardly hit.

Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring
The auncient prayse to Arcad shepheards skill?
Pan is not dead, since Pas beginnes to sing.

Who euermore will loue Apollos quill.
Since Nico doth to sing so widely gape?
Nico his place farre better furnish will.

Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape
Raging in woes teach pastors first to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?

This is not he that failed her to gaine,
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his musicke staine.

O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trowe,
That Nico must with Pas compared be?

O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:
While I was warbling out your woonted praise,
Nico would needes with Pas his bagpipe blowe.

If neuer I did faile your holy-dayes,
With daunces, carols, or with barlybreake:
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes

If each day hath bene holy for your sake,
Vnto my pipe, O Nymphes, helpe now my pipe,
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,
Me thinkes I see the lippes my Leuca hath,
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.

Alas, when I in spring meete roses rathe,
And thinke from Cosmas sweet red lips I liue,
I leaue mine eyes vnwipte my cheekes to bathe.

As I of late, neer bushes vsde my siue,
I spied a thrush where she did make her nest,
That will I take, and to my Leuca giue.

But long haue I a sparrow gailie drest,
As white as milke, and camming to the call,
To put it with my hand in Cosmas brest.

I oft doo sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,
But when I did come neere with heate and hope,
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.

Cosma once said, she left the wicket ope,
For me to come, and so she did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.

When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,
If Leuca liue, she darken will my fame.
When Cosma doth come forth, the Sun displaies
His utmost light; for well his witte doth know,
Cosmas faire beames embleish much his rates.

Leuca to me did yester-morning shows
In perfect light, which could not me deceaue,
Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.

But yesternight by light I did receaue
From Cosmas eyes, which full in darkenes shine,
I sawe her arme, where purest Lillies cleaue.

She once starke nak'd did bathe a little time;
But still (me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.

She once, to coole her selfe, stood in a well,
But euer since that well is well besought,
And for Rose-water sould of rarest smell.

To riuers banke, being on walking brought,
She bad me spie her babie in the brooke,
Alas (said I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.

As in a glasse I held she once did looke,
I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.

O if I had a ladder for the skies,
I would climbe vp, and bring a prettie starre,
To weare vpon her neck, that open lies.

O if I had Apollos golden carre,
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That (shining now) she then might shine more farre.

Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy fame deface,
While shepheards tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
Or while that shepheards loue a louely face.

Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,
As farre as any shepheards piping be:
As farre as Loue possesseth any head.

Thy monument is layd in many a tree,
With name engrau'd: so though thy bodie die,
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.

So oft these woods have heard me Cosma crie,
That after death, to heau'n in woods resound,
With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma flie.

Peace, peace good Pas, thou weiriest euen the ground
With sluttish song: I pray thee learne to blea,
For good thou mayst yet prooue in sheepish sound.

My father hath at home a prettie Iay,
Goe winne of him (for chattering) praise or shame:
For so yet of a conquest speake thou may.

Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,
That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,
That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.

Tell me (and Phœbus be) what monster growes
With so strong liues, that bodie cannot rest
In ease, vntill that bodie life forgoes.

Enough, enough: so ill hath done the best,
That since the hauing them to neither's due,
Let cat and dog fight which shall haue both you.

Some speech there streight grew among the hearers, what they should meane by the riddles of the two monsters. But Zelmane, whose harte better delighted in wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, she desired Lamon, he would againe repeate some other lamentation of the still-absent Strephon and Klaius. Basilius (as soone as he vnderstood Zelmanes pleasure) commaunded Lamon vpon paine of his life (as though euery thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained to his mistresse seruice) immediately to sing it: who with great cunning, varying his voice according to the diuersitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, answered in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Ioye in griefe, and doo detest all ioyes:
Despise delight, and tyrde with thought of ease
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the chaunge of them my fancie please.
I studie that which may me most displease,
And in despite of that displeasures might,
Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes.
Blinded with beanies, fell darkenes is my sight:
Dale on my ruine feedes, with sucking smarte,
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,

I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,
And loth this time, calld life, nay thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Think, my horde haps haue blunted deaths sharpe knife,
Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered brest:
Where I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,
But from the sent of some infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischieue craue.

Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe craue,
And seeke to nourish that, which now contaynes
All what I am: if I my selfe will saue,
Then must I saue, what in me chiefly raignes,
Which is the hatefull web of Sorowes paines.
Sorow then cherish me, for I am sorowe:
No being now, but sorowe I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I bar owe,
Since thou my riches arte, and that thou haste
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste.

Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste
Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:
Hailestones of teares, of sigthes a monstrous blast,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heau'n my soule which nought can see;
The flying sprites which trees by rootes vp teare
Be those despaires, which haue my hopes quite wast.
The diffrence is; all folkes those stormes forbeare:
But I cannot; who then my selfe should flie
So close vnto my selfe my wrackes doo lie.

So close vnto my selfe my wrackes doo lie;
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe; whose course to loue doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:
Her cable, Reason, breaks from anchor,
Hope: Fancie, her tackling, torne away doth flie:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:
Brused with waues of Cares, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse.

On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse
I long doo plowe with plough of deepe Desire:
The seed Fast-meaning is, no truth to misse:
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire
Fauour to make my chiefe and onely hire.
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this,
Hate fully growne, Absence new sprongen out.
So that I see, although my sight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.

Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
For so did I, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
Eu'n then Despaire did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lamde with the angle, which it selfe did teare,
And unto death, quite drownde in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguisde in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.

Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,
When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footesteps I with hisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must euer rewe,
Mine eyes did light vpon her shining hewe,
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infected so with her sweet poysons might,
That, leauing me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.

But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me.
Yet liuing still in her, while her beames lent
Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those liuing lights absented be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
But that eternall paines my soule should hent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.

In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell
Alas I doo; from which to finde release,
I would the earth, I would the heauens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease.
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.
O faire, ô onely faire, from thee, alas,
These foule, most foule, distresses to me fell;
Since thou from me (ô me) ô Sunne didst passe.
Therefore esteeming all good blessings toyes
I ioy in griefe, and doo detest all ioyes.

I ioye in griefe, and doo detest all ioyes.
And now an ende, (ô Claius) now an ende
For euen the hearbes our mournefull musique stroyes,
And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.

SO wel did Lamons voice expresse the passio[n]s of those shepheards, that all the Princely beholders were striken in a silent co[n]sideration of them; indeed euerie one making, that he heard of another the bala[n]ce of his own troubles. And Basilius perceiving such melancholique musique best consorted to the humor of his mistresse, entreated againe the young melancholy shepheard, that he would emparte some part of the sorow his cou[n]tenance so well witnessed vnto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himself and the Echo: framing his voice in those deserte places, as what words he would haue the Echo replie, vnto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these Hexameters in the following order he uttered.

Echo.
Faire rocks, goodly riuers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace?

Peace? who debars me my tongue? who is it that comes me so nie?

O I doo know what guest I doo meete: it is Echo.

Well mett Echo; aproch, and tell me thy will too.

Echo, what doo I get yielding my sprite to my grieues?

What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death?

O poisonous medicine: what worse to me can be then it?

In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease?

And what maner a minde, which had to that humor a vaine?

Hath not reason enough vehemence the desire to reproue?

Oft proue I: but what salue, when Reason seeks to be gone?

O what is it? what is it, that may be a salue to my loue?

What doo louers seeke for, long seeking for to enioye?

What be the ioyes, for which t'enioye they went to the paines?

Then to an earnest loue what doth best victorie lende?

Ende? but I can neuer ende: Loue will not giue me the leaue.

How be the mindes disposde, that cannot taste the Physicke?

Yet say againe th'aduice for th' ills that I tolde thee.

Doth th'infected wretch of his ill th'extremitie know?

But if he know not his harmes, what guids hath he whilst he be blind?

What blinde guides can he haue that leads to a fancie?

Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that steppeth aloft?

What causes first made these torments on me to light?

Can then a cause be so light, that forceth a man to goe die?

Yet tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die?

Eie-sight made me to yeeld: but what first pearst to my eyes?

Eyes hurters? eyes hurte? but what from them to me falls?

But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my harte?

Arte? what can be that arte, which thou doost meane by thy speach?

What be the fruities of speaking arte, what growes by the wordes?

O much more then wordes: those wordes serued more me to blesse.

O when shall I be knowe, where most to be known I doo long?

Long be thy woes for such bad newes: how recks she my thoughts?

Then, then what doo I gayne, since vnt' her will I doo winde?

Winde, tempests, and stormes: yet in ende what giues she desire?

Silly rewarde; yet aboue women hath she a title.

What great name may I giue to so heau'nly a woman?

Woe, but seems to me ioye, that agrees to my thought so.

Thinke so: for of my desired blisse it is onely the course.

Curst be thy selfe for cursing that, which leads me to ioyes.

What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde?

Harde to be gott, but got constant, to be helde very steeles.

How be they helde vnkinde? speake, for th' hast narrowly pry'de.
How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence? 
Horrible is this blaspheemie vnto the most holie. 
Thou li'st, false Echo; their mindes, as vertue, be iuste. 
Mockst thou those Diamonds, which onely be matcht by the Gods? 
Odds? what an odds is there, since them to the heauens I preferre? 
Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made euill? 
Deuill? in hell where such Deuill is, to that hell I doo goe.

AFTER this well placed Echo, the other shepheardes were offring themselues to have continued the sports: But the night had so quietly spent most part of her selfe, that the King for that time licensed them: & so bringing Zelmane to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the same for Philoclea, of all sides they went to counterfait a sleep in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet there lay they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which Basilius was to continue his Apollo deuotions, and the other to meditate vpon their priuate desires.

The end of the second Booke.

Go on to Booke III.
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia (1590). Book III.

Sir Philip Sidney.

Note on the e-text: this Renascence Editions text was transcribed by Risa Bear, November, 2003, from the Sommer facsimile of a British Museum copy of the Ponsonby edition of 1590. The text is in the public domain. Content unique to this presentation is copyright © 2003 The University of Oregon. For nonprofit and educational uses only.

THE THIRD BOOKE
OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

Dorus-his 1 faire and 2 foule weather in his loue. 3 His for-lorne agonies. 4 His doubts to write, 5 and Pamelaes to reade, 6 his elegie.

His last dayes daunger, hauing made Pamelaes loue discerne, what a losse it should haue suffered, if Dorus had bene destroyed, bredd such tendernesse of kindnes in her toward him: that she coulde no longer keepe Loue from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed; so as finding not only by his speeches & letters, but by the pitifull oratio[n] of a languishing behauior, & the easily discyphered
character of a sorrowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruction, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former iciness of her behauiour, as by entertaining his discourses (whensoeuer he did vse them) in the third person of Musidorus; to so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuously loued, she

would have requited his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could so hardly loue as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble fauour, & chast plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine vpon Dorus; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, ouer-hastily brought to a great fire, rather oppressed, then relieued with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetnesse of ioyfulnes, that again being a child of Passion, & neuer acquainted with mediocrity, could not set bounds vpon his happines, nor be content to giue Desire a kingdome, but that it must be an unlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he stood vpon being ouer-high in happines, & slipperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe from falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all sort out of his brest, & washt away all cheerfulnes of his cheere, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (Mopsa being called away by her mother, & he left alone with Pamela) the sudden occasion called Loue, & that neuer staid to aske Reasons leave; but made the too-much louing Dorus take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and, as it were, to establish a trophhee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent tast & colour, which suddenly she percieued had poison in it, so did she put him away from her: loking first vnto heauen, as amazed to find herselfe so beguiled in him; then laying the cruel punishment vpon him of angry Loue, and lowring beautie, shewing disdain, & a despising disdain, Away (said she) vnworthy man to loue, or to be loued. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being so deceiued; iudge then what I doo thee, for deceiuing me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my judgement, and staine of my conscience. With that she called Mopsa, not staying for any answer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which she semed not to mark (much lesse to pity) & chid her for hauing so left her alone.

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it was euen a death, which then laid hold of Dorus: which certainly at that instant would haue killed him, but that the feare to tary longer in her presence (contrary to her comandement) gaue him life to cary himselfe away from her sight, and to
run into the woods, where, throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieuung for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding himselfe not onely vnhappy, but vnhappie after being falne from all happinesse: and to be falne from all happines, not by any misconceiuing, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to Pamela: he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedily drawing into his minde, all conceipts which might more and more torment him. And so remained he two dayes in the woods, discarding to giue his bodie food, or his mind comfort, louing in himselfe nothing, but the loue of her. And indeed that loue onely straue with the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed Dorus, it should also destroy the image of her that liued in Dorus: and when the thought of that was crept in vnto him, it bega[n] to win of him some co[m]passion to the shrine of the image, & to bewaile not for himselfe (who[m] he hated) but that so notable a loue should perish. The began he onely so farre to wish his owne good, as that Pamela might pardon him the fault, though not the punishment: & the yttermost height he aspired vnto, was, that after his death, she might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of loue, and not of boldnesse.

That conceipt found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yielded, since he was banished her prese[n]ce, to seeke some means by writing to shew his sorrow, & testifie his repentance. Therfore getting him the necessarie instruments of writing, he thought best to couterfaite his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she would cast it away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in vers, hoping, that would draw her on to read the more, chusing the Elegiac as fittest for mourning. But pen did neuer more quakingly perorme his office; neuer was paper more double moistned with inke & teares; neuer words more slowly maried together, & neuer the Muses more tired, then now with changes & rechanges of his deuises: fearing howe to ende, before he had resolued how to begin, mistrusting eche word, condemning eche sentence. This word was not significat, that word was too plain: this would not be co[n]ceiued; the other would be il conceiued. Here Sorow was not inough expressed; there he seemed too much for his owne sake to be sory. This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly mouing. At last, marring with mending, and putting out better, then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, & diuere times ready to teare it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the worse it grew, he folded it vp, deoutly inuoking good acceptation vnto it; and watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (sauing Mopsa) to the other lodge, stale vp into Pamelaes chamber, and in her sta[n]dish (which first he kissed & and craued of it a safe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be seene at
her next vsing her hike (himselfe returning againe to be true prisoner to desperite sorrow) leauing her standish vpou her beds head, to giue her the more occasion to marke it: which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then she left it, opened it. But when she saw the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it, though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from him, and therefore not worthie to be receyued; and yet the paper (she thought) was not guiltie. At last, she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it ouer, that she might out of his wordes picke some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and threwe it away, and tooke it vp againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde needes reade it, conteining this matter.

\[ NVto a caitife wretch, whom long afflication holdeth, \]
\[ and now fully beleuues helpe to be quite perished; \]
\[ Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monume[n]t of his anguish, \]
\[ O you (alas so I find) came of his onely ruine. \]
\[ Dread not a whit (O goodly cruel) that pittie may enter \]
\[ into thy hart by the sight of this Epistle I send: \]
\[ And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall, \]
\[ least it might th'allure home to thy selfe to returne, \]
\[ Vnto thy selfe I do means those graces dwell so within thee, \]
\[ gratefulnes, sweetnes, holy loue, hartie regard) \]
\[ Such thing cannot I seeke (Despairs hath giu'n me my answer \]
\[ despaire most tragicall clause to a deadly request) \]
\[ Such thing can[n]ot he hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes; \]
\[ hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond. \]
\[ Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in most harty flowing teares, \]
\[ (teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse; \]
\[ Can those eyes not yeeld to the kind conceit of a sorow, \]
\[ which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies? \]
\[ Ah, that, that I do I not conceiue {though that to my blisse were) \]
\[ more then Nestors yeares, more then a Kings diademe. \]
\[ Ah, that, that I do not co[n]ceiue; to the heau[e][n] when a mouse climes \]
\[ then may I hope t'atchieue grace of a heauenly tiger. \]
\[ But, but alas, like a man co[n]demn'd doth craue to be heard speake \]
\[ not that he hopes for amends of the desaster he feeles, \]
\[ But finding th' approch of death with an ougly relenting, \]
giues an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:
Right so my boiling hart, enflamde with fire of a faire eye,
bubling out doth breath signes of his hugie dolours:
Now that he fend to what end his life and loue be reserved,
and that he hence must part where to liue onely he lou’d.
O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairnesse?
can death beautie become? must be such a monument?
Must I be onely the marke, shall proue that Vertue is angrie?
   shall proue that fiercenes can with a white doue abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and loue be rewarded
   with mortall disdaine, bent to vnendly reuenge? Vnto reuenge?
O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be reuenged?
   shall such high Plamets ende to the losse of a war me?
And to reuenge who[m] doo bend, would in that kind be reuenged,
   as th’ offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my offence was Loue: with Loue then must I be chastned,
   and with more, by the lawes that to Reuenge doo belong.
If that loue be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
   Loue neuer had me opprest, but that I saw to be lou’d.
You be the cause that I lou’d: what Reason blameth a shadowe,
   that with a body’t goes? since by a body it is.
If that Loue you did hate, you should your beautie haue hidden:
   you should those faire eyes haue with a veile couered.
But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine fro[m] a dark caue.
   what veiles then doo preuaile, but to a more miracle?
Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,
   torne you should disperse vnto the blasts of a winde.
But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head fou[n]d,
   eu’n as I am, so I should vnto that haire be a thrall.
Or with fair ha[n]ds-nailes (ô ha[n]d which nailes me to this death)
   you should haue your face (since Loue is ill) blemished.
O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
   should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?
First let Cimmerian darknes be my one’/ habitation:
   first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished;
Ere that I should consent to doo such excessiue a dammage
   vnto the earth, by the hurt of this her heauenly iewell.
O no: but such loue you say you could haue afoorded,
   as might learne Temperance voyde of a rages euents.
O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Loue so be learned?
   vnto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?
Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yeelded,
   Passion vnto my rage, Rage to a hastie reuenge.
But what's this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,
such faith, so staineles, inuiolate, violent?
Shall I not? ò may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,
what sweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
Shall I not once obiect, that you, you graunted a fauour
vnto the man, whom now such miseries you awarde?
Red your thoghts to the dear sweet words which the[n] to me giu'n were:
  think what a world is now, think who hath altred her hart.
What? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such euill?
  now fled, then cherished? then so nie, now so remote?
Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,
  say, that I should well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doe I finde, but Care to abhor me,
  Care that I sinke in griefe, Care that I liue banished?
And banished doe I liue, nor now will seeke a recou'rie,
  since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lawe.
If then a man in most ill case may giue you a farewell;
  farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delights.

CHAP. 2.

I The young Ladies mette: 2 invited to the countrie-wenches sports, 3 goe thether, 4 there are taken, and thence carted to Amphialus castle. 5 Their entertainement there.
6 Cecropias auricular confession of her proud cariage in prosperitie, 7 and ambitious practises in aduersitie. 8 Amphialus his affection in these actions.

Hat this would haue wrought in her, she her selfe could not tell: for, before her
Reason could moderate the disputation betwene Fauour & Faultines, her sister, and Miso, called her
downe to entertaine Zelmane, who was come to visite the two sisters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while Gynecia wearied her bed with her melancholic sicknes, and made Misos shrewdnesse (who like a sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde Zelmane from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her ielousie: Both she and her husband, driuing Zelmane to such a streit of resolution, either of impossible graunting, or dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she coulde) to auoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (Basilius being with his sicke wife, conferring vpon
such examinations, as *Philanax*, and other of his noble-men had made of this late seditio[n], all touching *Cecropia* with veheme[n]t suspition of giuing either flame or fuell vnto it) *Zelmane* came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his seate in *Philoclea*; who now with a bashfull cheerfulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she could not choose but be glad) ioyned with her sister, in making much of *Zelmane*.

And so as they sate deuising how to giue more feathers to the winges of Time, there came to the lodge dore, sixe maides, all in one liuerie of skarlette petticotes, which were tuckt vp almoste to their knees, the petticoates them selues beinge in many places garnished with leaues, their legges naked, sauing that aboue the anckles they had little black silke laces, vpon which did hang a few siluer belles: like which they had a little aboue their elbowes, vpon their bare armes. Vpon their haire they ware garlands of roses and gilliflowers; and the haire was so drest, as that came againe aboue the garlandes; enterchaunging a mutuall couering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire. Their breasts liberall to the eye: the face of the formoste [of] them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would haue bene, if they had not suffered greedy *Phœbus*, ouer-often, and harde, to kisse them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; so as the gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seem a wanton modestie, and an entising sobernes. Each of them had an instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with vsensiblenes, that did not lende it selfe vnto them. The Musicke entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleasant a guest was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discreete demeanour) in this sort spake vnto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies haue power to make cities enuie these woods, and solitarines to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Loue, so comes it from louely persons. The maides of all this coast of *Arcadia*, vnderstanding the often accesse that certaine shepheards of these quarters, are allowed to haue in this forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, haue bene stird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtlesnes of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandeme[n]t in coming to this place vnsent for, they chose out vs, to inuite both your princely parents, & your selues, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they haue prouided some such
sports, as they trust your gratious acceptations will interpret to be delightful. We have been at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affairs, our trust is, that you yet will not deny the shining of your eyes upon us.

The Ladies stood in some double, whether they should go or not, lest Basilius might be angry withall. But Miso (that had been at none of the pastorals, and had a great desire to lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor will, nor choose, but go thereto, and make the honest country people know, that they were not so squeamish as folks thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by her authority; with a smiling humbleness obeyed her: Pamela only casting a seeking look, whether she could see Dorus (who poor wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was grieved for his absence, hauing given the wound to him through her owne harte. But so the three Ladies & Miso went with those six Nymphes, conquering the length of the way with the force of musique, leaving only Mopsa behind, who disgraced weeping with her countenance, because her mother would not suffer her to shewe her newskoured face among them. But the place appointed (as they thought) met them halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie conversation of their inviters. There found they in the midst of the thickest part of the wood, a little square place, not burdened with trees, but with a board covered, & beautified with the pleasantest fruits, that Sun-burnt Autumnne could deliver unto them. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and tast of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of Bacchus: & of the divers coloured plums, which gave the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorn their provision, but eat, and drank a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for joy to come to such lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the coming forth of such devises, as were prepared for them, there rushed out of the woods twenty armed men, who round about enuironed them, & laying hold of Zelmane before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods over the heads of all four, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke and carried them away; the sisters in vain crying for succour, while Zelmanes harte was rent in pieces with rage of the injurie, and disdaine of her fortune. But when they had carried them a foure or fiue mile further, they lefte Miso with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune; and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

wayted for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, ypon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

But at the Castle gate their faces were discouered, and there were mett with a great number of torches, after whome the sisters knewe their aunt in lawe, Cecropia. But that sight increased the deadly terrour of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked Cecropia: who yet came vnto them, making curtesie the outside of mischiefe, and desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their seruice. Philoclea (with a looke where Loue shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good vnto them, hauing neuer deserued euill of her. But Pamelas high harte disdayning humbleness to injurie, Aunt, (said she) what you haue determined of vs I pray you doo it speedily: for my part I looke for no seruice, where I finde violence.

But Cecropia (using no more wordes with them) conueyed them all three to seuerall lodgings (Zelmanes harte so swelling with spite, that she coulde not bring foorth a worde) and so lefte them: first taking from them their kniues, because they should do themselues no hurte, before she had determined of them: and then giuing such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had receiued of Zelmane, & told him, whom now he had in his power. Amphialus was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curtesie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by Zelmane, so as he was vtterly ignorant of all his mothers wicked deuises; to which he would neuer haue consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an euill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you. And howsoeuer I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how euill soeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole Basilius that now raignes, hauing liued vnmarried till he was nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his dooings assuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the vndoubted successour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be any thing neere to touch him. So that
he holding place and estimation as heyre of Arcadia, obteyned me of my father the King of Argos, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelery intention: for else you may be sure the King of Argos, nor his daughter would haue suffered their Royall bloud to be stained with the base name of subiection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of Argos daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into eares, & their eares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maiestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their deuotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse; one thrusting vpon another, who might shewe him selfe most diligent and serviceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings neuer vnsaluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it, with a plot we laide, as we should not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of Basilius, when the heau[n]s (I thinke enuying my great felicity) the[n] stopt thy fathers breath, whe[n] he breathed nothing but power and soueraigntie. Yet did not thy orphanie, or my widdowhood, deprue vs of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies vnto us.

But before, (my sonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the sweetnesse of authoritie, this beast (whom I can neuer name with patience) falsely and foolishly married this Gynecia, then a young girle, and brought her to sit aboue me in al feasts, to turne her shoulder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, it is not so great a spite to be surmounted by straungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke then what my minde was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from the first to the second, then from the second to the vndermost. The rage did swell in my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in sile [n]ce, & disguised with humblenes. But aboue al the rest, the griefe of grieues was, whe[n] with these daughters (now thy prisoners) she cut of al hope of thy successio[n]. It was a tedious thing to me; that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by) anothers voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable vnto me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend al thy time in such misery, & that the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had ben a sainct I could not choose, finding the chau[n]ge this chauge of fortune
bred vnto me, for now fro[m] the multitude of followers, sile[n]ce grew to be at my gate, & abse[n]ce in my presence. The guesse of my mind could preuaile more before, then now many of my earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (reme[m]bring that in all miseries, weeping becomes fooles, and practize wise folks) haue tried, diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of subiectio[n]. And though many times Fortune failed me, yet did I neuer faile my self. Wild beasts I kept in a caue hard by the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of their pastorals, I as then liuing in my house hard by the place, and against the houre they were to meete (hauing kept the beasts without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would seeke their food there, and deuoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating sharpe-sighted inuention, made them vnluckily to be killed. After, I vsed my seruant Clinias to stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts were too grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding Philanax-his examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a sleight I vsed of my fine-witted we[n]ch Artesia, with other maids of mine, would haue sent these good inheritrixe of Arcadia, to haue pleaded their cause before Pluto, but that ouer-fortunatly for the[m], you made me know the last day how vehemently this childish passion of loue doth torment you.

Therefore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wishing rather hate the[n] loue in you. For Hate often begetteth victory; Loue commonly is the instrument of subiection. It is true, that I would also by the same practise haue entrapped the parents, but my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these being taken away) you are the vndoubted inheritor, and Basilius will not long ouer-liue this losse.

O mother (said Amphialus) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others finde what sweetnesse they will in euer fearing, because they are euer feared: for my part, I will thinke my selfe highly intitled, if I may be once by Philoclea accepted for a seruant. Well (said Cecropia) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of my body: then should you not haue suncke vnder base weakenesses. But since you haue tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie I haue brought matters to such a passe, as you may both enioy affection, and vppon that build your soueraigntie. Alas (said Amphialus) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For if Philoclea be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it vnkindnes, shall I giue tokens of kindnes? perchance she co[n] demnes me of this action, and shall I triumph? perchance she drownes nowe
the beauties I loue with sorrowful teares, and where is then my reioicing? You haue reason (said Cecropia with a feined grauitie) I will therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recouered. No good mother (said Amphialus) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence, but rather would I die then co[n]sent to absence. Prety intricat follies (said Cecropia) but get you vp, & see how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other sister. For after we shal haue our hands full to defend our selues, if Basilius hap to besiege vs. But remembrance herself, she turned back, & asked him what he woulde haue done with Zelmane, since nowe he might be reuenged of his hurt. Nothing but honorably, answered Amphialus, hauing deserued no other of me, especially being (as I heare) greatly cherished of Philoclea. And therefore I could wish they were lodged together. O no (said Cecropia) company confirmes resolutio[n]s, & lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable proffers.

CHAP.   3.

1 Amphialus addressing him to Philoclea. 2 Her melan-cholie habit. 3 His humble sute. 4 Her pitifull answere: 5 and his compassionate replie. 6 Their parting with cold comfort.

Vt Amphialus (taking of his mother Philocleas kniues, which I he kept as a relique, since she had worne them) gat vp, and calling for his richest apparell, nothing seemed sumptuous enough for his mistresses eyes: and that which was costly, he feared were not daintie: and though the inuention were delicat, he misdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the colour; lest if gay, he might seeme to glorie in his injury, and her wrong; if mourning, it might strike some euill presage vnto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black veluet, richly embrodered with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffes of cypres, that the cypres was like blacke clowds, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces enterchangeably answering; the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie glistring, which he thought pictured the two passions of Feare and Desire, wherein he was enchayned. His hurt (not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he
And in that sort he went to Philocleas chamber: whome he found (because her chamber was ouer-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe; which did cast such a shadow vpon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe vppon Venus, when vnder the trees she bewayled the murther of Adonis: her handes and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds head, and ouer her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almost halfe her eyes, which vnder it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they might well change, but not mende their object: and so remayned they a good while after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor she perceyuing him, till that (a little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he happed to stirre his vpper garment: and perceyuing him, rose vp, with a demeanure, where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse was blotted out, and Anger was neuer there.

But Amphialus that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches, found it so locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching her to take what was don in good part, and to assure herselffe there was nothing but honour meant vnto her person. But she making no other aunswere, but letting her handes fall one from the other, which before were ioyned (with eyes something cast aside, and a silent sigh) gaue him to vnderstande, that considering his dooings, she thought his speech as full of incongruitie, as her aunswere would be voyde of purpose: whereupon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hande, (which she suffered with a countenaunce witnessing captiuitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to haue pitie of him, whose loue went beyonde the boundes of conceite, much more of vttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did stande; whereto the least motion of hers woulde serue to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he her eternall slaue; and with true vehemencie besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

Alas cousin, (saide she) what shall my tongue be able to doo, which is inforiumd by the eares one way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and vse crueltie; you say, you loue me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you haue brought me to so neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: so that while you say I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slaue, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, injurie, terror, and deprivuing of that which is more dear then life it selfe, libertie, be
fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily perswaded. But
if the neareness of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or there be any
such thing in you, which you call loue towarde me, then let not my fortune
be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste it selfe
by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause
of my parents wofull destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I
shall account I haue receyued my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe,
I say for my deare sister, and my friend Zelmane: for I desire no wel being,
without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her
heauenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet and beautifull flowers of her
face.

But Amphialus was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe she
had, aboue all earthly
things, hauing long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and
lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent,
and she fallen into extreeme pouertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her
life. Manie a pitifull looke doth she cast vpon it, and many a time doth she
draw backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For euen so
Amphialus by a hunger-sterued affection, was compelled to offer this injurie,
and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting grievie, thinke
vnkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to restraine
her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor denie, he thus
answered her. Deare ladie (said he) I will not say vnto you (how iustly
soeuer I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accessarie vnto this your
withholding. For since I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it.
But this I protest vnto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heauens
heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in my
soule I wish I had neuer seene the light, or rather, that I had neuer had a
father to beget such a child, the that by my meanes those eyes should
ouerflow their owne beauties, then by my meanes the skie of your vertue
should be ouerclowded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I
finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares
receauce the least word you speak, with any lesse reuerence, then as
absolute, and vnresistable commaundements. But alas, that Tyrant Loue,
(which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way
suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I
say? but that I, who am redie to lie vnder your feete, to venture, nay to loose
my life at your least commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome,
but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that
imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles
embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect vpon themselues this
injurie. Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to
satisfie this Loues vehemencie; which (since it grewe in your selfe) without
question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.

But with these wordes Philoclea fell to so extreame a quaking, and her liuely whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a palenessse, that Amphialus feared some daungerous trauence: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of Cupid) had all the sense of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure herselfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that the vttermost forces he would euer employ to conquere her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought Philoclea againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting vp her eyes vpon him, with a countenaunce euer courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should doo well to do so, if indeede he had euer tasted what true loue was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her kniues, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easilie flie into it, if euer she founde her honor endaungered.

Amphialus hauing the colde ashes of Care cast vpon the coales of Desire, leauing some of his mothers Gentlewomen to waite vpon Philoclea, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footestool to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vttered, he deliuered what had passed betwene him and Philoclea: beseeching her to trie what her perswasions could doo with her, while he gaue order for all such things as were necessarie against such forces, as he looked dayly Basilius would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiette him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

**CHAP. 4.**

1 Amphialus warlike preparations. 2 His iustification. 3 His fortifications. 4 His Arte of men. 5 His Loue-passions, and passionate complaints.

O they calling Clinias, and some other of their counsell, aduised vpon their present affaires. First, he dispatched priuat letters to al those principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, who[m] he thought ether alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not
omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youth-like mindes did fill with unlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an ouer-spended wante, made want a ciuill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, reuenge; to the greedie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promises sprong of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of Argos: but he was as then so ouer-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the sailes of popular iudgeme[n]ts, & how few there be, that can discerne betweene trueth and truthlikenes, betweene showes and substance; he caused a iustification of this his action to be written, wherof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulenes of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other dueties, since in it selfe it conteines them all, and that for the respect therof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshippes, are to be laide aside, but that euen long-helde opinions (rather builded vpon a secrete of gouernement, then any grou[n]d of truthe) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euere to be of more noble reckoning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordeined. The feeling consideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to Basilius as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, ouer whom Basilius raigned: rather then so to hoodwinke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as fro[m] the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especiallie himselfe, who being descended of the Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no soner opened his eyes, but that the soyle whereupon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as fro[m] his childhood he had euer caried; so now finding that his vncle had not only giue ouer al care of gouernment, but had put it into the hands of Philanax, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest the [n] himselfe) in so vnfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only da[n]gerous for their persons, but (if they should be conueied to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therfore he had brought them
into this stro[n]g castle of his, which way, if it might seem strange, they were to consider, that new necessities require new remedies: but there they should be serued & honored as belonged to their greatnes, vntil by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both priuate, and publique) advantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be asse[m]bled, he were assailed, he would the[n] for his own defence take armes: desiring all, that either tendred the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loued iustice, to defe[n]d him in this iust actio [n]. And if the Prince should commaund them otherwise, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was done, was done for his seruice, howsoever he might (seduced by Philanax) interprete of it: he protesting, that what soeuer he should doo for his owne defence, should be against Philanax, & no way against Basilius.

To this effect:, amplified with arguments and examples, and painted with rhetorickal colours, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they preuayled with some of more quicke then sounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolenesse, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he vsed to weaken the aduerse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at lest would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therfore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striuing to make Art striue with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to vndermining force, so to ope assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to the[m], whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instrume[n]ts of mischiefe to places, whence the mischiefe might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for victuals, as wel for the prouiding that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preseruing it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; spending that first which would keepe lest.

But wherein he sharpned his wits to the pearcingest point, was touching his men (knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes all the rest to stir; and that
therefore in the Arte of man stood the quintessence, & ruling skill of all prosperous gouernement, either peaceable, or military) he chose in number as many as without pestring (and so daunger of infection) his victuall would seem for two yeare to maintaine; all of liable bodies, and some few of able mindes to direct, not seeking many commaunders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should haue obeying wills, euery one knowing whom he should commaund, and whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; distributing each office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no loue, daunger, nor discipline can sodainly alter an habite in nature. Therfore would he not employ the stil man to a shifting practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know the all particularly, & throughly, regarding also the constitution of their bodies; some being able better to abide watching, some hunger, some labour, making his benefit of ech hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to euery thing by iust proportio n he allotted, & as well in that, as in euery thing els, no small errour winckt at, lest greater should be animated. euen of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly Clinias to haue care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty persuasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to stumble at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne inuention. But euen then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terrour) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: him selfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in trauaile, nor spen ding in diet, then the meanest souldier: his hand and body disdaining no base matters, nor shrinking from the heavy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others rested, he crost his armes. For Loue passing thorow the pikes of Dau[n]ger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the marvaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his own thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to some thing, as if with the sight of Gorgons head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his
eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the vse of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceiued him; then would he accuse, and in himselfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Loue. O, would he say, al you that affect the title of wisdome, by vngratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a shaddow? or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubte behinde me? is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doo I not stande vpon paine, and trauaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes? The more I stirre about urgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encrease the appetite of my desires. O sweet Philoclea (with that he would cast vp his eies wherin some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselues against they should see her) thy heauenly face is my Astronomie; thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: let me profile therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgiues me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doo they threaten this destruction? euen him that loues them; and by what means will they destroy, but by lousing them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darte with the golde of Cupids arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloved (though hating) Philoclea, how if thou beest mercifull, hath crueltie stolne into thee? Or how if thou beest cruell, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill vessell which turnes sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace fals vpon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-striken, when her presence gaue him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were vnperplexed) to vse for his sake the most preuailing manners of intercession.

CHAP. 5.

1 Suttle Cecropia visites sad Philoclea. 2 The shamelesse Aunt's shrewd temptations to loue and mariage: The mo-dest neeces maidenly resistance.
**Ecropia** seing her sonnes safetie depende thereon, (though her pride much disdained the name of a desire) tooke the charge vpon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an vnexpert virgin, who had alreadie with subtiltie and impudencie begun to vndermine a monarchy. Therfore, waighing **Philocleas** resolutions by the counterpease of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make **Philoclea** receiue the poyson distilled in sweete liquour, which she with little disguising had drunke vp thirstily. Therefore she went softly to **Philoclea** chamber, & peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe **Philoclea** sitting lowe vpon a cushion, in such a giuen-ouer manner, that one would haue thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholic were come there, vnder the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, and drue him from his naturall seate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like rainein Sunshine, and she not taking heede to wipe the teares, they ranne downe vpon her cheekes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but euen left to a neglected chaunce, which yet coulde no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Die anie way cast, could loose his squarenesse.

**Cecropia** (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayles this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of **Arcadia** wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peeuish sadnesse; in sooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserue to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will haue these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked vppon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them; & their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make euerie bodie woonder at the chaunge, and say, that sure you had vsed some arte before, which nowe you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde neuer so soone haue beene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your eies: although, I must co[n]fesse, those eies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame (answered **Philoclea**) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine eies thus beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (saide **Cecropia**) if she could see to attire herselfe, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with griefe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnes: you misconster euery thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you
esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistres: you feare hate, and shall find loue. And truely, I had a thing to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinatly melancholy, as that you woo his felowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staied indeede, thinking Philoclea would haue had a female inquisitiuenesse of the matter. But she, who rather wished to vnknowe what she knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed she did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very griefe & feare, would proue her vnappointed executioners. For that (said Cecropia) beleue me vpo[n] the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal da[n]ger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to preuent such mischiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, even as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares v nto me, & let not your mind arme it self with a wilfulness to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason haue his due reward, persuasion. Then sweet neece (said she) I pray you presuppose, that now, euen in the midst of your agonies, which you paine vnto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vows. for a soone & safe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I say) that some heauenly spirit should appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the garden, assuring you, that you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soeuer your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to folow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enjoy your ouer-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neece:) but I wil answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such nicenesse can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulnessse can haue any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieuing in your griefe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent foorth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiaall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no smal kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neernesse of his kinred, with the neernesse of good-will, and striuing to
match your matchlesse beautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me
present vnto you the full enjoying of your liberty, so as with this gift you
wil accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe
he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt
of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the
person and the matter; but who will cry out the Sun shines? It is so manifest
a profit vnto you, as the meaneast iudgement must straight apprehend it: so
farre is it from the sharpenes of yours, therof to be ignorant. Therfore
(sweet neece) let your gratefullnes be my intercession, & your gentlenesse
my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart which greatly needs it.
*Philoclea* looked vpon her, & cast downe her eie again. Aunt (said she) I
would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeelede to my
cousins vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already set
(and staying a while on that word, she brought foorth afterwards) to lead a
virgins life to my death: for such a vow I haue in my selfe deuoutly made.
The heauens preuente such a mischiefe (said *Cecropia.*) A vowe, quoth you?
no, no, my deere neece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a
woma[n], & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be
mother of a child: she gaue you beautie to moue loue; she gaue you wit to
know loue; she gaue you an excelle[n]t body to reward loue: which kind of
liberall rewarding is crowned with vnspeakable felicitie. For this, as it
bindeth the receiuer, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not
impouerish, but enrich the giuer. O the sweet name of a mother: O the co[m]
fort of co[m]forts, to see your childre[n] grow vp, in who[m] you are (as it
were) eternized: if you could conceiue what a hart-tickling ioy it is to see
your own little ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap, and like
little models of your selfe, still cary you about them, you would thinke
vnkindnes in your own thoughts, that euer they did rebell against the mean
vnto it. But percha[n]ce I set this blessednes before your eies, as Captains
do victorie before their souldiers, to which they might come through many
paines, griues & dangers. No, I am co[n]tent you shrinke from this my
counsel, if the way to come vnto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not
(answered the sweet *Philoclea*, fearing least silence would offend her
sullennes) what contentment you speake of: but I am sure the best you can
make of it, (which is mariage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deer neece (said
*Cecropia*) how much you are deceiued? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid
vpo[n] vs in our creation, which by mariage is not increased, but thus farre
eased, that you haue a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy
cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the
difference. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-side of my bed, which
was wo[n]t to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares
acknowledge, that I now enjoy such a liberty as the banished ma[n] hath;
who may, if he list, wa[n]der ouer the world, but is euer restrained fro[m]
his most delightful home? that I haue now such a liberty as the seele[y] dou
hath, which being first depriued of eies, is then by the falconer cast off? For
beleue me, nenee, beleue me, mans experie[n]ce is woma[n]s best eie-sight.
Haue you euer seene a pure Rosewater kept in a christal glas; how fine it
lokes, how sweet it smels, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake
the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imbrace dust,
and loose all his former sweetenesse, and fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we
haue not the stay, rather then the restraint of Cristalline mariage. My hart
meltes to thinke of the sweete comfortes, I in that happie time receiued,
when I had neuer cause to care, but the care was doubled: whe[n] I neuer
reioiced, but that I saw my ioy shine in anothers eies. What shall I say of the
free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accusing of the
inward conscience, or feare of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good
as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a consort: the[n] can
one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall consideration of
mariage dooth not so much mislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is
my sone, I must confesse, I see him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo
not much deceiue me, he is no such one, ouer whom Contempt may make
any iust chalenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it
selfe should carie all comelinesse, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he
loues you, who is beloued of others. Driue not away his affection (sweete
Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath
robbed you of so faithfull and notable a seruant. Philoclea heard some
pieces of her speches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler co
[m]bers the hearing of a delightful musicke. For her thoughts had left her
eares in that captiuitie, and conueied themselues to behold (with such eies
as imagination could lend the[m]) the estate of her Zelmane: for who how
wel she thought many of those sayings might haue ben vsed with a farre
more gratefull acceptation. Therefore listing not to dispute in a matter
whereof her selfe was resolute, and desired not to enforme the other, she
onely told her, that whilst she was so captiued, she could not conceiue of
any such persuasions (though neuer so reasonable) any otherwise, then as
constraints: and as constraints must needs eue[n] in nature abhor the[m],
which at her libertie, in their owne force of reason, might more preuaile
with her: and so faine would haue returned the strength of Cecropias
perswasions, to haue procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.

1 Fresh motiues to Philoclea. 2 Cecropias new fetch to at-
tempt Pamela. 3 Pamela's prayer, 4 and Sainct-like gra-
ces in it. 5 Her Auntes fruiteles argumentes.
Vt neither her witty wordes in an enemie, nor those wordes, made more then eloquent with passing through such lips, could preuaile in Cecropia, no more then her perswasions coulde winne Philoclea to disauowe her former vowe, or to leaue the prisoner Zelmane, for the commaunding Amphialus. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunters, they brake of conference. Cecropiasucking vp more and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a visarde of kindnes, leauing no office vnperfourmed, which might either witnes, or endeare her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence perfourmed: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Musickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorow, and thinke of it with sweetnes; with ditties so sensiblie expressing Amphialus case, that euerie worde seemed to be but a diuersifying of the name of Amphialus. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacific an angrie Deitie, sent vnto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striuen with the sumptuousnes of the matter, as much did the inuention in the application, contende to haue the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, & her perfections; where the richnes did inuite the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the deuice did teach the eyes the present miserie of the presenter himselfe, awefully seruiceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she liued, all meanes vsed to make knowen, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in loue-knots. But in harte alreadie understanding no language but one, the Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulnes, but it was a dolefulnes to be in his power: the dittie intended for Amphialus, she translated to Zelmane: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thrallled obligation: and his seruice, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as she thought) vnto her, her vnworthie estate: that euen he that did her seruice, had authentic of commanding her, onely construing her seruitude in his own nature, esteeming it a right, and a right bitter seruitude: so that all their shots (how well soeuer leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her mislike, the Prince Amphialus affectionately languished, & Cecropia spitefullie cunning, disdained at the barrennes of their successe.

Which willingly Cecropia woulde haue reuenged, but that she sawe, her hurte could not be diuided from her sonnes mischiefe: wherefore, she bethought her self to attempt Pamela, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon, that her sonnes thoughtes would rather
rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherfore, giuing new courage to her wicked inuentions, and vsing the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking euen precepts of preuailing in Pamela, by her fayling in Philoclea, she went to her chamber, & (according to her own vngratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood listning at the dore, because that out of the circumstance of her present behauiour, there might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceaue that Pamela did walke vp and down, full of deep (though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthening her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the best, & of this I am sure, that how soeuer they wro[n]g me, they cannot ouermaster God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Iayle barres him out. To whome then else should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, eue[n] in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shall seem most conuenient. Let not iniurie, ô Lord, triumphe ouer me, and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine vniuste enemie the minister of thy Iustice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdome, this be the aptest chastizement for my inexcusoble follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my ouer-hie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld vnto thy will, and ioyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt haue me suffer. Oney thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since euen that proceedes from thee) let me craue, euen by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may giue my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently vpon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the ouerthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praie: let my paine be the sweetnes of their reuenge: let them (if so it seem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lord (said she) what euer become of me, preserue the vertuous Musidorus.

The other parte Cecropia might well heare, but this latter prayer for
Musidorus, her hart helde it, as so iewel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so heauenly a creature, with such a feruent grace, as if Deuotion had borowed her bodie, to make of it self a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would haue thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place amo[n]g their fellow stars; her naked hands raising vp their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of Zeale, and the left, of Humblenesse, which both vnited themselues to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so straunge a working power, that euen the harde-harted wickednesse of Cecropia, if it founde not a loue of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she was put from the biasse of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at lest, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leauing no argument vnproued, which might with any force inuade her excellent iudgement: the iustnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely haue amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her belieue, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might haue his loue which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept Philoclea in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, she being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring, how extremely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respect he bare vnto her, & taking vpo[n] her selfe that she restrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to Philoclea, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at the lest awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if Philoclea with sweete and humble dealing did auoid their assaults, she with the Maiestie of Vertue did beate them of.

CHAP. 7.

1 An Allarme to the Amphialians. 2 Base cowardise in Clinias; 3 braue courage imaged in Amphialus.
4 His onset with the death of two friendes his foes.
5 The horrour of Mars-his game. 6 Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.

Vt this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche vpon the top of the keepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would striue to haue clowdes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did apparaile it self) was caried aside fro[m] them, the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith the clowdes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne guilding with his beames, it gaue a sight delightfull to any, but to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gaue a quick Alarum to the soldiers within, whome practise already hauing prepared, began each, with vnabashed hartes, or at lest countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them.

Onely Clinias and Amphialus did exceed the bounds of: mediocrity: the one in his naturall coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For Clinias (who was bold onely in busie whisperings, and euen in that whisperingnes rather indeed confident in his cunning, that it should not be bewraied, then any way bolde, if euer it should be bewrayed) now that the enemy gaue a dreadful aspect vnto the castle, his eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but that they multiplied the hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a dreadfull expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden of feare) did somtimes feine vnto it selfe possibility of let; as the death of Basilius, the discord of the nobility, & (when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce serued as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the quietnesse of his vnassailed senses, would make himselfe beleue, that he durst do something. But now, that present daunger did display it selfe vnto his eye, & that a daungerous dooing must be the onely meane to preue[n]t the da[n]ger of suffering, one that had marked him would haue judged, that his eies would haue run into him, & his soule out of him; so vnkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdouted ech mans treason, and coniectured euery possibilitie of misfortune, not onely fore-casting likely perils, but such as all the planets together could scarce haue conspired: & already began to arme him selfe, though it was determined he should tarrie within doores; and while he
armed himselfe, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himselfe if the enemies wonne the castle. Desirous he was that euery body should do valiantly, but himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would haue hid his feare; lest it should disco[m]fort others: but the more he sought to disguise it, the more the vnsutablenes of a weake broke[n] voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discouer him.

But quite contrarily Amphialus, who before the enemies came was carefull, prouidently diligent, and not somtimes without doubting of the issue; now the nearer danger approched (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre out both vpo[n] the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boates he had of purpose, and carying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had vpo[n] the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enimy would attempt; because it was a passage, which co[m]manding all that side [of] that country, & being lost would stop victuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle: & in that fortresse hauing some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred horse, & fiue hun[d]red footmen, embushed his footme[n] in the falling of a hill, which was ouershadowed with a wood, he with his horsme[n] went a quarter of a mile further; aside ha [n]d of which he might perceaue the many troupes of the enimie, who came but to take view where best to encampe themselues.

But as if the sight of the enimie had bene a Magnes stone to his courage he could not co[n]taine himself, but shewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his souldiers, used that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one, and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully folowing an example of such authoritie, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enimies to begin to be angry with the[m], whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there was a young man, youngest brother to Philanax, whose face as yet did not bewray his sex, with so much as shew of haire; of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing why to feare; full of iollitie in conuersation, and lately growne a Louer. His name was Agenor, of all that armie the most beautifull: who hauing ridden in sportfull conuersatio[n] among the foremost, all armed sauing that his beauer was vp, to haue his breath in more freedome, seing Amphialus come a pretty way before his co[m]pany, neither staying the com[m]aundement of the captaine, nor recking whether his face were armed, or no, set spurs to his horse, & with youthfull brauery casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carying it, as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But Amphialus
launce was already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of death against the head of this young Gentleman, when Amphialus perceyuing his youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that faire nakednesse, and let his staffe fall to Agenors vamplat: so as both with braue breaking should hurtleslie haue perfourmed that match, but that the pittilesse launce of Amphialus (angry with being broken) with an vnlucky counterbuffe full of vnsparing splinters, lighted vp on that face farre fitter for the combats of Venus; geuing not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leauing scarcely any tokens of his former beautie: but his ha[n]ds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the saddle, he fell sidewarde from the horse. Which sight comming to Leontius, a deere friende of his, who in vayne had lamentably cried vnto him to stay, when he saw him beginne his careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge of the other, helde as then the soueraigntie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and his hande to his enimie, so wrongly-consorted a power could not resist the ready minded force of Amphialus: who perceyuing his il-directed direction against him, so paide him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that one place, & one time, did finish both their loues and liues together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either side: where after the terrible salutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of handes was with sharpe weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did staine themselues in bloud; some flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heauen, because they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the Prince of weapons) the sworde, or by some heauy mase, or biting axe; which hunting still the weakest chase, sought euer to light there, where smallest resistanc[e] might worse preuent mischief. The clashing of armour, and crushing of staues; the iustling of bodies, the resounding of blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke, which was beautified with the griselinesse of wounds, the rising of dust, the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The verie horses angrie in their maisters anger, with loue and obedience brought foorth the effects of hate and resistance, and with minds of seruitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade vnder their dead maisters, whome vnknightly wounds had vniustly punished for a faithfull dutie. Some lay vppon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, who in life they had borne. Some hauing lost their commaunding burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madnesse of man-kinde. The earth it selfe (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whome Death had come masked in diuerse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their naturall seignories: in an
other, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all ouer 
so close, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths 
had ouglily displayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers 
yet mooued, as if they woulde feelfe for him that made them feelfe: and 
legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being discharged of their 
burthen, were growne heauier. But no sworde payed so large a tribute of 
soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of Amphials, who like a Tigre, 
from whome a companie of Woolues did seeke to rauish a newe gotten 
pray; so he (remembering they came to take away Philoclea) did labour to 
make valure, strength, hatred, and choller to answere the proportion of his 
loue, which was infinit.

There died of his handes the olde knight Æschylus, who though by 
yeares might well haue beene allowed to use rather the exercise of 
wisedom, then of courage; yet hauing a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, 
he euer tooke the summons of Time in iest, or else it had so creepingly 
stollen vpon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of his feete, and 
therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forwarde in enterprisses, as a farre 
yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie had 
beene tolde him, that he shoulde die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore 
fearde the lesse the anne of an enemie. But nowe, when Amphials sworde 
was passed through his throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before 
he died, his sonne, indeede, seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in 
his armes, till a pitilesse soouldier of the other side, with a mace brained him, 
making father and sonne become twinnes in their neuer againe dying birth. 
As for Drialus, Memnon, Nisus and Policrates; the first had his eyes cut out 
so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome: the 
seconde had met with the same Prophet that olde Æschylus had, and hauing 
founde manie of his speeches true, beleueed this to, that he should neuer be 
killed, but by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant 
then he against an enemie, no man more suspiciouse of his friends: so as he 
seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a 
battaile, when he began to sleepe, such guards he would set about his 
person; yet mistrusting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But 
nowe Amphials helped to unriddle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him 
from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supplie, pressed 
him to death. Nisus grasping with Amphials, was with a short dagger 
slaine. And for Policrates, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping 
onely his place for feare of punishment, Amphials with a memorable blowe 
strake of his head, where, with the conuulsions of death setting his spurre 
to his horse, he gaue so braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a 
prouerbe, that Policrates was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no 
man escaped so well his handes as Pheblius did: for he hauing long loued
Philoclea, though for the meanennesse of his estate he neuer durst reuale it, nowe knowing Amphialus, setting the edge of a riuall vpon the sworde of an enemie, he helde strong fight with him. But Amphialus had alreadie in the daungerousest places disarmed him, and was lifting vp his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O Philoclea (said he) yet this ioyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of Philoclea first staied his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for Philoclea, but turned his sword another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore Phebilus, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base souldiour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through?

CHAP. 8.

The Basilians reembattelled 1 first by Philanax, 2 then by the blacke Knight. 3 Ismenus slaine by Philanax. Philanax captiued by Amphialus. 4 The blacke Knights exploits. 5 His encounter with Amphialus, parted by a by-blow. 6 The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blacke Knight.

Hus with the well-followed valure of Amphialus were the other almost ouerthrowne, when Philanax (who was the marshal of the army) came in, with newe force renuing the almost decayed courage of his souldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backes or their armes were better fighters) he himselfe thrust into the presse, and making force and furie waite vppon discretion and gouernement, he might seeme a braue Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to ioine courage with cunning. The[n] Fortune (as if she had made chases inow of the one side of that blooddy Teniscourt) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of Amphialus followers, as before had done of Philanax his; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leauing them to keepe it, who had lost themselues in keeping it. Then those that had killed, inherited the lot of those that had bene killed; and cruel Death made the[n] lie quietly togethier, who most in their liues had sought to disquiet ech other; and many of those first ouerthrowne, had the comfort to see the murtherers ouerrun them to Charons ferrie.
Codrus, Ctesiphon, and Milot lost their lives upon Philanax's sword: but no bodies case was more pitied, then of a yong esquire of Amphialus, called Ismenus, who neuer abandoning his maister, and making his tender age aspire to actes of the strongest manhoode, in this time that his side was put to the worst, and that Amphialus's valure was the onely stay of them from deliuering themselues ouer to a shamefull flight, he sawe his masters horse killed vnder him. Whereupon, asking no aduise of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the helpe of some chose and faithfull seruants, gat his master vp. But in the multitude that came of either side, some to succour, some to saue Amphialus, he came vnder the hande of Philanax: and the youth percyuing he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (desirous euen to change his life for glorie) strake at him, as he rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that made Philanax turn towards him; but seing him so yo[n]g, & of a most louely presence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him prisoner, & the[n] to giue him to his brother Agenor to be his companion, because they were not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down vpon him with that thought, he spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend Leontius by him, euen almost vnnder the squiers feet. The[n] soroing not only his owne sorow, but the past-co[m]fort sorow, which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, & misgiuing sighs had suffred him to go with his elder brother Philanax) blotted out all figures of pitie out of his minde, and putting foorth his horse (while Ismenus doubled two or three more valiant, then well set blowes) saying to himselfe, Let other mothers bewaile an untimely death as well as mine; he thrust him through. And the boy fearce though beautiful; & beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could resisting Death, which might seeme vnwilling to; so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

Philanax himselfe could haue wished the blow ungiuen, when he saw him fall like a faire apple, which some vncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) should throwe downe before it were ripe. But the case of his brother made him forget both that, and himselfe: so as ouerhastily pressing vppon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne souldiers could relieue him; were being ouerthrowne by Amphialus, Amphialus glad of him, kept head aginst his enemies while some of his men caried away Philanax.

But Philanax's men as if with the losse of Philanax they; had lost the fountaine of their valure, had their courages so dried vp in feare; that they began to set honour at their backes, and to vse the vertue of pacience in an untimely time:
when into the press comes (as hard as his horse, more afraid of the spurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes coulde make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; so far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authoritie, that though they of whose side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the Amphiarians bloud serue for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his judgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne judgement went still before it. There died of his hand, Sarpedon, Plistonax, Strophilus, and Hippolitus, men of great proofe in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard of Amphialus. But while they sought to saue him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. The[n] slew he Megalus, who was a little before proud, to see himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that Crueltie dooth neuer enjoy a good cheape glorie. After him sent he Palemon, who had that daye vowed (with foolish brauerie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began also to change the hewe of the battailes. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so brauelie with rich furniture, guilte swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce leasure to be afraide: But now all uniuersally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and sette foorth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadful to Amphialus-his undismayable courage, nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected minde, did still paint it ouer with the beautie of Philoclea. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie subiect to exercise his courage, sought out this newe Knight, whom he might easilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neighbours houses, to make himselfe the better prospecte, so had his sworde made him so spatious a roome, that Amphialus had more cause to wonder at the finding, then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in him, to see how much harme he did to the one side, it prouoked as much æmulation in him, to perceaue how much good he did to the other side. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folks, Loue naturally stirres a desire of ioyning, so in their two
courage and Hate stirred a desire of trial. Then began there a combat
between them, worthy to have had more large lists, and more quiet
beholders: for with the spur of Courage, and the bite of Respect, each so
guided himself, that one might well see, the desire to overcome, made
them not forget how to overcome: in such time & proportion they did
employ their blows, that none of Ceres servants could more cunningly
place his flail: while the left foot spur set forward his own horse, the
right sette backward the contrary horse, even sometimes by the advantage
of the enemies legge, while the left hand (like him that helde the Sterne)
gyded the horses obedient courage: All done in such order, that it might
seeme, the mind was a right Prince indeed, who sent wise and diligent
Lieutenants into each of those well governed partes. But the more they
fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarted, the lesse
they felt the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke proofe, to whom
Fortune or Valour would seeme most friendly, when in comes an olde
Gournour of Amphialus; always a good Knight, and carefull of his charge;
who giuing a sore wounde to the blacke Knightes thigh, while he thought not
of him, with an other blowe slewe his horse vnder him. Amphialus cried to
him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to
stande now like a priuate souldier, setting your credite vpon particular
fighting, while you may see Basilius with all his hoste, is getting betweene
you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeed, that the enemy
was beginning to encompasse him about, and stoppe his returne: and
therefore causing the retreite to be sounded, his Gournour ledde his
men homewarde, while he kepte him selfe still hindmoste, as if hee had
stooed at the gate of a sluse, to lette the streame goe, with such proportion,
as shoulde seeme good vnto him: and with so manfull discretion
perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he returned in
him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felt, how sharpe the
swordes could bite of Philocleas Lourer. The other partie being sori for the
losse of Philanax, was yet sorrier when the blacke Knight could not be
found. For he hauing gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had
bequeathed to the world, finding himselfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be
knowen, had in the time of the enemies retiring, retired away also: his thigh
not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde reuenge. But Basilius hauing
attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne of Amphialus, encamped
himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his grief) might heare the ioy
was made in the town by his owne subjectes, that he had that day sped no
better. For Amphialus (being well beloued of that people) when they sawe
him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a
flourishing shew vpon his worthinesse, and his great nobilitie ennobling his
dangers.
CHAP. 9.

1 The Loue-diuining dreame of Amphialus song to Philoclea. 2 Philanax his captiuitie, and deaths-doome, 3 for Philocleas sake turnde to life and libertie. 4 His loyall answere of his Lords intents. 5 Cecropias artes to perswade the sisters.

Vt the first thing Amphialus did, being returned, was to visite Philoclea, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song vnto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in loue with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes vnto it. The song was this.

Now was our heauenly vaulte depriued of the light
With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night
Did light those beamye stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enioy'd that firie quickning sparke
(Which life is cald) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting use of eyes their eyes began to close:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When I, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did giue
My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet liue,
Whose braines broile not in woes, nor brests with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aspire,
Who under courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those captiuing snares,
Which heau'ly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,
As tender conscience might with furious panges assaultte.
But like the feeble flower (whose stalke cannot sustaine
His weighty top) his top doth downeward drooping leane:
Or as the silly birde in well acquainted nest
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to rest:
So I in simple course, and vnettangled minde
Did suffer drousie lids mine eyes then chare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule obserue,
Which senses vp doth shut the senses to preserue.
They first their vse forgot, then fancies lost their force;
Till deadly sleepe at length possest my liuing coarse.
A liuing coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heau'nly stuffe no mortal chauge doth blind)
Flew vp with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;
And hauing plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.

Me thought, nay sure I was, I was in fairest wood
Of Samothea lande; a lande, which whilom stood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fedd
On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull senses ledd.
Her giftes my study was, her beauties were my sporte:
My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my resorte.
Those lampes of heau'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
The euer-turning spheares, the neuer-mouing ground;
What essence destinie hath; if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth doo flowe:
What life it is, and how that all these liues doo gather.
With outward makers force, or like an inward father.
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straind my single mind
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)
(Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,
Or canons thunder-like, all shot togethier, lende)
The Moone a sunder rent; whereout with sodaine fall
(More swift then falcons stoops to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doues and sparrowes guided:
Whose stormelike course staid not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But streight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
They seemd to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more vnfit then strange.
The first with cloth's tuckt vp as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt vp even with the knees, with bowe and arrowes prest:
Her right arme naked was, discouered was her brest.
But heauy was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As stuffe meant for the sale set out to glaring shoewe)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, shinde.
When I such guests did see come out of such a house,
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought foorth a mouse.
But walking forth, the first thus to the second saide,
Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obaide.
Those names abasht me much, whe[n] those great names I hard:
Although their fame (me seemd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus musing stood, Diana cald to her
The waiting Nymph, a Nyrnpe that did excell as farr
All things that earst I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother hight, or els their silly seed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a sweet consent
Of all those Graces giftes the heavens have euer lent.
And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.
But cald, she came apace; a pace wherein did moue
The bande of beauties all, the little world of Loue.
And bending bumbled eyes (ô eyes the Sunne of sight)
She waited mistresse will: who thus disclosd her spright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect proofe I finde,
To onely thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace
Vs to attend, in this most priuate time and place,
Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
Of that thou seest: close vp in secrete knot thy will.
She answered was with looke, and well perform'd behest:
And Mira admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.
But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
Diana did begin. What mou'd me to inuite
Your presence (sister deare),first to my Moony spheare,
And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what discord long hath raign'd
Betwixt vs two; how much that discord foule hath stain'd
Both our estates, while each the other did deprauie,
Proofe speakes too much to vs that feeling triall haue.
Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defaced:
Our offrings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displaced
Is this the fruite of strife? those thousand churches hie,
Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserue:
No knees once bowed, forsooth, for them they say we serue.
Are we their seruants growne? no doubt a noble staye:
Celestiall powers to wormes, Ioues children serue to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall spight a struing passion fed.
But let vs wiser be; and what foule discorde brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares doo it require: you see we both doo feele
The weakning worke of Times for euer-whirling wheele.
Although we be diuine, our grandsire Saturne is
With ages force decayed, yet once the heavne was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill
Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)
Let vs a perfect peace betweene vs two resolue:
Which lest the ruinous want of gouernment dissolue;
Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.
And let her haue the giftes that should in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.
So as if I preuaile, you giue your giftes to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth onely this, which of vs two is she,
"To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned vnto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Who may this doubt discerne: for better, witt, then lot
Becommeth vs: in vs fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him giue, when both he hath beheld:
And be it as he saith. Venus was glad to heare
Such proffer made, which she well showd with smiling cheere.
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie ouercome.
And smirkyly thus gan say. I neuer sought debate
Diana deare; my minde to loue and not to hate
Was euery apt: but you my pastimes did despise.
I neuer spited you, but thought you ouerwise.
Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
And let him be our iudge: the lad doth please me well.
Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
(For both togither spake, each loth to be behinde)
That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde
To stand vnto my will: their will they made me know.
I that was first agast, when first I saw their shoue:
Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare: 
For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reverent feare.
And hauing bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye 
To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.
How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught: 
Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.
To yonder Nymphe therefore (to Mira I did point) 
The crowne aboue you both for euer I appoint.
I would haue spoken out: but out they both did crie; 
Fie, fie, what haue we done? vngodly rebell fie.
But now we needs must yeelde, to that our othes require.
Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire 
Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde, 
That thou full oft shalt wish thy iudging eyes were blinde.
Nay then (Diana said) the chastnesse I will giue 
In ashes of despaine (though burnt) shall make thee liue.
Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beames shine in her face 
That thou shalt neuer dare seeke helpe of wretched case.
And with that cursed curse away to heauen they fled, 
First hauing all their giftes vpon faire Mira spred.
The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd 
And found with deadly feare that all my sinewes shak'd.
Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me, 
That I things erst vnseene should first in dreaming see?
And thou ô traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest, 
How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?
O cowarde Cupid thus doost thou thy honour keepe, 
Vnarmde (alas) vnwares to take a man asleepe?

Laying not onely the conquests, but the hart of the co[n]querour at her feet. *** But she receiuing him after her woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise vnmoued) maner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but a pleasant monument of a dolefull buriall: Ioy it selfe seeming bitter vnto him, since it agreed not to her taste.

Therefore, still crauing his mothers helpe to persuade her, he himself sent for Philanax vnto him, whom he had not onely long hated, but nowe had his hate greatly encreased by the death of his Squire Ismenus. Besides he had made him as one of the chiefe causes that mooued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to colour the better his action, and the more to embrewe the handes of his accomplices by making them guiltie of such a trespassse) in some formall sort to cause him to be executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other,
who long had hated Philanax, onely because he was more worthy to be loued then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the reason of ech speaker, Philoclea comming to knowledge of the hard plight wherein Philanax stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite vpon her, to goe in her name, and beseech Amphialus, that if the loue of her had any power of perswasion in his minde, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment, vppon Philanax. This message was deliuered even as Philanax was entring to the presence of Amphialus, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to receyve a judgement of death. But when he with manfull resolution attended the fruite of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that shoulde die in so good a cause; Amphialus turned quite the fourme of his pretended speech, and yeelded him humble thankes, that by his meanes he had come to that happinesse, as to receiue a commandement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gaue him libertie to returne in safetye whither he would; quitting him, not onely of all former grudge, but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship, and service: onely desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent of Basilius-his proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (answered Philanax) if there were any such knowne to me, secrete in my maisters counsaile, as that the reuelling thereof might hinder his good successe, I shoulde loath the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith; and woulde thinke the iust name of a traitour a harde purchase of a fewe yeares liuing. But since it is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of priuie practise, but meanes openly and forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in fewe wordes to make your required declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement, both Basilius and Gynecia were, when they mist their children and Zelmane. Sometimes apt to suspect some practise of Zelmane, because she was a straunger; sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather encreased, then any way satisfied, by Miso: who (being founde, almost deade for hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning they were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a fewe dayes they came to knowledge where they were, with Amphialus-his, owne letters sent abroade to procure confederates in his attemptes. That Basilius his purpose was neuer to leaue the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and reuenged the iniurie done vnto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiaunt men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had sent order, that supplyes of souldiours, pioners,
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

and all things else necessarie, shoulde dayly be brought vnto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde Philanax) let me nowe, hauing receyved my life by your grace, let me giue you your life and honour by my counsaile; protesting vnto you, that I cannot choose but loue you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgiue, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault passed is excusable, in that Loue perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not urge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantly by courtesie, which you can neuer assuredly enjoy by violence. One might easily haue seene in the cheare of Amphialus, that disdainfull choller woulde faine haue made the aunswere for him, but the remembraunce of Philoclea serued for forcib[l]e barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: so as he saide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he listed, presently. Philanax glad to receyve an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his fauourable conuoy out of the towne; and so departed, not hauing visited the Princesses, thinking it might be offensiue to Amphialus, and no way fruitfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieued.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet together, or to haue conference with any other, but such as Cecropia had alreadie framed to sing all her songs to her tune, she herselxe omitting no day, and catching holde of euerie occasion to moue forward her sonnes desire, and remoue their knowne resolutions: vsing the same arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne first, the other shoulde (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handeling was diverse, according as she sawe their humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day hauing vsed long speech to Philoclea, amplifying not a little the great duetifulnesse her sonne had shewed in deliuering Philanax: of whome she coulde get no aunswere, but a silence sealed vp in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried with it both resistance, and humblenesse.

CHAP. 10.

1 Pamela's exercise. Cecropias talke with her 2 of Beautie and the vse thereof. 4 The Auntes Atheisme 5 refuted by the Neeces Diuinitie.
Ecropia threatening in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her, went to her sister Pamela: who that day hauing wearied her selfe with reading, and with the height of her hart disdaining to keepe companie with any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome she accounted her iaylours, was woorking vppon a purse certaine Roses and Lillies, as by the finenesse of the worke, one might see she had borrowed her wittes of the sorow that owed them, & lent them wholy to that exercise. For the flowers she had wrought, caried such life in them, that the cuningest painter might haue learned of her needle: which with so pretie a maner made his careers to & fro[m] through the cloth, as if the needle it selfe would haue bene loth to haue gone froward such a mistres, but that it hoped to return the[n]ceward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies vpon her, & louingly embracing the wounds she gaue it: the sheares also were at hand to behead the silke, that was growne to short. And if at any time she put her mouth to bite it off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making of a Rose with her hand, she would in an instant make Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to haue their whitenesse, rather of the hande that made them, then of the matter whereof they were made; and that they grew there by the Sunes of her eyes, & were refreshed by the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an vnwares sigh might bestow vpon them. But the colours for the grounde were so well chosen, neither sullenly darke, nor glaringly lightsome, and so well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in it, yet it was but to serue for an ornament of the principall worke; that it was not without marvaile to see, howe a minde which could cast a carelesse semblant vpon the greatest conflictes of Fortune, coulde commaunde it selfe to take care for so small matters. Neither had she neglected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had ben her mariage time to Affliction, she rather semed to remember her owne worthinesse, then the unworthinesse of her husband. For well one might perceyve she had not reiected the counsaile of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so dierse from her sister, (who rather suffered sorrow to distresse it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any entertainment of so vnwelcome a guest) made Cecropia take a suddaine assurednesse of hope, that she should obtaine somewhat of Pamela: thinking (according to the squaring out of her own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold soone proue a signe of an unrefusing harborough. Animated wherewith, she sate downe by Pamela: and taking the purse, and with affected curiositie looking vpon the worke, Full happie is he (saide she) at least if he knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this maner,
and by this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall haue cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be pursed vp in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (said Pamela halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres beleue, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but euen as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide Cecropia) of Beautie, to woorke vnwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (saide Pamela) I neuer thought till nowe, that this outward glasse, intitled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleaasunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beastes haue; but euen stones and trees many of them doo greatly excell in it. That other things (answered Cecropia) haue some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that euen those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them onely is giuen the judgement to discerne Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the preheminence, so that in that preheminence, Nature counter-vailes all other liberalities, wherein she may be thought to haue dealte more fauourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themselues with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they woulde haue perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not onely commaund without authentic, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquere; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so commaund it, but because they become lawes to the[m]selues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare, or by Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring foorth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and she neede not seeke offensiue, or defensiue force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shields, and tenne thousand vneuitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gifte, on whom soeuer the heauens (therein most nigardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to vse it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preseruing; since that indeede is the right happiness, which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also deriue the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said Pamela) I feare me you will make me not onely thinke my selfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairenes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I coulde imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceaued these conquests you spake of, rather to proceed
from the weakenes of the conquered, then from the strength of the conquerors quering power: as they say, the Cranes ouerthrowe whole batailles of Pygmees, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are Pygmees: and that we see, young babes think babies of woonders and excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your elder yeares, and abler judgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we account pretious) euer to suffer it to be defiled.

Defiled? (said Cecropia) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deserue so foul a title. My meaning is to ioyne your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it: and therfore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preseruing of it: for Beauty goes away, deuoured by Time, but where remains it euer flourishing, but in the hart of a true louer? And such a one (if euer there were any) is my son: whose loue is so subjected vnlo to you, that rather then breed any offence vnlo to you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his loue (answered Pamela) better pleaseth me then that: but as I haue ofte[n] answered you, so, resolutely I say vnlo to you, that he must get my parents consent, & then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I should offend God. O sweet youth (said Cecropia) how vntimely subiect it is to deuotion? No, no sweet neece, let vs old folks think of such precise consideratio[n]s, do you enioy the heauen of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good hous-holders, which spend those things that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enioy that, which else will bring an ouer-late repentance, whe[n] your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, decking it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of Autumn? what lesson is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like April? Let not some of the, for whom alredy the graue gapeth, & perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which the[m]selues cannot enioy, persuade you to lose the hold of occasio[n], while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be take[n]: which if it be not now taken, will never hereafter be ouertaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & wil you suffer your beauty to be hid in the wrinckles of his peuish thoughts? If he be peuish (said Pamela) yet is he my father, & how beautiful soeuer I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no iudge of his imperfections.

These often replies vpon conscience in Pamela, made Cecropia thinke,
that there was no righter waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to be voide of purpose, so if she coulde make her lesse feeling of those heauenly conceipts, that then she might easilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the vtttermost of her mischieuous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might preuaile therein) how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I haue of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Deuotion, indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes haue found, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are most glad of: So are these bug-beares of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serue as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not to be helde vp by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should loue Vertue seruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but euen for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the first inuenter of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angrie body aboue, that spake so lowde: and euer the lesse they did perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Whereof they knew no cause that grewe streight a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but vpon particular accidents, the vniuersalitie being alwaies one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, sauing only Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he striues to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wise, and that wisedome shalbe a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) aboue, are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our actions; caries asmuch reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblest.

She would haue spoken further to haue enlarged & co[n]firmed her discourse: but Pamela (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glistered forth beames of disdaine) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, vnworthy to breathe, that doenst not acknowledge the breath-giuer; most vnworthy to haue a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest:
keeepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the euerlasting gouernour? Would you haue an inconstant God, since we count a man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seene by so wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport-sake willingly hood-wincke themselues to receaue blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bodie else here to iudge of my speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captuiitie, that my cares shall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You saie, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true & liuely deuotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we liue, hath not his being by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond mervaile by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things vnsufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not haue happened; or els it did not happen; and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, the[n] not being. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was deriued fro[m] Chaunce: for Chaunce could neuer make all things of nothing: and if there were substaunces before, which by chaunce shoulde meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitt of absurdities. For then those substaunces must needes haue bene from euer, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should be the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all thinges, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therfore in reason we must needs know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downewarde, the light infinitely vpwarde, and so neuer haue mett to haue made vp this goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heauen) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if
you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular
gouernement to establish this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and
ethereall partes should in their towne-house set downe the boundes of each
ones office; then consider what followes: that there must needes haue bene a
wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absolute
contrarie, in nature rather woulde haue sought each others ruine, then haue
serued as well Consorted partes to such an vnexpressable harmonie. For that
contrary things should meeete to make vp a perfectio[n] without a force and
Wisedome aboue their powers, is absolutely impossible; vnles you will flie
to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme,
that one vniuersall Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together
of these many partes to such an excellent vnitie. If you meane a Nature of
wisdome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then say you
that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with
which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as
we speake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the
nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to observer so iust a
daunce, and yet vnderstands no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie
subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that
which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a lesse
matter, when we say one kingdome which conteines many citties; or one
cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the vnnder ones (if there be not
a superiour power and wisedome) cannot by nature regarde to any
preservation but of themselues: no more we see they doo, since the water
willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a
conspired vnitie: but that a right heauenly Nature indeed, as it were
vnnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an vnitie many contraries
should proceede still kept in an vnitie: as that from the number of
contrarieties an vnitie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a
singularitie, and pluralitie of judgement from among them, then (if so
earthly a minde can lift it self vp so hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing
whereto you giue the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is
eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-
being; which is so to be, as not to enioy his owne being? I will not here call
all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes
not most evident evidence of the vnspeakeablenesse of that Wisedome: each
thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preseruation: so proper
effects of judgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can euer so enueagle any conceipte, as to see our
mortall and corruptible selues to haue a reason, and that this vniuersalitie
(whereof we are but the lest pieces) should be utterly deuoide thereof? as if
one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This
hearde I once alledged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being
driuen to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be
better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other
were voide; he sought (not able to answere directly) to shifte it of in this
sorte: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde
must haue in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be learned; since
that was in vs so commendable: wretched foole, not considering that
Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are prayed, because they helpe
our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which
needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then
the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulnessse. This
worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisedome,
whiche gouernes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof,
as vndoubtedly he is, or the soule and gouernour thereof, most certaine it is
that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his
creatures, or his gouernement. And if his power be aboue all thinges, then
consequently it must needes be infinite, since there is nothing aboue it to
limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needes be boundlesse, and
infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be
infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he
shoulde not know how to vse; the vnsensiblenesse whereof I thinke euem
you can conceaue: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of
flies (which you with so vnsauerie skorne did iest at) be vnknowne vnto
him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not
infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needs his goodnesse
and iustice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes of power, &
knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring
foorth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preseruation. Since then
there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all
naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man; and sees therein the deepest
dissembled thoughts, nay sees the thoughts before they be thought: since he
is iust to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his iustice, assure thy
selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou
canst not keepe thy sickenesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect
others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of euerlasting and
vnremoueable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that
power by feeling it, when thou shalt see his wisedome in the manifesting
thy ougly shamelesnesse, and shalt onely perceiue him to haue bene a
Creator in thy destruction.

CHAP. 11.
1 Cecropia malcontent, still practiseth. 2 The besiegers discipline, and attempts of the besieged. 3 Phalantus challengeth 4 by Letter Amphialus: 5 who by Letter accepteth it. 6 Amphialus 7 and Phalantus militar accoustrements. 8 Their fo-like combate, 9 but friendly conclusion.

Hus she saide, thus she ended, with so faire a maiestie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might seeme to haue authoritie ouer tyranny: so fowly was the filthinesse of impietie discovered by the shining of her vnstayed goodnes, so farre, as either Cecropia saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her eies vntrue iudges of their natural obiect, that there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a lustre to her perfections. But Cecropia, like a Batte (which though it haue eyes to discerne that there is a Sunne, yet hath so euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as great persons are woont to make the wrong they haue done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her knowledge rose to no higher point, but to enuie a worthier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more to hate, the more she founde her enemie prouided against her. Yet all the while she spake (though with eyes cast like a horse that woulde strike at the stirrop, and with colour which blushed through yellownesse) she sate rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather muttered, then replied; for the warre of wickednesse in her selfe, brought forth disdainedfull pride to resist cunning dissimulation; so as, saying little more vnnto her, but that she shoulde haue leysure inough better to bethinke her selfe; she went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her sonnes ouer-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, determining to deale with neither of them both any more in maner of a suter: for what maiestie of vertue did in the one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But finding her sonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of sorrowe vppon himselfe, she sought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of comforte, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himselfe) was the more vexed, that he coulde not utter the rage thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For Basilius taught by the last dayes triall, what daungerous effectes chosen courages can bring forth, rather vsed the spade, then the sworde; or the sworde, but to defende the spade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caried before him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answering the other,
in such sort, as it was a prettie consideration in the discipline of warre, to see building used for the instrument of ruine, and the essayler entrenched as if he were besieged. But many sallies did Amphialus make to hinder their woorking. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him finde, that if by the advantage of place, fewe are able to defende themselfes from manie, that manie must needes haue power, (making themselfes strong in seate) to repell fewe; referring the reuenge rather to the ende, then a present requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, eche side hauing a strong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great success.

Which euerie way was a tedious comber to the impacient courage of Amphialus: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diuerse, both straungers, and subiects, as well of princely, as noble houses, the gallant Phalantus, who restrayned his sportfull delightes as then, to serue Basilius, (whome he honoured for receyued honours) when he had spent some time in considering the Arcadian manner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of gouernement, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and had satisfied his minde in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furnishing ones selfe, which Basilius orders coulde deliuer vnto him, his yong spirites (wearie of wanting cause to be wearie) desired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by some priuate acte, since the publique policie restrayned him; the rather, because his olde mistresse Artesia might see, whome she had so lightly forsaken: and therefore demaunding and obteyning leaue of Basilius; he caused a Heraulde to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable message, and so sent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of Amphialus: who vnderstanding thereof, caused him both safely, and courteously to be brought into his presence: who making lowly reuerence vnto him, presented his Letters, desiring Amphialus that whatsoeuer they conteyned, he woulde consider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. Amphialus with noble gentlenesse assured him both, by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which aunswered for him, that his reuenge, whensoever, should sort vnto it selfe a higher subiect. But opening the Letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

Phalantus of Corinthe, to Amphialus of Arcadia, sendeth the greeting of a hatelesse enemie. The liking of martiall matters without anie mislike of your person, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your besiegers: where languishing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my minde with some exercise of armes, which might make knowne the dooers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your
Towne, that eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his Loue, well armed, on horsebacke, with launce, and sworde, will winne another, or loose himselfe, to be a prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne rising, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furnished. The place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake, because it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as that the Ladies may haue the pleasure of seeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Castell, I desire no better securitie, then the promise I make to my selfe of your vertue. I attende your aunswere, and wish you such successe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iust, then in mainteyning wrong by much violence.

Amphialus read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking but a little with himselfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunswere.

Amphialus of Arcadia, to Phalantus of Corinthe, wisheth all his owne wishes, sauing those which may be hurtful to another. The matter of your letters so fit for a worthy minde, and the maner so sutable to the noblenesse of the matter, giue me cause to thinke howe happie I might accounte my selfe, if I coulde get such a friende, who esteeme it no small happinesse to haue mette with so noble an enemie. Your chalenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any treacherie (hauing no hostage woorthie to countervaile you) take my woorde, which I esteeme above all respectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; since true valure needes no other whetstone, then desire of honour.

Having writte and sealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Heraulde, and withall tooke a faire chaine from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And so with safe conuoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, Amphialus shewed vnto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsalours, what he had receyued, and howe he had aunswered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunswere the chalenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde gouernour with perswasions mingled with reprehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a priuate fighter, then of a wise Generall) Clinias with falling downe at his feete, and beseeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vppon his safetie, sought all to dissuade him. But Amphialus (whose hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off the tediousnesse of replyes, giving them in charge, what they shoulde doo vppon all occasions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if otherwise then well happened vnto
him: onely desiring his mother, that she woulde bring *Philoclea* to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discerne the combat. And so, as soone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of sure seruice, before a great nu[m]ber of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black spots; his forhead marked with a white starre; to which, in all his bodie there was no part sutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde ennamell, enriched with preutious stones: his furniture was made into the fashio[n] of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and so artificiallie were the leaues made, that as the horse moued, it seemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the *Torpedo* fish. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom he had taken since the death of *Ismenus*) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vttermost both of launce and sword, and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no accesse to it, but by water: there coulde no secrete trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might haue time inough to succour their party.

But there he found *Phalantus*, alredy waiting for him vpon a horse, milke white, but that vpon his shoulder and withers, he was fretned with red staines, as when a few strawberies are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the bosse, brought foorth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so liuely, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it semed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately deliuered) guilde in most places. His shield was beautified with this deuice; A greyhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not whe[n] it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*
But as soon as Amphialus landed, he sent his squire to Phalantus, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. Phalantus answered, that his answere now must be in the la[n] guage of launces; & so each attended the warning of the tru[m]pets, which were to sound at the appointment of four[e] judges, who with consideration of the same, had deuided the ground. Phalantus-his horse young, and feeling the youth of his master, stoode courretting; which being wel gouerned by Phala[n]tus, gaue such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines vpon a waueing water, Amphialus-horse stood panting vpon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurre to their horses, together took their launces from their thighes, conuedied them vp into their restes together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their horses keeping an euen line their masters had skilfully allotted vnto them, passed one by another without encountering, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the staues being come to a iust descent, but euen when the mark was ready to meet them, Amphialus was runne through the vamplate, and vnder the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake Phalantus iust vpon the gorget, so as he battred the lamms therof, and made his head almost touch the back of his horse. But either side having staied the spur, & vsed the bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the tro[n]cheons of their staues, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death-threatning trumpet, which quickly folowed; and they assoone making their horses answer their ha[n] ds, with a ge[n]tle galop, set the one toward the other; til being come in the neernes of little more then a staues length. Amphialus trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthening it with the course of his horse, strake Phalantus vpon the head, in such sort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his sight, and astonish his hearing. But Phalantus (not accustomed to be vngratefull to such benefites) strake him vpon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut asunder: though the faithfulnes of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till Amphialus-his horse, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a little before, as he was woont to doo in his courret: which advantage Amphialus taking, set forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as Phalantus-his horse
came ouer with his master vnder him. Which Amphialus seeing, lighted, with intention to help Phalantus. But his horse that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gate vp from burdning his burden, so as Phalantus (in the fall hauing gotten his feete free of & the stirrop) could (though something bruised) arise, seeing Amphialus neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giue[n] him any help in remouing his horse. Amphialus said No. Truely sayd Phalantus, I asked it, because I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (said Phalantus) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. Amphialus listing to keepe him selfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentlema[n], to whom Amphialus that day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, hauing neuer before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said Phalantus in a rage) And must I be the exercise of your prentisage? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the co[m]bat, & boiling in his armes the disdaine of his harte, strake so thicke vpon Amphialus, as if euery blow would faine haue bene foremost. But Amphialus (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leaue small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble auoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nackedes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a sowne.

But Amphialus, pittying approued valoure, made pretious by naturall curtesie, went to him; & taking of his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight (disdained to buy life with yeelding) had him vse his fortune: for he was resolued neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (said Amphialus) if it be not to my request, that you will account your self to haue great interest in me. Phalantus more ouercome by his kindnes, the[n] by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. Amphialus, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his frie[n]d. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renowned valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednes of good will, Phalantus, (of whom Amphialus would haue no other raunsome, but his word of frie[n]dship) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enimies of Amphialus: but went to seeke his adventures other-where.

CHAP. 12.
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

1 Philocleas *il-taking* Amphialus *wel-meaning*. 2 His challenge and conquests continued for *Loue, & his loue*. 3 Argalus sent for to this challenge. 4 The coniugall happiness of him and his wife. 5 The passions stirred by this message. 6 Their sorrow-sounding farewell. 7 Argalusis *defie*. 8 Amphialusis *answere*. 9 Argalusis *furniture*. 10 Their combat, bloudy to both, deadly to Argalus. 11 Parthenia comes to the end of it, and him. 12 Her 13 and his lamentations. 14 The funerals.

As for Amphialus he was receaued with triumph into the castle; although one might see by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window where Philoclea stood) that he was rather suppliant, then victorious: whiche occasion Cecropia taking, (who as then stoode by Philoclea, and had lately lefte Pamela in another roome, whence also she might see the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see, whether you haue cause to loue my sonne, who then lies vnder your feete, when he standes vpon the necke of his brauest enemies. Alas said Philoclea, a simple servise to me, me thinkes it is, to haue those, who come to succour me, destroied: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it so: but the effects it brings foorth I confesse I account hatefull. Cecropia grew so angry with this vnkind answere, that she could not abstayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed: but that if her sonne would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of Amphialus in like cases) framed to him a very thankefull message, poudring it with some hope-giving phrases; which were of such ioy to Amphialus, that he (though against publike respect:, & importunity of dissuaders) presently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that whatsoeuer Knight would trie the like fortune as Phalantus did, he should in like sorte be answered: so as diuers of the valiantest, partly of themselues, partly at the instigation of Basilius, attempted the combat with him: and according to euery ones humour, so were the causes of the challege grou[n]ded: one laying treason to his charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serue Philoclea; a third, exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to Loue it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reason, the betrayer of resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the vnderminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of vice, the slaue to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madness of age; the curse of life, and reproch of deathe; a fifth, disdayning to caste at lesse then at all, woulde make the cause of his
quarrell the causers of loue, and proclayme his blasphemies against womankind; that namely that sex was the oversight of Nature, the disgrace of reasonablenes, the obstinate cowards, the slae-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities, the guilded wethercocks; in who[m] conscience is but peeuishnes, chastitie waywardnes, & gratefulnes a miracle. But all these challenges (how wel so euer endited) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though past learning themselues; & some by yeelding gaue themselues the lie for hauing blasphemed; to the great grieue of Basilius, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his own sight to crowne himselfe with deserued honour.

Wherupon thirsting for reuenge, & else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his campe being already ouerthrowne; he sent a messenger to Argalus, in whose approued courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence, with a letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto spared him in respect: of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it) felicitie standing vpon it, he could no longer forbeare to chalenge of him his faithfull seruice.

The messenger made speede, and found Argalus at a castle of his owne, sitting in a parler with the faire Parthenia, he reading in a booke the stories of Hercules, she by him, as to heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she looked on his eies, & sometimes staying him with some pretie question, not so much to be resolued of the double; as to giue him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her, she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she enjoied him: both encreasing their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, because they made a double life; one, where desire neuer wanted satisfactio[n], nor satisfaction neuer bred sacietie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, & hast in his countenance, though she knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he deliuered his letters and message; yet a far of she looked, now at the messenger, & then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to haue cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she fou[n]d there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eie cast vpon her, & finding hers vpon him, he blushed; & she blushed, because he blushed; and yet streight grew paler, because she knew not why he had blushed. But when he had read, & heard, & dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow; he came to Parthenia, and as sore as might be for parting, and
yet more sorie for her sorrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with
fearful slownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and hauing
read it, Ah my Argalus (said she) and haue you made such hast to answere?
and are you so soone resolued to leaue me? But he discoursing vtnto her,
how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew
it would be deare vtnto her) her reason ouerclowded with sorow, suffered
her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes;
which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his
present departure.

By that time he was armde, and readie to go, she had recouered a little
strength of spirite againe, &
coming out, & seing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure
but her farewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling
downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or saw her
demeanour, My Argalus, my Argalus (said she) doo not thus forsake me.
Remember, alas, Remember that I haue interest in you, which I will neuer
yeeld shalbe thus adventured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne:
sufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there
are besides you to loose lesse worthie liues. Woe is me, what shall become
of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these
adventures, when you adventured no body but your selfe, and were no
bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime
mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can vndertake no da[n]ger: &
will you endager Parthenia? Parthenia shalbe in the battle of your fight:
Parthenia shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by
Parthenia. Deare Parthenia (said he) this is the first time, that euer you
resisted my will: I thanke you for it; but perseuer not in it; & let not the
teares of those most beloued eies be a presage vtnto me of that, which you
would not should happen. I shal liue, doubte not: for so great a blessing, as
you are, was not giuen vtnto me, so soone to be depriued of it. Looke for me
therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a ioyfull welcome, and I will
wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-
striken with amazement: for true Loue made obedience stande vp against all
other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to printe his
harte in her sweete lippes, she fell in a sounde, so as he was faine to leaue
her to her Gentlewomen; and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour,
though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe.
When understanding the notable victories of Amphialus, he thought to giue
him some dayes respite of rest, because he woulde not haue his victorie
disgraced by the others wearinesse. In which dayes, he sought by all meanes
(hauing leaue to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and
then imparting his mind to Basilius, because he found Amphialus was
inflexible, wrote his defie vtnto him in this maner.
Right famous Amphialus, if my persuasion in reason, or praier in
good wil, might preuaile with you, you should by better meanes be
like to obteine your desire. You shoulde make many braue enemies become
your faithful serua[n]ts, & make your honor flie vp to the heaue[n], being
caried vp by both the wings of valure & iustice; whereof now it wants the
latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no place in you, disdaine not
to receiue a mortall chalenge, from a man so farre inferiour vtto you in
vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deed, as I haue the doer in
admiration. Prepare therfore your self, according to the noble maner you
haue vsed, and think not lightly of neuer so weake an arme, which strikes
with the sword of iustice.
To this quickely he receiued this answere.

MVch more famous Argalus, I, whom neuer threatnings could make afraid,
am now terrified by
your noble curtesie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it
doeth proceed, and what cause I haue to doubt such vertue bent to my
ruine: but Loue, which iustifieth the vniustice you lay vtto me, dooth
also animate me against all daungers, since I come full of him by whom
your selue haue beene (if I be not deceiued) sometimes conquered. I will
therefore attend your apperaunce in the Ile, carying this advantage with me,
that as it shal be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there can be no
dishonour in being ouercome by Argalus.

The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, Argalus was armed in a
white armour, which was
guilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the
crest of his head-peece, and spread it selfe in rich qua[n]titie ouer all his
armour: his furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof
the beake (made into a rich iewell) was fastened to the saddle, the taile
couered the crooper of the horse, and the wings serued for trappers; which
falling of ech side, as the horse stirred, the bird seemed to flie. His pettrell
and reines, were embrodered with feathers sutable vtto it: vpon his right
arme he ware a sleeue, which his deare Parthenia had made for him, to be
worne in a iustee, in the time that successe was vngratefull to their well-
deserued loue: It was full of bleeding hartes, though neuer intended to any
bloooddie enterprise. In this shield (as his owne deuice) he had two Palme
trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, In that sort flourishing.
His horse was of a fine sorrell, with blacke feete, and blacke list on his
back, who with open nostrels breathed warre, before he could see an enemy:
and now vp with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of
Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie.

But he had scarcely viewed the grounde of the Ilande, and
considered the advauntages (if any were) therof, before the Castel
boat had deliuered Amphialus, in al points prouided to giue a hard
entertainme[n]t. And then sending each to other their Squires in honourable manner, to know whether they should attend any further ceremony; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running, their staves with unshaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke commandements.

But when they drew nere, Argalus—his horse being hot, prest in with his head: which Amphialus perceiuing, knowing if he gaued him his side, it should be to his disaduauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being striken) tumbled downe to the earth, daangerously to their maister, but that they by strength nimble, and by use skillfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without more respite, drewe out their swords with a gallant brauerie, each striving to shewe himselfe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had nowe nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that Amphialus was the sooner vp; but Argalus had his sworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the cruellest combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swordes first, like Canons, battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almost in euerie place for troupes of woundes to enter. Among the rest, Argalus gaued a great wound to Amphialus—his disarmed face; though part of the force of it Amphialus warded vpon his shielde, and with-all (first casting his eye vp to Philocleas Window, as if he had fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the same sort of blowes, turned his sword, and with a mightie reuerse, gaue a cruell wounde to the right arme of Argalus, the vnfaythfull armour yeelding to the swordes strong-guided sharpenesse. But though the blood accused the hurt of Argalus, yet woulde he in no action of his confess it: but keeping himselfe in a lower warde, stoode watching with timely thrustes to repaire his losse; which quickly he did. For Amphialus (following his fawning fortune) laid on so thicke vpon Argalus, that his shield had almost fallen piece-meale to the earth, when Argalus comming in with his right foote, and something stowping to come vnnder his armour, thrust him into the belly daangerously, and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blowe before, Amphialus had ouerthrowne himselfe so, as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling saued himselfe from ruine. The sworde by that meanes slipping aside, and not pearcing more deepely, Argalus seeing him fall, threatening with voyce and sworde, bad him yeelde. But he struing without aunswere to rise, Argalus strake with all his might vpon his head. But his hurte arme not able to maister so sounde a force, let the sworde fall so, as Amphialus, though astonished with the blowe, could arise: which Argalus considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together; falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so vnlovely embracements, with a dissenting consent gate vp, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where Argalus finding his foes sworde garnished in his blood,
hart rase with the same swoorde to reuenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receyued still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his master no better. But Amphialus perceiuing it, & waying the small hatefulnesse of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himselfe. But Argalus, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disaduauntage, filling his veynes with spite in steade of blood, and making courage arise agaynst faintnesse, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greatest blaze) so did he vnite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his swoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armour, and arme almost to the bone.

But then Amphialus forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being staied by his eare, his eare filled with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came running as fast as she could, and yet because she coulde not as fast as she would, she sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them both, to be the beautifull Parthenia, (who had that night dreamed shee sawe her husbande in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste thither) they both maruailed. But Parthenia ranne betweene them (feare of loue making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining so to part them, till she coulde get breathe to sigh out her doolefull speeches: and when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made slowe to returne) had by sobbes gotten into her sorrow-closed breast, for a while she coulde say nothing, but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull sight, O day of darkenesse: at length turning her eyes (wherein sorrowe swamme) to Amphialus, My Lorde (saide she) it is saide you loue; in the power of that loue, I beseech you to leaue of this combate, as euen your harte may finde comfort in his affection, euen for her sake, I craue it: or if you be mortally determined, be so pitifull vnto me, as first to kill me, that I may not see the death of Argalus.

Amphialus was aboute to haue aunswered, when Argalus, vexed with his Fortune, but most vexed that she should see him in that fortune, Ah Parthenia (saide he) neuer till nowe vnwelcome vnto me, do you come to get my life by request? And can not Argalus liue but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside, for feare of hurting her, and woulde haue begunne the combate afresh. But Amphialus not onely coniured by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with compassion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withholde his handes, for that he should strike one, who sought his favoure, and woulde not make resistaunce. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where
the conquerour, sought for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered woulde not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for giuing mercie, and neyther affected to ouer-liue a dishonour: so that Argalus not so much striuing with Amphialus (for if he had had him in the like sorte, in like sort he would haue dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised) set himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the vtttermost. But the fire of that strife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such aboundance, that he was driuen to rest him vpon the pommel of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazled, and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sowne. Parthenia, and Amphialus both hastely went vnto him: Amphialus tooke of his helmet, and Parthenia laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen sleeues & partlet, to serue about his wounds; to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would haue cut of her faire haire herselffe, but that the squires and iudges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to haue taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardest mettall.

O Parthenia, no more Parthenia (said she) What art thou? what seest thou? how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, euene now before all Ladies the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God, what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such haue bene my desert, why was I not in my selfe punished? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp inough to saue my labour from other remedies. Argalus, Argalus, I will folow thee, I wil folow thee.

But with that Argalus came out of his sowne, and lifting vp his languishing eyes (which a painefull rest, and iron sleepe did seeke to lock vp) seeing her, in who[m] (euen dying) he liued, and him selfe seated in so beloued a place, it seemed a little cheerefull bloud came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little reuiue it: & forcing vp (the best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leaue thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire eyes of thine I sweare, that Death bringes nothing with it to grieue me, but that I must leaue thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some comfort vnto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdome and goodnesse guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blessedly meet againe, neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare Parthenia, and I perswade my selfe, it will increase the blessednes of my soule, so to see thee. Loue well the remembrance of thy louing, and truely louing, Argalus: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace
of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an vnwoorthie husband. They
could scarcely vnderstand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him
selfe of his harte, neither coulde Parthenia make answere, so full was her
breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles
wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was
deliuered into her mouth.

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrowe lost
the witte of vtterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare
her beautifull face, and rent her haire, as though they could serue for
nothing, since Argalus was gone; till Amphialus (so moued with pittie of
that sight, as that he honoured his aduersaries death with teares) caused her
(with the helpe of her women that came with her) partelie by force, to be
coueyed into boate, with the dead body of Argalus, from which she could
not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaued by
Basilius him selfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline,
trayling all their Ensignes vpon the ground, making his warlike instruments
sound dolefull notes, and Basilius (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in
his face) sought to perswade some ease into Parthenias minde: but all was
as easefull to her, as the handling of sore woundes: all the honour done,
being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she finding no comfort, but in
desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate her selfe, if
euer she should finde ease thereof. And well might she heare as she past
through the Campe, the great prayses spoken of her husbande, which all
were recordes of her losse. But the more excellent he was (being indeede
accounted seconde to none in all Greece) the more did the breath of those
praises, beare vp the winges of Amphialus-his fame: to whom yet (such was
his case) that Trophe vpon Trophe, still did but builde vp the monume[n]t of
his thraldome; he euer finding himselfe in such fauour of Philoclea, that she
was most absent, when he was present with her; and euer sorriest, when he
had best successe: which would haue made him renounce all comfort, but
that his mother, with diuersity of deuises, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he
was like to haue bene ouertaken with a notable treason, the beginning
wherof (though meerely ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vnto him
a weeping effect.

CHAP. 13.

1 Dametas put in harte 2 to defie Clinias. 3 Clinias out of
harte to see the vie. 4 Dametas brauerie, adoubements,
and imprese. 5 Clinias drawne 6 to answere him. 7 Their
passions in comming to the field. 8 Their actions in it, not
so doubty, as their fortune doubtfull. 9 Clinias yeelding to triumphant Dametas.

Among other that attended Basilius in this expedition, Dametas was one; whether to be present with him, or absent from Miso: once, certaine it was without any minde to make his sworde cursed by any widow. Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed injurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of Amphialus, it fell out sometimes in communication, that as the speech of heauen doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of Amphialus (by a cotrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of Clinias: in so much, as it grew almost to a proverb, As very a cowarde, as Clinias. Describing him in such sort, that in the end, Dametas began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, he would neuer answere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the fauourable conceite of Basilius. This fancie of his he uttered to a young Gentleman, that waited vpon Philanax, in whose friendship he had especiall confidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of Mopsa. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with Philanax, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge him selfe for Damaetas, and brought it to him. But when Damaetas read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling; he said, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

O Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that euer went, vpon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and seething pot of iniquitie: I Damaetas, chiefe gouernour of all the royall cattell, and also of Pamela (whom thy Maister most perniciously hath suggested out of my dominion) doo defie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike vpwarde. Which if thou doost presume to take in hande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy soule to be evacuated.

The young Gentleman seemed dumbe-striken with admiration, and presently tooke vpon him to be the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lasted: and hauing gotten leaue of Basilius (euery one helping on, to ease his minde overcharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vsed, and in the presence of Amphialus deliuered this letter to Clinias; desiring to haue an answere, which might be fit for his reputation.
Clinias opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his blood not daring to be in so dangerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes) came very slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his painting breath would utter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that he disdained to have any thing to doo with him. But Amphialus, perceauing the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; Amphialus not onely desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to Philoclea, but not being able to perswade with him, Amphialus licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should haue answere.

The yong Gentleman (sory he had sped no better) returned to Damætas, who had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for fear Clinias would accept the challenge. But whe[n] he perceiued by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositio[n] in him to accept it; then lo, Damætas began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher the he was wont, swearing by no meane devoutio[n]s, that the wals should not keepe the coward from him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then euer to prouide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland brauely addoubled, & shew himself to his charge Pamela. To this purpose many willing ha[n]ds were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrell, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue bases; but all comming from diuers houses, nether in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked Damætas the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his deuice; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewsed from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloudy deedes with his swoorde, as many inkehornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde vnto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet rememb'ring, that Miso would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

Miso mine own pigsnie, thou shalt heare news o’ Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntil the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as Clinias, should set his
runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of Amphialus, who with humble smiling reuerence deliuered a letter vnto him from Clinias: whom Amphialus had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, Damætas would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be his) but principally threatening him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by Basilius: so as the present feare (euer to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full vnwillingly, vndertake the other feare, wherein he had some shewe of hope, that Damætas might hap either to be sick, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when Damætas heard the name of Clinias, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But Damætas-his frie[n]d, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke vpon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

Filthy driuell, vnworthy to haue thy name set in any letter by a souldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was timorousnesse, that made Clinias suspende a while his answere? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shall no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doo not appeare) but that I will come vpon thee withall my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I saie) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terour of all presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou doost: for I tell thee, horrible smarte, and paine shalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be so foolish (I hauing giuen thee no such cause) as to meete with me.

These terrible wordes Clinias vsed, hoping they would giue a cooling to the heate of Damætas-his courage: and so indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, Damætas tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answere came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (hauing him now on horsebacke) led him vnto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vnkindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came
with him teaching him how to use his sword and lance, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might run away, cursing all Ilands in being evil situated) when Clinias with a brave sound of trumpets landed at the other end: who came all the way debating with himself, what he had deserved of Amphialus to drive him to those inconveniences. Sometimes his wit made him bethink himself what was best to be done: but fear did so corrupt his wit, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found danger therein; fearfulness (contrary to all other vices) making him think the better of another, the worse he found himself; rather imagining in himself, what words he would use (if he were overcome) to get his life of Damaetas, then how to overcome, whereof he could think with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the Earth pittifully complaining, that a man of such sufficiency (as he thought himself) should in his best years be swallowed up by so base an element. Fain he would have prayed, but he had not heart enough to have confidence in prayer; the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giving such an assault to the weak-breache of his false senses, that he grew from the degree of fear to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two judges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oath of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distance; one from the other.

Then the trumpets sounding, Damaetas-his horse (used to such causes) when he thought lest of the matter, started out so lustily, that Damaetas was jogged back with head, and bodie, and pulling with all his bridle-hand, the horse (that was tender of mouth) made half a stop, and fell to bounding, so that Damaetas threw away his lance, and with both his hands held by the pummel: the horse, half running, half leaping, till he met with Clinias: who fearing he should miss his rest, had put his staff before he began his career: neither would he then have begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that stood behind) strike on his horse, who running swiftly, the wind took such hold of his staff, that it crossed quite over his breast, and in that sort gave a flat bastonado to Damaetas: who, half out of his saddle, went nearer to his old occupation of digging the earth, but with the crest of his helmet. Clinias when he was passed him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing lest Damaetas were at his back, turned with a wide turn; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or never, to tread him under his horse's feet; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his lance, which had not broken, the encounter was so easy. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staff to low before the legs of the horse, & then coming upon Damaetas, who was then scrambling vp, the horse fell over & over, and lay upon Clinias. Which Damaetas (who was gotten up) perceiving, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kill Clinias behind. But the horse that lay
vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that Damætas durst not approch, but verie leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat vp, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that Damætas started vp a good way, and gaue Clinias time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sworde, enting when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to Damætas. But Damætas, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles woulde leade him. But as Clinias founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a preuailing cowarde; laying vpon Damætas, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand: sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to Basilius: but still bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that not daring to go back, nor to deliberat (the blows stil so lighted on him) nor to yeelde (because of the cruell threatenings of Clinias) feare being come to the extremitie, fell to a madnesse of despaire: so that (winking as hard as euer he could) he began to deale some blowes, and his arme (being used to a flaile in his youth) laid the[m] on so thick, that Clinias now began with lame n[t]able eies to see his owne blood come out in many places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried out aloud to Damætas that he yeelded. Throw away thy sword then (said Damætas) and I will saue thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. Clinias straight obeyed, and humbly craued mercie, telling him, his sworde was gone. Then Damætas first opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him stande a good way of from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he could. Clinias obeyed; and Damætas (who neuer could thinke himselfe safe, till Clinias were deade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his sworde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then Clinias might happe to arise, and reuenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe vpon him, and with a great whittle he had (hauing disarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had vsed so with Calues, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he sought for his Knife, which vnder his armour he coulde not well finde out, and that Clinias lay with so sheepish a countenaunce, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke v from off him, telling him he did against the lawe of Armes, hauing promised life, if he threwe away his sworde. Damætas was loath to consent, till they sware, they woulde not suffer him to fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him rise, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this combate of cowardes being
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

finished, *Damaetas* was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

**CHAP. 14.**

1 Clinias *a slie traitour*. 2 Artesia *his malcontent accomplice*. 3 Zelmanes *passions*. 4 *Her practise with Artesia*. 5 *The complot revealed to the disliking sisters*, 6 *bewrayed by Pamela*.

Vt Clinias, though he wanted hart to preuent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feele shame; not so much repining at it for the abhoring of shame, as for the discommodities, that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of injuries, when men needed not care, how they vsed him. Insomuch, that Clinias (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of euery companie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing vnto himselfe, what daunger he lately was in; which still kept no lesse ously figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly (euen in his dissembling countenance) might be discerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse towarde Amphialus, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him (how little cause soeuer there was of smiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commaundements, with an vncertaine manner of behauior: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his cowardlinesse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the dayly dangers Amphialus did submit himselfe into, made Clinias assuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeme his former treason to Basilius, with a more treasonable falshood toward Amphialus.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of Amphialus whom either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or disco[n] tentment of some vnsatisfied ambitio[n] would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some alredy of welthy weary folks, & unconsta[n] t youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised the [m]selues) he had made stoupe to the lure. But of none he made so good account as of Artesia, sister to the late slain Ismenus, & the chiefe of six
maids, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had vndertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of Cecropia; who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; & the[n] Amphialus wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleue, by some false persuasio[n] her glas had giue[n] her of her own inco[m]parable excellencies, & by the great fauor she knew he bare to her brother Ismenus, which (like a self-flattering woma[n]) she conceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far fro[m] their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her seruice had woon of Amphialus much more the ordinary fauor, nor her ouer-large offring herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obtened a loked-for acceptatio[n]; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & percha[n]ce vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, who[m] she iudged neither succoured against Philanax, nor reueged vpon Philanax. But all these coles were wel blowne by the co[m]pany she especially kept with Zelmane, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning Philoclea, and contemned of the hie harted Pamela, she spent her time most with Zelmane. Who though at the first hardly broking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed her selfe to yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

For Zelmane, when she had by that vnexpected mischief her bodie imprisoned, her valure ouermastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; assured of euill, fearing worse, able to knowe Philocleas misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling vp in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleeeue, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shoote out threatning vpon them. But the fetters of seruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feele her case, and the little preuailing of repining: and then griefe gat seate in her softned minde, making sweetenesse of passed comfortes by due title claime teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorrowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of Philoclea graued in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, the[n] adored; & no sooner adored, the[n] pitied: al the wo[n]ted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the injuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make inuictiuie declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.
But whe[n] Artesia did insinuat herself into her acquaintance, she gaue the gouernment of her courage to wit, & was co[n]tent to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flaws of il-co[n]cealed discontentme[n]t. Insomuch that whe[n] Zelmane would sweete her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulnes, in neuer forgetting wel-intended seruices, & inuoking the justice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wro[n]g-fully hidde[n], & somtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging Artesia that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy perso[n]s: Artesia (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter the recreatio[n]: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the vnrewarding, & not the euil employing her seruice, which grieued her. But Zelmane (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliuer, whom vnwillingly she had imprisoned; leauing no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that Artesia, (pusht forward by Clinias, and drawne onward by Zelmane) bound her selfe to that practise; wherin Zelmane (for her part) desired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impossible soeuer, which longing Loue can perswade, and inuincible Valour dare promise.

But Clinias (whose faith could neuer comprehend the misteries of Courage) perswaded Artesia, while he by corruptio[n] had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to the enemie: that she should impoyson Amphialus, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had vsed to make the broaths, when Amphialus (either wearied or wounded) did vse such diet. And al things alredy were ready to be put in executio[n], when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their co[n]sent in a thing so behooffull to the[m]selues: their reasons being, that the Princesses knowing their seruice, might be sure to preserue them from the fury of the entring souldiers: whereof Clinias (euen so) could scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them priuie to their action, to binde them afterwordes to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, Clinias to Philoclea, and Artesia to Pamela: and Clinias, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her seruice. But Philoclea (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliuer her, and that she would neuer forgett his Seruice therin: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischiefe, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knewe)
loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked-for answere amazed Clinias, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to Philoclea, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her seruice: and vowing (since she disliked it) to proceed no further therein. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she performed.

But that little availed: for Artesia hauing in like sort opened this deuice to Pamela, she (in whose mind Vertue gouerned with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and streight judging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose vnrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles haue caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a lowder voice then she was wont to use, so as Cecropia heard the noise; who was (sooner then Artesia imagined she would) come vp, to bring Pamela to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselues: and being a cunning fisher in troubled waters, streight found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired Pamela to tell her. Aske of her (said Pamela) & learne to know, that who do falsheode to their superiours, teach falsheode to their inferiours. More she would not say. But Cecropia taking away the each-way guiltie Artesia, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as Zelmane was the more closely imprisoned, and Clinias (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for Artesia, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, Amphialus not consenting (for the loue he bare Ismenus) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

CHAP. 15.

1 Proude Anaxius breaketh through the besiegers. 2 His welcome by Amphialus. 3 The Musicke, and loue-song made to Philoclea. 4 The sallie of Anaxius and his on the Basilians, 5 backt by Amphialus, 6 beaten backe by three vnknownen Knightes. 7 The Retraite of both sides.
Vt the noyse they hearede in the campe, was occasioned by the famous Prince
Anaxius, nepewhe to the Giant Euardes whom Pyrocles slew: A Prince, of body excedingly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praise, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by vnjustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offred to himselfe, which in the farthest-fette construction, might be wrested to the name of wron[g]; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a Thraso-like boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an vnflexible anger, a courageous constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with Amphialus, but Mars had bene so vpnpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate aduauntage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that Anaxius found Amphialus (vnknown) in a great danger, and saued his life: wherupon (louing his owne benefite) began to fauour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he coulde not choose but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could by a proud harte be conceiued. So as in this trauaile (seeking Pyrocles to be reuenged of his vncles death) hearing of this siege, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome he thought him selfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he him selfe vpon such an vnexpected suddainenesse entred in vpon the backe of Basilius, that many with great vnkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull Philanax, with wel governed speed made such head against him, as would haue shewed, how soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdome: but that Amphialus at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondaunce of courage one of the sconses, which Basilius had builded, made waie for his friend Anaxius with great losse of both sides, but especially of the Basilians; such notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters redoubted worthynesse.

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his
worthinesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefites) did Amphialus enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make Anaxius know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streates and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both soouldiers and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he besought to entertain him with no lesse loue and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saued her sonnes life, and now came to saue both life and honour. Tush (said Anaxius, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers) I am onely sorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what Anaxius can doo, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though he had ouer-modestly spoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Then was he disarmed at the earnest request of Amphialus: for Anaxius boiled with desire to issue out vppon the enemies, perswading himselfe, that the Sunne shoulde not be sette, before he had ouerthrowne them. And hauing reposed himselfe, Amphialus asked him, whether he woulde visite the yong Princesses. But Anaxius whispered him in the eare: In trueth (saide he) deare friende Amphialus, though I am none of those, that loue to speake of themselues, I neuer came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peeuish paltrie sexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The curteous Amphialus could haue beene angrie with him for those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him to daunce to his owne musicke: and gaue himselfe to entreate both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde issue from a minde whome vnluckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to Anaxius he yeelded the direction of all. He gaue the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to Anaxius. And that night when supper was ended, wherein Amphialus woulde needes waite vpon him, he caused in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent musicke to be ordered: which, though Anaxius might conceiue was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the beloued Philoclea.

The musicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunswering the other, with a sweete emulation, striuing for the glorie of musick, and striking vpon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the castell walles, which with a proude reuerberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonic came to the eare, that it had enriched it selfe in trauaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a braue proclamation to all vnpossessed mindes of attention, an excellent consort streight followed of fiue Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song vppon her, that
thought vpon another matter.

The Fire to see my woes for anger burneth:
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbie for grieffe his flowing turneth:
The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth.
    Fame is with wonder blazed:
    Time runnes away for sorrow:
    Place standeth still amazed.
To see my night of ils, which hath no morrowe.
    Alas all onely she no pitie taketh
To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell
    My fall her glory maketh;
Yet still her eyes giue to my flames their fuell.

Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leaue me'
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguish:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereaue me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.
    Fame, say I was not borne:
    Time, hast my dying hower:
    Place, see my grave vptorne:
Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.
    Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.
    Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure,

But Anaxius (seeming a weary before it was ended) told Amphialus, that for his part he liked no
musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the
cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning
they shoulde issue vpon the same place, where they had entred that
day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the besiegers of
Anaxius. Amphialus, who had no whit lesse courage, though nothing blowne
vp with pride, willingly condiscended: and so the next morning (giuing
false alarum to the other side of the campe) Amphialus at Anaxius earnest
request, staying within the towne to see it garded, Anaxius and his brethren,
Lycurgus, and Zoilus, sallied out with the best chosen men. But Basilius
(hauing bene the last day somewhat vnprouided) now had better fortified
the ouerthrowne sconse; and so well had prepared euery thing for defence,
that it was impossible for any valour from within, to preuail. Yet things
were perfourmed by Anaxius beyonde the credite of the credulous. For
thrise (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set vp his banner vpon the
rampire of the enemie: though thrise againe by the multitude, and
aduauntage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant
Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Nu[m]bers there were that day,
whose deaths and ouerthrowes were executed by the well knownen sworde
of Anaxius: but the rest, by the length of time and injurie of Historians, haue
bene wrapped vp in darke forgetfulness: onely Tressennius is spoken of,
because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to Anaxius; till
hauing lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, Lycurgus
(second brother to Anaxius) cruellie murthered him; Anaxius him selfe
disdayning any further to deale with him.

But so farre had Anaxius at the thirde time preuayled, that now the
Basilians began to let their
courage descende to their feete, Basilius, and Philanax in vaine
striuing, with reuerence of authoritie to bridle the flight of
astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that Amphialus, seeing
Victorie shew such a flattering countenaunce to him, came out with all
his force: hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the sudaine comming to the
other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other
in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and deuice streight knowne
to be the notable Knight, who the first day had giuen Fortune so short a
stoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed
inuincible Amphialus. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as
borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, vnder
the wing of their damme. For the three adventurers, not content to keepe
them from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue
combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether side Fortune
woulde haue beene partiall, could not be determined. For the Basilians,
lightened with the beames of these straungers valure; followed so thicke,
that the Amphialians were glad with some haste to retire to the walles
warde: though Anaxius neither reason, teare, nor example, coulde make him
asswage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the Basilians (vnwoorthie to
haue his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sidewayse, when he least
looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe,
blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow
him; and there death would haue seazed of his proude hart, but that
Amphialus tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers
conueied away Anaxius, so requiting life for life vnto him.

And for the loue and example of Amphialus, the fight began to enter into
a new fitte of heate: when Basilius (that thought inough to be done for that
day) caused retraite to be sounded; fearing least his men following ouer-
hastily, might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to
knowe. The Knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were eagerly set, knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastliness than manhood) drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight, who, knowing Amphialus, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the former accounts. Amphialus seing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt, both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answering no other to the blakke Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good pay-master.

CHAP. 16.

1 The vnknowne Knights will not be knowne. 2 The Knight of the Tombes shew, 3 and challenge accepted by Amphialus. 4 Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight. 5 Who that Knight was. 6 The dying speeches, and 7 the lamentable funerals.

He fight being ceased, and ech side withdrawne within their strengthes, Basilius sent Philanax to entertaine the straunge Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was due to their vertue. But they excused themselues, desiring to be knowne first by their deedes, before their names should accuse their vnworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserued, yet (finding that vnwelcome curtesie is a degree of iniury) he suffered them to retire themselues to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselues secrete: Philanax himselfe being called away to another straunge Knight; straunge not onely by the vnlookedfornesse of his comming, but by the straunge maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind him, all vpon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes; ech of them seruants of ech side, with like liueries of sorrow. Himselufe in an armour, all painted ouer with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse braunches; wherewith in olde time they were woont to dresse graues. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrodered onely with blacke wormes, which seemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie alreadie to deuoure him. In his shielde for Impresa, he had a beautifull childe, but hauing two heades;
whereof the one shewed, that it was already dead: the other alive, but in
that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, No way to be rid
from death, but by death.

This Knight of the tombe (for so the soldiours termed him) sent to
Basilius, to demand leave to send in a damosel into the towne, to call
out Amphialus, according as before time some others had done. Which
being grated (as glad any would undertake the charge, which no bodie else
in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and having
with tears sobbed out a brave challenge to Amphialus, from the Knight of the
Tombe, Amphialus, honourably entertaining the gentlewoman, & desiring to
know the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not
discouer) accepted the challenge, onely desiring the Gentlewoman to say
thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his
title, there were more cause of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And
therefore presently (according as he was wont) as soon as he percyued
the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damosels and Iudge, was come into the
Iland, he also went ouer in accustomed maner: and yet for the curtesie of his
nature, desired to speake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse
backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh,
made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the
Career, whence wayting the starte of the unknowne Knight, he likewise
made his spurres claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his
rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he
percyued the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the curteous Amphialus
woulde not let his Launce descend, but with a gallant grace, ranne ouer the
heade of his there-in friended enemie: and having stopped his horse, and
with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Windowe where he
thought Philocele might stand, he percyued the Knight had lighted from
his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune, as
having mist his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his
fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sworde,
esteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so
straight made their swords speake for them a pretie while with equall
fearcenes. But Amphialus (to whom the earth brought forth few matches)
hauing both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke
upon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death
to come in at; whe[n] (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the
punishment ouergoe the offence) he slept a little backe, and withal, Sir
Knight (said he) you may easely see, that it pleaseth God to fauour my
cause; employ your valour against them that wish you hurte: for my part, I haue not deserued hate of you. Thou lyest false traytor, saide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But Amphialus, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (said hee) onely courageous in discourtesie; thou shalt soone see whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him, a great wounde vpon his necke, and closing with him overthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mortally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himselfe the lye, for hauing so saide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the ouercome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was Parthenia, the vafortunatlie vertuous wife of Argalus: her beautie then euen in despight of the passed sorrow, or comming death, assuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweetly swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striuing by little and little to get vpon the rosinesse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablaster, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a riuer of purest redde, there an Iland of perfittest white, each giuing lustre to the other; with the sweete countena[n]ce (God-knowes) full of an vnaffected languishing: though these thinges to a grosly conceauing sense might seeme disgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new fashion, which all looked-vpon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did eu[n] encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenes, so as Amphialus was astonished with griefe, compassion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him vafortunate in victory.

Therfore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet; kneeling down vnto her, & with teares testifying his sorow, he offred his (by himselfe accursed) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be readie to doo her honour. But Parthenia (who had inward messingers of the desired deathes approch) looking vpon him, and streight turning away her feeble sight, as from a delightlesse obiect, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte from so sweete a bodie) did faintly deliuer, Sir (saide she) I pray you (if prayers haue place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the onely honour I now desire by your meanes, is, that I haue no honour of you. Argalus made no such bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I haue of them (and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the servuice which I desired. There rests nothing now, but that I go liue with
him, since whose death I haue done nothing but die. Then pawsing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselfe, O sweete life, welcome (saide she) nowe feele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death, which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunswere for me, that my thoughts haue not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were depriued of Argalus. I come, my Argalus, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies, and graunt (as I feele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue eche other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there Atropos cut off her sentence: for with that, casting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might well assure himselfe) to heauen, which left the bodie in so heauenly a demeanure.

But Amphialus (with a hart oppressed with griefe, because of her request) withdrew himselfe, but the Iudges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while disarming her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remediles wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to diuide the soul, but not the beauty fro[m] that body. But whe[n] the infallible tokens of death assured the[m] of their losse, one of the women would haue killed her selfe, but that the squire of Amphialus perceauing it, by force held her. Others that had as strong passions, though weaker resolution, fell to cast dust vpon their heads, to teare their garments: all falling vpon, and crying vpon their sweet mistres; as if their cries could perswade the soul to leaue the celestiall happines, to come again into the elements of sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to them: another time accusing themselues, that they had obeyed her, they hauing bene deceaued by her words, who assured the, that it was reuealed vnto her, that she should haue her harts desire in the battaile against Amphialus, which they wrongly vnderstood. Then kissing her cold hands and feet, wearie of the world, since she was gone, who was their world. The very heauens semed, with a cloudie countenance, to loure at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet) could not choose but deliuer it in lamentable accents, & in such sort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: & as if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so hard, but was subiect to that contagion; the rarenes of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, Basilius himselfe came foorth, and brought foorth the faire Gynecia with him, who was gone into the campe vnder colour of visiting her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed Zelmane was the Sainct, to which her pilgrimage was entended: cursing, enuying, blessing, and in her harte kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they with Philanax, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, conueying that excellent body (wherto Basilius himself would needes bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant Argalus lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the
blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Vpon which, Basilius himself caused this Epitaphe to be written.

CHAP. 17.

1 The remorse of Amphialus for his last deede, and lasting destinie. 2 His reuerent respect in loue. 3 His mothers ghos- sty counsell to a rape.

Hen with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayses, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against Amphialus: who (poore Gentleman) had therfore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous harte, which would haue grieued but to haue heard the like aduenture, was rent with remembring himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdome could not so farre temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many peeces (which afterwarde he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to serue the noble exercise of chialrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulnes of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restles minde, as to auoyd all companie, the sight whereof was tedious vnto him. And then melancholic (onely riche in vnfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the mishappes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but a presage of following miserie; and to his harte (alredie overcome by sorrowfulnes) euin trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himselfe from the enioying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: vntill his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with louing earnestnes to lay a kinde chiding vp vnpon him, because he would suffer the weakesnesse of sorow, to conquere the strength of his vertues; he did with a broaken peecemeale speach (as if the tempest of passion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the euils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of Philoxenus and Parthenia, wherein he found himselfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to Philoclea: to whom he had so gouerned himselfe, as one that could neither conquere, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slaue, and of the other a iaylor: and with all, almost vp-brayding vnto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding Philoclea nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him vnworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentifull cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was little or no faulte in him selfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no grieue in him; when she came to the head of the sore, indeed seeing that she could not patch vp her former promises (he taking a desperate deafnesse to all delaying hopes) she confess plainly, that she could preuaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by seeking to haue that by praier, which he should haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an vntimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might commaund, puffing the vp[m] by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superioritie, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said Amphialus) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out these eies then they shal looke vpon the heauenly Philoclea, but as upo[n] a heauen, whence they haue their light, & to which they are subiect, if they will power down any influe[n]ces of co[m]fort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice of a faithfull hart, they will not be called vnto me, let me languish, & wither with languishing, & grieue with withering, but never so much as repine with newer so much grieuing. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be a tyrant, but true-loue where it is indeed, it is a seruant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reuerence, as I burned in a
vehement desire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vpo[n] the majesty of vertue, shining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captiue? & is it the stile of a captiue, to write, Our will and pleasure?

Tush, tush sonne (said Cecropia) if you say you loue, but withall you feare; you feare lest you should offend; offend? & how know you, that you should offend? because she doth denie: denie? Now by my truth; if your sadnes would let me laugh, I could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatiue in a womans mouth. My sonne, beleeue me, a woma[n], speaking of women: a louers modesty among us is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like it, that for marring of his modestie, he shall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath his time: if you com[m]and your souldier to march formost, & he for curtesie put others before him, would you praise his modesty? loue is your Generall: he bids you dare: & will Amphialus be a dastard? Let examples seru[e:] doo you thinke Theseus should euer haue gotten Antiope with sighing, and crossing his armes? he rauished her, and rauished her that was an Amazon, and therefore had gotten a habite of stoutnes aboue the nature of a woman: but hauing rauished her, he got a child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of both sides. Iole had her owne father killed by Hercules, & her selfe rauished, by force rauished, & yet ere long this rauished, and vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight in those weapo [n]s of rauishing. But aboue all, mark Helen daughter to Iupiter, who could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing Menelaus, but disdained his humblenes, & lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing Paris, that for him she could abide what might be abidden. But what? Menelaus takes hart; he recouers her by force; by force carries her home; by force inioies her; and she, who could neuer like him for servieceablenesse, euer after loured him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then vpon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a iust excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me ô woman-kinde for reuealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at lest of furie. Truly I haue knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; neuer wonne; because they did ouer-suspiciously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could vse that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature giues to men aboue women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse vnto you) in our very creatio[n] we are seruants: and who prayseth his seruaunts shall neuer be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde; the same fals to boundes
when he feeles a fearefull horseman. Awake thy spirits (good Amphialus) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gotte. Thinke, she would not striue, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my Amphialus, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleeue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.

CHAP. 18.

1 The forsaken Knights defie. 2 Amphialus answere. 4 The one 3 and others armour and imprese. 5 The issue of their quarrell. 6 Their heroicall monomachy on horse, 7 and foot. 8 Their breathings, 9 & reencounters. 10 Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white. 11 The supply of both sides to cary away the breathles Knights. 12 The Blackknights grieues.

Mphialus was aboute to answere her, when a Gentleman of his made him vnderstande, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

TO thee Amphialus of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wisheth I health, and courage, that by my hand thou maiest receyue punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haste proudly begun, and accursedly mainteyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltinesse) meete thee in thy Iland, in such order, as hath by the former beene vsed: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable chaise in any of them; so as thou do perfourme the subsaunce. Make me such answere as may shew that thou hast some taste of honour: and so I leaue thee, to liue till I meete thee.

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed euen to co[n]demne him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoever the dulnes of Melancholy would haue languishingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (vnused to such injuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answere.

Forgotten Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte
at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answere you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expecting weake blowes, where I finde so strong wordes. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before proofe teache you, that of my life you haue made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.

This being written, and deliuered, the messenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which Amphialus accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate disswasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, ioyned together with pretious stones, as it was a braue raggednesse, and a riche pouertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had giuen it a rustie shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceiue was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsomnesse, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his deuise, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and vpon the shadow with a speech signifying, that it onely was barrd from inioying that, whereof it had his life: or, From whose I am bannished. In his creste he caried Philocleas kniues, the onely token of her forwarde fauour.

So past he ouer into the and, taking with him the two brothers of Anaxius; where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne liuerie, as blacke, as sorrowe it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Rauens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselues one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysinous furie of the combatt. His Impresa was a Catoblepta which so long lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathie) wants her light. The worde signified that The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentaunce. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not hauing so much as one starre to giue light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their birth-right in that sorie inheritance.

Which alliance of passions so moued Amphialus (alredy tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without staffe or sword
drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsake[n] Knight, willing to haue put off
his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like
occasion) misgieue him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (said he)
because we are men, and should knowe reason why we doo things; tell me
the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme
(answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious iniurie to
those Ladies, to whome all men owe seruice. You shall not fight with me
(saide Amphialus) vpon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it
proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Loue to offer this force. I
maintaine then (said the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to
loue. And that confesse I too (saide Amphialus) since the world is not so
richely blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof. But no more
vnworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes,
more vnworthy then my self (said the forsaken Knight) for though I deserue
contempt, thou deseruest both contempt, and hatred.

But Amphialus by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede
mistaking other) that he was his riuall, forgat all minde of
reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts bou[n]d vp in choler, neuer
staying either iudge, tru[m]pet, or his owne lau[n]ce, drew out his sword, &
saying, Thou lyest false villaine, vnto him; his words & blowes came so
quick togethier, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thu[n]der. But he
fou[n]d no barre grou[n]d of such seede: for it yeelded him his owne with
such encrease, that though Reason and Amazement go rarely togethier, yet
the most reasonable eies that saw it, founde reason to be amazed at the fury
of their combat. Neuer game of death better plaid; neuer fury set it self forth
in greater brauerie. The curteous Vulcan, whe[n] he wrought at his nowe
more curteous wiues request, Æneas an armour, made not his hammer beget
a greater sounde; then the swords of those noble Knights did; they needed
no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their
swords, & armours; ech side fetching new spirit from the castle window,
and careful of keeping their sight, it was a matter of greater consideration in
their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and
wind (if the astonished eies of the beholders were not by the astonishment
deceiued) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither
could their amazed eies discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind
stirred, as if either for feare it would not come amo[n]g such blows, or with
delight had his eies so busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight
being the more cruell, since both Loue and Hatred conspired to sharpen
their humours, that hard it was to say, whether Loue with one trumpet, or
Hatred with another, gaue the lowerd alarum to their courages. Spite, rage,
disdaine, shame, reuenge, came waighting vpon Hatred: of the other side
came with loue-longing Desire, both inuincible Hope, and fearelesse
Despares, with riuallike Jealousie, which (although brought vp within
doores in the schoole of Cupid) woulde shewe themselues no lesse forwarde, then the other dustie bande of Mars, to make themselues notable in the notablenes of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, vnaquainted with Losse, but assured trust to ouercome, and good experience howe to ouercome: nowe seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now vnlooked-for parting one from the other, to win aduantage by an advantageous retourne. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprizing, or preuenting came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and suffring wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffring. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to deuoure more: so the more they strake, the more vnsatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places stayning the blacke, as if it would giue a more liuely coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the vnquiet hart of Amphialus, that he resolued to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise vpon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hande; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And Amphialus vsed the fauour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came vnto himselfe: But then who could haue seene him, might wel haue discerned shame in his cheekes, and reuenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth togither with rage, he came running vpon Amphialus, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued Amphialus in two. But Amphialus seeing the blow comming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherwith the forsaken Knight ouer-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdaining the resistance, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon Amphialus, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose vp before, almost overturnd: which Amphialus perceauing, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vp on his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.
But the curteous Amphialus excused himselfe, for hauing (against his will) kild his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and use this poore aduantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (said Amphialus) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse, because he would not haue fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would haue mollified the noble harte of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the Iaylor of his mistres: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmest bonde of good nature; and therfore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, re-entring into as cruel a fight, as eye did euer see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keep their stomakes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselues) they did. Nor euer glutton by the cha[n]ge of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might haue bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would haue thought they had had their fill alredy. Amphialus being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before; his shield at the vuttermost length of his arme; his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whe[n] he strake, which came so thick, as if euery blow would striue to be foremost, his arme seemed still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skil, vnlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweeene the[m] to any thing that Amphialus attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not striue with nature: shunning rather then warding his blowes; like a cun[n]ing mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne, and stre[n]gth of the Bul; fights low to get his proper adua[n]tage; answering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was seconde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge, the thrusts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being co[n]quered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a blow, that he made Amphialus put knee to the ground, without any humblenes. But when he felt himselfe striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his riuall, then shame seemed one arme, and disdain another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his hart; skill and force gaue place, & they tooke the place of skil & force: with so vnweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight was also driuen to leaue the streame of cunning, and giue himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdain to finde themselves so matched.
What (said Amphialus to himselfe) am I Amphialus, before whom so many monsters & Gyants haue falne dead, when I onely sought causelesse adventues? and can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of Philoclea, and fighting for Philoclea? or since I lost my liberty, haue I lost my courage? haue I gotten the hart of a slaue, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against me in the sight of Philoclea, could it resist me? O beast, one man resistes thee; thy ryuall resists thee: or am I indeed Amphialus? haue not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not how) succeeded into his place? Of the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse spite, fel out with himself; Hast thou broke[n] (said he to himselfe) the com[m]a[n]deme[n]t of thy only Princesse to come now into her prese[n]ce, & in her prese[n]ce to proue thy self a coward? Doth Asia and Ægypt set vp Trophes vnto thee, to be matched here by a traytor? O noble Barsanes, how shamed will thy soule be, that he that slew thee, should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable Pyrocles, more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends shame, the[n] with thine owne imprisonment, when thou shalt know how little I haue bene able to doo for the deliuerie of thee, and those heauenlie Princesses. Am I worthie to be friend to the most valourous Prince that euer was entituled valourous, and shewe my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed Musidorus, worthie for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheephooke again, since thou canst vse a sword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their ouer-sharpe humors; like the Lion, that beates himselfe with his owne taile, to make himselfe the more angrie. These thoughtes indeede not staying, but whetting their angrie swordes, which now had put on the apparraile of Crueltie: they bleeding so abundantly, that euery bodie that sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted not in themselues: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to their owne feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common sense from bringing any message of their case to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make knoven their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of so violent furie: which filling the veines with rage, in stead of bloud, and making the minde minister spirites to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte vpward by the force of the bowe, though by his owne nature he would goe downward. The forsaken Knight had the more wounds, but Amphialus had the soarer; which the other (watchinge time and place) had coningly geuen vnto him. Who euer saw a well-mand Galley fight with a tall ship, might make vnto himselfe some kind of comparison of the difference of these two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not bragge of. Amphialus seemed to excell in strength, the forsaken Knight in nimblenes; and yet did the ones strength excel in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in strength: but now,
strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excesse of courage only
maintayned the fight. Three times had Amphialus with his mightie blowes
driuen the forsaken Knight to go staggering backwarde, but euer one of
those times he requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse. And now,
whether he had cause, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward
scholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cause, he bega[n]
to persuade himself he had the adua[n]tage of the combat, though the
advantage he toke himselfe to haue, was onely that he should be the later to
die: which hopes, Hate (as vnsecrete as Loue) could not conceale, but
drawing himself a little back fro[m] him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah Amphialus (said the forsaken knight) this third time thou shalt
not escape me, but thy death shall satisfie thy injury, & my malice;
and pay for the cruelty thou shewedst in killing the noble Argalus, &
the fair Parthenia. In troth (said Amphialus) thou art the best knight that
euer I fought withal, which would make me willing to graut thee thy life, if
thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (besides other follies) layest that to
my charge, which most against my will was committed. But whether my
death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And vpon the worde wayted a
blow, which parted his shield into two pecies; & despising the weak
resistance of his alredie broke[n] armor, made a great breach into his hart
side, as if he would make a passage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life in those
champions. For, the forsaken Knight comming in with his right leg,
and making it guide the force of the blow, strake Amphialus vpon the
bellie, so horrible a wou[n]d, that his guts came out withall. Which
Amphialus perceauing (fearing death, onely because it should come with
ouerthrow) he seemed to coniure all his strength for one moments seruice;
and so, lifting vp his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight vpo[n]
the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a
notable seruice before it died) it preuayled so, euen in the instant of
breaking, that the forsaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant
forgetting both loue and hatred: and Amphialus (finding him self also in
such weaknes, as he loked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though
little hoping to enjoy it, puld vp his visar, meaning with his dagger to giue
him death; but in stead of death, he gaue him life: for, the aire so reuiued his
spirits, that comming to himself, and seeing his present danger, with a life
conquering death, he tooke Amphialus by the thigh, & together rose
himselfe, and ouerturned him. But Amphialus scrambled vp againe, both
now so weake indeede, as their motions rather seemed the afterdrops to a
storme, then any matter of great furie.

But Amphialus might repent himselfe of his wilfull breaking his good
sword: for, the forsaken Knight (hauing with the extremitie of iustly-
conceiued hate, and the vnpitifulnes of his owne neere-threatning death,
blotted out all complements of courtesie) let flie at him so cruelly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknes vpon a weakned subiect, proued such stre[n]gth, that *Amphialus* hauing attempted in vaine, once or twise to close with him, receaung wound vpo[n] wound, sent his whole burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in standing: geuing no other tokens of himself, then as of a man euen ready to take his oath to be Deathes true servuant.

Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceaued, not recking law of armes, nor vse of chiualrie, they flew in to defende their friende, or reuenge their losse of him. But they were foorthwith encountred with the two braue co[m]panions of the forsaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasant garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruietes, cunningly beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feeding in a pleasant field, with this word, *Without feare, or enuie*. And therfore was called the Knight of the sheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in starres, which made of cloath of siluer, and siluer spangles, each way seemed to cast many aspects. His deuice was the very Pole it selfe, about which many starres stirring, but the place it selfe lefte voide. The word was, *The best place yet reserved*. But these foure Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce combat: the forsaken Knight himselfe not able to helpe his side, but was driuen to sit him downe, with the extreame faintnesse of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety vpon ruine, gaue new appetites, to the almost glutted eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsides, no aduantage being yet to be seene; onely the Knight of the sheepe seeming most deliuer, and affecting most all that viewed him, when a company of souldiers sent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Ilande: and all came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was vtterly vnable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forsaken Knight (who had fainted so long till he had lost the feeling of faintnesse) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; till *Philanax* (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) sent likewise ouer, both by boate and swimming, so choise a number as did put most of the other to the sworde. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the brauest of them, carrying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So was the forsaken Knight (layed vpon clokes) carried home to the
campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire not to be knowen, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: Basilius himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with fear to displease him, who had fought so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour vpon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayses to the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteemed Knight in the world: euerie bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they prayed for themselves. But he him selfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to him selfe, whome the impudentest backbiter would not so haue wro[n]ged. For his courage (used to vse victory as an inheritauence) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised him selfe, not onely the conquest of him, but the scaling of the walles, and deliuery of Pamela, though he had done beyond al others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne; that he hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought him selfe vnworthy, that he besought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a castle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and neuer be knowne till he made successe excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing Basilius and all the campe very sorrie for the parting of these three vnknowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had reposed greatest trust of victory.

CHAP. 19.

1 The state of the leaguer, and beleaguered. 2 The agonies of Amphialus. 3 The wit-craft of Cecropia, to threaten Basilius with the three Ladies death. 4 Kalanders comp-assion. 5 Philanax-his counter-counsell. 6 The brea-king vp the siege.

Vt they being gone, Basilius and Philanax gaue good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying themselues, so as they feared no more any such suddaine onset, as that of Anaxius. And they within (by reaso[n] of Anaxius hurt, but especially of Amphialus-his) gaue themselues onely to diligent watch & ward, making no sallies out, but committing the principall trust to Zoilus and Lycurgus. For Anaxius was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as for Amphialus, his body had such wounds, and gaue
such wounds to his mind, as easily it coulde not be determined, whether
death or he made the greater hast one to the other: for when the diligent care
of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the possession of his owne right,
Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted seruaunts) came waiting of it,
perswading nothing but the giuing ouer of it selfe to destruction. They laide
before his eyes his present case, painting every piece of it in moste ougly
colours: they shewed him his loue wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by
ouerthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his
desiring, he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining.
Recreant Amphialus, (would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy
selfe the louver of Philoclea, that hast neither shewed thy self a faithfull
coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law
can quite, nor grace haue pitie of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou doost
me, to giue me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercise of ruine? I
would sweete Philoclea, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes:
& then perchaunce with some sigh thou wouldest haue co[n]fessed, thou
hadst lost a worthy seruaunt. But now, caitife that I am, what euer I haue
done, serues but to builde vp my riuals glory. To these speeches he would
couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such
effects of furie, as sometimes offring to teare vp his woun[d]s, sometimes to
refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsell of phisitions, that his perplexed
mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey
to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise
her, he would attempt no violence vpon himself, vpon condition he might
be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitions: his melancholy detesting
all co[m]pany, so as not the very surgeons nor seruants durst speak vnto him
in doing him servuice: only he had praied his mother, as she tendered his life,
she would procure him grace; and that without that, she would neuer come
at him more.

His mother, who had co[n]fined all her loue only vnto him, set only
such about him, as were absolutely at her com[m]andement, whom she
forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his
wounds were cured, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she
(for her selfe) being resolued, now she had the gouernment of al things in
her owne hands, to satisfie her sonnes loue, by their yeelding, or satisfie her
owne reuenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer
fro[m] outward force, she sent a messenger to the campe, to denounce vnto
Basilius, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the
heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut of before his eies. And to
make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two
daughters & Zelmane to be led vnto the wals, where she had made a
scaffold, easie to be seene by Basilius: and there caused the[m] to be kept,
as ready for the slaughter, til answere came from Basilius. A sight full of
pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherewith Nature can beautifie any body: **Pamela** giving sweetnes to maiesty, **Philoclea** enriching noblenes with humblenes, **Zelmane** setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subiected to the basest injury of vnjust Fortune. One might see in **Pamela** a willingnesse to die, rather then to haue life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely disdaine would sparkle out of her Princely eies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In **Philoclea** a prety feare came vp, to endamaske her rosie cheekes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dismaiednes: or if she were dismaied, it was more for **Zelmane**, then for her selfe; or if more for her selfe, it was because **Zelmane** should loose her. As for **Zelmane**, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not aduenture on her well knowne valour, especially amo[n]g people which percha[n]ce might be moued by such a spectacle to some reuoke) she was the true image of ouer-maistred courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For her breast swelled withall, the bloud burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eies cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heauens, for suffering such an injury. The lookers on were so moued withal, as they misliked what themselues did, and yet still did what themselues disliked. For some, glad to rid themselues of the dangerous annoynaunce of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to **Amphialus**-his succession (whereon they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffring because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their owne conscience) wicked enterprise.

But whe[n] this message was brought to **Basilius**, & that this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit for him to beleue it, he called vnto him his chief cou[n]celors: amo[n]g which, those he chiefly trusted were **Philanax** and **Kalander** (lately come to the campe at **Basilius** co[m]mandement, & in him selfe wery of his solitary life, wanting his sons presence, & neuer hauing heard him his beloued guestes since they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed **Kalander** to giue him his aduise: who spake much to this purpose. You co[m]maund me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will keepe your wonted graue, & noble manner, to do nothing of importa[n]ce without cou[n]cell, then that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to haue any counsell: so as my speech shall rather be to co[n]firme what you haue alredy determined, then to argue against any possibilitie of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will haue your incomparable daughters liue, or dye? whether since you be here to cause their deliuerance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more vnsensible, then to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do therfore as I
am sure you meane to doo, remoue the siege, and after seeke by
practise, or other ge[n]tle meanes, to recouer that which by force you ca
[n]not: & therof is indeed (whe[n] it please you) more cou[n]sel to be
take[n]. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchase of
life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths ca[n] befal vnto you. A ma[n]
might use more words, if it were to any purpose to guild gold, or that I had
any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said
no more, for he durst not attempt to perswade the marrying of his daughter
to Amphialus, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But Basilius
made signe to Philanax, who sta[n]ding a while in a maze as inwardly
perplexed, at last thus deliuered his opinio[n].

If euer I could wish my faith vntried, & my counsell vntrusted, it should
be at this time, whe[n] in truth I must co[n]fesse I
would be co[n]tent to purchase sile[n]ce with discredit. But since you
com[m]and, I obey: onely let me say thus much, that I obey not to
these excellent Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to who
[m] I giue cou[n]sel. Therefore as to a Prince I say, that the grage and (I
well know) true-minded counsell of my Lord Kalander had come in good
time whe[n] you first tooke armes, before al your subject[s] gate notice of
your intention, before so much blood was spe[n]t, & before they were driue
[n] to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you away,
why did you take armes since you might be sure when euer they were in
extremitie they would haue recourse to this threatning? and for a wise man
to take in hand that which his enimie may with a word ouerthrow, hath in
my conceit great incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in
reason wil doo. But they threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they
promised you if you remoued your siege, they would honorably send home
your daughters? would you be angled by their promises? truly no more
ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two, promise binds
faith more then threatning. But indeeade a Prince of iudgeme[n]t
ought not to consider what his enimies promise, or threaten, but what
the promisers and threatners in reaso[n] wil do: & the nearest co[n]
lecture therunto, is what is best for their own behoofe to do. They
threate if you remoue not, they wil kil your daughters, and if you doo
remoue, what surety haue you, but that they will kil the[m], since if the
purpose be to cut off al impediments of Amphialus-his ambitio[n], the
same cause wil continue when you are away; & so much the more
encoraged, as the reuenging power is absent, & they haue the more
opportunitie to draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for
their security onely, the same cause wil bring forth the same effect: & for
their security they wil preserue the[m]. But it may be said, no man knows
what desperate folkes wil do: it is true, and as true that no reason nor
policie can preuent what desperate folks wil do: & therfore they are amo[n]
g those dangers, which wisdome is not to recke. Only let it suffice to take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the Ladies may be freely deliuered. And let them that are your subiects, trust you that are their Prince: doo not you subiect your selfe to trust them, who are so vntrusty as to be manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their th[file]eatning to remoue your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, still by the same threatning? since then if Loue stir them, loue will keep them from murthering what they loue; and if Ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be, when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shewes and words they are but to feare babes, not worthy once to moue a worthy mans conceit; which must still co[n]sider what in reason they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do wel to preuent, which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man fals into it, while so good a way as you may offer, is open vnto them. In su[m], you are a Prince, & a father of people, who ought with the eye of wisdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart of iustice to set downe all priuate conceits, in comparison of what for the publike is profitable.

He would haue proceeded on, whe[n] Gynecia came riu[n]ning in amazed for her daughter Pamela, but mad for Zelmane; & falling at Basilius feet, besought him to make no delay: using such gestures of co[m]passio[n] instead of stopped words, that Basilius, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for Zelmane, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: so as to rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in speed away; discharging his soulidiors: only leauing the authority, as before, in Philanax his hands, he himselfe went with Gynecia to a strong Castle of his, where he took cou[n]sell how first to deliuer Zelmane, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitalitie moued him; and for that purpose sent diuers messengers to trafficke with Cecropia.

CHAP. 20.

[T]he sweete resistance of the true sisters l to the sower assaultes of their false Aunt. The whipping of 3 Philoclea 5 and Pamela. 4 The patience of both 6 and passions for their louers.
Ecropia by this means rid of the present danger of the siege (desiring Zoilus and Lycurgus to take the care, till their brother recovered, of reiictualling, and furnishing the City, both with men and what else wanted, against any new occasion should urge them, she her selfe disdaining to harken to Basilius, without he would grant his daughter in marriage to her son, which by no means he would be brought vnto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a comfortable grant to her sonne; whereupon she well found no lesse then his life depended. Therfore for a while she atte[m]pted all meanes of eloquent praying, and flattering perswasion, mingling sometimes gifts, somtimes threatnings, as she had cause to hope, that either open force, or vndermining, would best winn the castle of their Resolution. And euer as much as she did to Philoclea, so much did she to Pamela, though in manner sometimes differing, as she found fit to leuell at the ones noble height, and the others sweet lowlinesse. For though she knew her sonnes harte had wholly giuen it selfe to Philoclea, yet seeing the equall gifts in Pamela, she hoped, a faire grant would recouer the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly enteding the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchased.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. Pamelaes determination was built vpo[n] so braue a Rock, that no shot of hers could reach vnto it: and Philoclea (though humbly seated) was so inuironed with sweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor vndermined: her witty perswasions had wise answeres; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes; her threatnings repelled with disdaine in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as Cecropia in nature violent; cruel, because ambitious; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not preuaile with girles, as she counted them; lastly, drawne on by her loue to her son, & held vp by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fel to co[n] firme some of her threatned effects: first withdrawing al co[m]fort, both of serua[n]ts, & seruice from the[m]. But that those excelle[n]t Ladies had bene vsed vnto, euc[n] at home, & the[n] fou[n]d in the[m]selues how much good the hardnes of educatio[n] doth to the resista[n]ce of misery. Then dishonorably vsing them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al orname[n]ts, so now the same co[n]sideratio[n] made the[m] attend al diseasefulnes. Then stil, as she found those not preuaile, would she go forward with giuing them terrors, sometimes with noices of horror, sometimes with suddaine frightings in the night, when the solitary darkenesse thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to
all Vertue, and Loue resisted, strengthned one by the other, when each
found it selfe ouer-vehemently assaulted. Cecropia still sweetning her
fiercenesses with faire promises, if they would promise faire; that feeling
euill, and seing a way far better, their minds might the sooner be mollified.
But they that could not taste her behauiour, when it was pleasing, indeed
could worse now, when they had lost al taste by her injuries.

She resoluing all extremities, rather then faile of co[n]quest,
pursued on her rugged way: letting no day passe, without new and new
perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and still
swelling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings,
at length, abominable rage carried her to absolute tyrannies, so that taking
with her certaine olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for enuie-
sake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countena[n]ce impoysoned
with malice, flew to the sweet Philoclea, as if so many Kites should come
about a white Doue, & matching violent gestures with miscichious
threatnings, she hauing a rod in her ha[n]d (like a fury that should carry
wood to the burning of Dianas temple) fel to scourge that most beautifull
body: Loue in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty.
The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face from so pitiful a sight; & the very
stone wals did yeeld drops of sweate for agonie of such a mischiefe: each
senselessse thing had sense of pittie; onely they that had sense, were
senseles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the
oppression of that day: and weeping Cupid told his weeping mother, that he
was sorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might never know so
lamentable a worke. Philoclea, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as
soon as her wearines rather then compassion, gaue her respite) kneeled dow
[n]e to Cecropia, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment
delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God
to witnesse she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, and not
please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she)
the common course of hu[m]anitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in
your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere
alliance, nor reme[m]brance (how miserable so euer now) that I am a
Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often tolde me) your sonne
beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought
inough for me; I haue not liued so many yeares, but that one death may be
able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene so many, but
that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemie, when but
death is desired. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your request,
know for certaine you lose your labours, being euery day furtherof-minded
from becoming his wife, who vseth me like a slaue. But that in stead of
getting grace renued againe Cecropias, fury: so that (excellent creature) she
was newly again tormentsted by those hellish monsters: Cecropia vsing no
other words, but that she was a proud and ungrateful wench: and that she 
would teach her to know her own good, since of her self she would not 
conceive it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, 
hammered vpon by an ilfaoured Smith) she abode their pities 
dealing with her: till, rather reserving her for more, then meaning to 
end, they left her to an uncomfortable leasure, to consider with her self her 
fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and hopeles, since 
Zelmane was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of 
miserie, that she knew not how vnworthilie her Angell, by these deuils was 
abused: but wanted (God wot) no stings of griefe, when those words did but 
strike vpon her hart, that Philoclea was a captiue, and she not able to 
succour her. For well she knew the confidence Philoclea had in her, and 
well she knew, Philoclea had cause to have confidence: and all troden vnder 
foot by the wheele of senselesse Fortune. Yet if there be that imperious 
power in the soule, as it can deliver knowledge to another, without bodilie 
organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with 
other, though themselues perceaued it not, but only thought it to be the 
doubling of their owne louing fancies. And that was the onely wordly thing, 
whereon Philoclea rested her minde, that she knew she should die beloued 
of Zelmane, and shoulde die, rather then be false to Zelmane. And so this 
most daintie Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of 
anothers paine; and almost forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the 
paine of her minde, she wasted, even longing for the conclusion of her 
tedious tragedie.

But for a while she was vnuisited, Cecropia employing her time in 
using the like crueltie vpon Pamela, her harte growing not onely to 
desire the fruit of punishing them, but even to delight in the 
punishing them. But if euer the beames of perfection shined through the 
clowdes of affliction, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to shewe his (els 
vnconceauable) beautie, it was in Pamela. For when Reason taught her 
there was no resistance, (for to just resistance first her harte was enclined) 
then with so heauenly a quietnes, and so gracefull a calmenes, did she suffer 
the divers kindes of torments they vsed to her, that while they vexed her 
faire bodie, it seemed, that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. 
And when Cecropia ended, and asked whether her harte would yeelde: she 
a little smiled, but such a smiling as shewed no loue, and yet coulde not but 
be louelie. And then, Beastly woman (saide she) followe on, doo what thou 
wilt, and canst vpon me: for I know thy power is not vnlimited. Thou maist 
well wracke this sillie bodie, but me thou canst neuer overthowe. For my 
part, I will not doo thee the pleasure to desire death of thee: but assure thy 
self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame vpon 
thy detestable tyranny.
And so; in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, while *Cecropia* tried as many sorts of pains, as might rather vexe them, then spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of them for her sonne) *Pamela* remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe, what vertue could doo, as grieued with the miserie wherein she found her selfe plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew to *Musidorus*. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how grievously *Musidorus* would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe, wept yet *Musidorus*-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Loue did easlier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that wished death for her self, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe the feeblenes of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sory for his sorow: & she that long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themselves together, now thinking to die herself, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Liue long my *Musidorus* (would she say) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my memorie. Liue long, that thou mayst loue long the chast loue of thy dead *Pamela*. Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might euer possesse his harte: and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it, as being too vniust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worste, taking the counsell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

**CHAP. 21.**

1 *Cecropias* indurate tyrannies. 2 Her deuise with the death of one to threaten another. 3 *Philoclea* threatned, persi-steth. 4 The execution done in sight of *Philoclea* & *Zelmane*. 5 *Philoclea*s sorrow for her sister.

O these diamonds of the worlde whom Nature had made to be preciously set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe works of her workemanship, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious injury were brought to the uttermost distres that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spite inuent: *Cecropia* dayly in one or other sorte punishing the[m], still with her euill torments gieing them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the sorriest torment of all; that in the end weaire of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her
appointme[n]t. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by
the doing one is enhabled to doo; strength growing vpo[n] the worke, so as
what at first would haue seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these
Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by
the[m]selues, with the vse of suffering their minds gat the habit of suffering
so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof
they knew before ha[n]d they would be victorious, & which in the suffering
was painfull, being suffered, was a trophe to it self: whereby Cecropia
found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance haue
perswaded them to haue visited her sonne, and haue giuen him some
comforme in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the co[n]fines of Deaths
kingdome, now they protested, that they would neuer otherwise speake to
him, then as to the enemy, of most vniust cruelty towards them, that any
time or place could euer make them know.

This made the poison swell in her cankred brest, perceiuing that (as
in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now hauing
run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too
contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore
(taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in
wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had
gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and
other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it
bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger;
making their te[n]der harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did
did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of
wickednes interpret of it) & that therfore that was no more to be tried. And
for feare of death (which no question would doo most with them) they had
bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it,
and learned to esteeme threatning wordes to be but words. Therefore the
last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death,
should perceiue, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt,
that a womans soule would do much, rather then leaue so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, Cecropia went to Philoclea, and tolde her,
that now she was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part,
though she found her hard harted obstinacie such, that neither the
sweetnesse of fouling meanes, nor the force of harde meanes could preuaile
with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree of extremity; she
had sought to win her sister; in hope, that her sonne might be with time
satisfied with the loue of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more
then lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deatthes should serue
for an example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to
the despiser, then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially
affected her, & that in her owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her,
the she had deserued, she would begin with her sister; who that
afternoone should haue her head cut of before her face; if in the mean
time one of them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of
vnkindnes, she bad her looke for no other, nor lo[n]ger time the she
told her. There was no assault giue[n] to the sweet Philocleas mind, that
entered so far, as this: for where to all paines and daungers of her selfe,
foresight with (his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready defence; now
with the loue she bare her sister, she was druiuen to a stay, before she
determined: but long she staled not, before this reason did shine vnpto her,
that since in her selfe she preferred death before such a base seruitude, loue
did teach her to wish the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes, &
looking sideward vpon the grou[n]d, Do what you wil (said she) with us: for
my part, heauen shall melt before I be remoued. But if you will follow my
counsell, for your owne sake (for as for praiers for my sake I haue felt how
little they preuaile) let my death first serue for example to win her, who
perchaunce is not so resolued against Amphialus, and so shall you not onely
iustly punish me (who indeede doo hate both you and your sonne) but, if
that may mooue you, you shall doo more vertuously in preseruing one most
worthy of life, and killing an other most desirous of death: lastly in winning
her, in stead of a peeuish vnhappie creature, that I am, you shall blesse your
sonne with the most excellent woman in all praise-worthy thinges, that the
worlde holdeth. But Cecropia, (who had already set downe to her selfe what
she would do) with bitter both termes, & countenaunce, told her, that she
should not neede to woo death ouer-eagerly: for if her sister going before her
did not teach her witt, herselffe should quickly follow. For since they were
not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that
they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatning might
preuayle, she bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see
within fewe houres in the hall of that castle.

A place indeed ouerfit for so vnfit a matter: for being so stately made
that the bottome of it being euuen with the grounde, the roofe reached
as hie as any part of the castle, at either ende it had conuenient
lodgeings. In the one end was (one storie from the ground) Philocleas
abode, in the other of euuen height, Pamela, and Zelmanes in a chamber
aboue her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built stone, as one could
no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a little windowe to looke
into the hall, but because the sisters should not haue so much comforte, as
to looke out to one another, there was (of the outsides) curtaynes drawne,
which they could not reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their
sight. But when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the
curtaynes were withdrawn from before the windowes of Zelmane, and of
Philoclea: a sufficient challenge to call their eyes to defende themselues in
such an encounter. And by and by came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie, led by a couple, with her handes bounde before her: from aboue her eyes to her lippes muffled with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimsin veluet. But neither Zelmane, nor Philoclea needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparell she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable Pamela. Whereunto the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gaue sufficient testimonie to their astonished senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele downe, and so lefte by her vnkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to speake somewhat (whereunto Philoclea, poore soule, earnestly listned, according to her speach euen minded to frame her minde, her harte neuer till then almost wauering to saue her sisters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes, the executioner cutt of the ones speech, and the others attention, with making his sworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittilesse sworde had such pittie of so pretious an obiect, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little auailed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonnished withall, the cruell villayne forced the sworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did ouerrun Philocleas sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her harte thorough her senses, but first onely opprest her with a storme of amazement) but when her eies saw that they did see, as condemning themselues to haue seene it, they became weary of their owne power of seing: & her soule then drinking vp woe with great draughts, she fel downe to deadly trau[n]ces: but her waiting iaylors with cruell pitty brought lothed life vnto her; which yet many times tooke his leaue as though he would indeed depart: but when he was staied by force, he kept with him deadly Sorrow, which thus exercised her mourning speech. Pamela my sister, my sister Pamela, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. Pamela neuer more shall I see thee: neuer more shall I enjoy thy sweet companie, and wise counsell. Alas, thou arte gone to beautifie heauen, and haste thou lefte me here, who haue nothing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and euer will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for most vnfortunate: let it neuer be mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete Pamela; that head is striken of, where onely wisedome might be spoken withall; that bodie is destroied, which was the liuing booke of vertue. Deare Pamela, how haste thou lefte me to all wretchednesse, and misery? Yet while thou liuedst, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O Pamela, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my
mother, and love thee more than myself? Never more shall I lie with thee: never more shall we bathe in the pleasant river together: never more shall I see thee in thy shepherds apparel. But thou art gone, and where am I? Pamela is dead; and live I? My God, and with that she fell again in a swoon, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to herself again; but being come to herselfe, Alas (said she) unkind women, since you have given me so many deaths, torment me not now with life: for God's sake let me go, and excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my Pamela, whom ever I sought to follow. Alas Pamela, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keep promise, I shall tread thine own steeps after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soul) but to be most unhappy in myself, and yet more unhappy in others? But ô that a thousand more miseries had happened unto me, so thou haddest not dyed: Pamela, my sister Pamela. And so, like lamentable Philomela, complained she the horrible wrong done to her sister, which if it stirred not in the wickedly closed minds of her tormentors, a pittance of her sorrow, yet bred it a weariness of her sorrow: so as only leaving one to prevent any harm she should do to herself, the rest went away, consulting again with Cecropia, how to make profile of this their late bloody act.

CHAP. 22.

1 Cecropia's policy to use Zelmanes intercession, 2 Zelmanes self-conflict. 3 Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye. 4 Philoclea's resolution rather to dye then dissemble. 5 At sight of Philoclea's head Zelmanes ecstasies, 7 desperate designs, 8 and comfortless complaints.

In the end, that woman that used most to keep company with Zelmane, told Cecropia, that she found by many most sensible proofs in Zelmane, that there was never woman so loved another, as she loved Philoclea: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of Cecropia) had caused Zelmanes curtains to be also drawn: because having the same spectacle that Philoclea had, she might stand in the greater fear for her, whom she loved so well: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that devise: for never saw she creature so astonished as Zelmane, exceedingly sorry for Pamela, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnes in fear for Philoclea. Therefore her advice was, she should cause Zelmane to come and speak with Philoclea. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was both likely to move Zelmane to perswade, and Philoclea to be perswaded. Cecropia liked well of the counsell, and
gave order to the same woman to go deal therein with Zelmane, and to assure her with othe, that Cecropia was determined Philoclea should passe the same way that Pamela had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremetie of her sonses affection: which the woman did, adding therunto many (as she thought) good reasons to make Zelmane thinke Amphialus a fit match for Philoclea.

But Zelmane (who had from time to time vnderstood the cruell dealing they had vsed to the sisters, & now had her own eies wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still rebelling against her wit, desiring still with force to doo impossible matters) that as her desire was stopped with power, so her conceit was darkned with a mist of desire. For blind Loue, & inuincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not be, Philoclea should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne limits. But now Philocleas death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to so short a point either with smal delay to be suffred, or by the giuing her selfe to another to be preuented, she was driue to think, and to desire some leasure of thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last, he that would faine haue desperatly lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in respect of Philocleas death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to Philocleas death for any bargaine. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being possest by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but that Philoclea should pretend a yeelding vnto Cecropias request; & so by speaking with Amphialus, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie for Zelmane; who onely wisht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy them all, and deliuer Philoclea: so little did both the me[n], and their forces seeme in her eyes, looking downe vpon them from the hye toppe of affections tower.

With that minde therefore (but first wel bound) she was brought to Philoclea, hauing alredy plotted out in her conceite, how she would deale with her: & so came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Loue vpon the aultar of Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of Philoclea: Philoclea, who alredie the extreame sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine vnuerthrowne by such enimies. But whe[n] Zelmane was set downe by her,
& the woman gone away (because she might be the better persuaded when no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be persuaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without vsing their tongues to be his interpreters. At last Zelmane brake silence, but spake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas vnfortunate wretch that I am, that I liue to see this day. And I take heauen and earth to witnesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and griefe, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet Philoclea that had alredie dyed in Pamela, and of the other side had the heauines of her hart somthing quickned in the most beloued sight of Zelmane, ghesed somewhat at Zelmanes minde; and therefore spake vnto her in this sort. My Pyrocles (said she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought vnto me for any good-will that is owed vnto me: but (as I suppose) to make you perswade me to saue my life with the ransome of mine honour: although no bodie should be so vnfit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance you would haue me liue. Your honour? God forbid (said Zelmane) that euer, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, til time, or my libertie might worke somthing for your seruice: this, if my astonished senses would giue me leaue, I would faine haue perswaded you.

To what purpose my Pyrocles? (said Philoclea) of a miserable time what gaine is there? hath Pamelaes example wrought no more in me? is a captiue life so much worth? ca[n] euer it goe out of these lips, that I loue any other but Pyrocles? shal my tongue be so false a traitor to my hart, as to say I loue any other but Pyrocles? And why should I do all this? to liue? O Pamela, sister Pamela, why should I liue? onely for thy sake Pyrocles I would liue: but to thee I know too well I shal not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue so base allay, my Pyrocles, as to wish me to liue? for dissimulation, my Pyrocles, my simplicitie is such, that I haue hardly bene able to keepe a straight way; what shall I doe in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answere is required, and present performance vpon the answere. Art thou so terrible, ô Death? No my Pyrocles; and for that I doe thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the loue of thee is heerein my chiepest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare Pyrocles, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot liue with thee, I wil dye for thee. Onely remember me deare Pyrocles; and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue so much of thee, let me be thy last loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a worthy loue. But Pyrocles was so overcome with sorrow
(which wisdome & vertue made iust in so excellent a Ladies case, ful of so excelle[n]t kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to expresse his mind, & her merit: and therfore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of Zelmanes labour: & then Zelmane warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in sum, desirous of delayes. But Philoclea sweetly continuing co[n]stant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, Zelmane was faine to ende. Yet crauing an other times co[n]ference, she obtained it, & diuers others; till at the last Cecropia found it was to no purpose, and therfore determined to follow her owne way. Zelmane yet stil desirous to win (by any meanes) respit, euen wasted with sorrow, & vncertaine, whether in worse case in her prese[n]ce, or absence, being able to do nothing for Philocleas succour, but by submitting the greatest corage of the earth to fall at the feete of Cecropia, and craue stay of their sentence till the vttermost was seene, what her perswasions might doo.

Cecropia seemed much to be moued by her importunitie, so as diuers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent Philoclea: while Zelmane suffred some hope to cherrish her mind, especially trusting vpon the helpe of Musidorus, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter, till one morning a noise awaked Zelmane, from whose ouer-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a little sleep: and straight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being left open euer since the last execution) seuen or eight persons in a cluster vpon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselves, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull Philoclea. The horriblenes of the mischiefe was such, as Pyrocles could not at first beleue his own senses, but bent his woful eyes to discerne it better: where too well he might see it was Philocleas selfe, hauing no veile, but beautie, ouer the face, which still appeared to be aliue: so did those eyes shine, euen as they were wont, and they were woont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder think, that death therin had borowed their beutie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearling a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorow which then laid holde on Pyrocles, but a wilde furie of desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyrant heauen, traytor earth, blinde prouidence; no iustice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a gouernment? If it haue, let it poure out all his mischiefes vpon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more
wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abhominable hande that did it; detestable deuil that commaunded it; cursed light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that haue seene it? And haue I seen _Philoclea_ dead, and doe I liue? and haue I liued, not to help her, but to talke of her? and stande I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguish, not hauing a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as euer he could, with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himselfe: but the haste to doe it, made the doing the slower. For, as he came to give the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible enough to strike him downe, and withall, to deprive him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Reue[n]ge, Reuenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which vsed that voice to stay him from vnnaturall murdering of him selfe; or that his wandering spirites lighted vpon that conceite, and by their weakenes (subject to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant seruant Anger, stopped him from present destroying him selfe: yeeding, in reason and manhood, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessorie to this crueltie; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die vpon her tomb. This determining in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloued head with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scafiold, all couered ouer with skarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence, to mourn this mischiefe. But then, Sorrow hauing disperste it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could poure out his inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? What, mine eyes, perhappes they enuie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all ma[n]kind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any exceede me in wofulnes. I do conjure you all, my senses, to accept no obiect, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Vnhappie eyes, you haue seene too much, that euer the light should be welcome to you: vnhappie eares, you shall neuer heare the musicke of Musicke in her voice: vnhappie harte, that hast liued to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest doe. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations.
Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loued I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heauens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is striken. Sweet Philoclea, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my loue; & hast thy loue in me, & I wretched ma[n] do liue; I liue, to die co[n]tinually, till thy reuenge do giue me leaue to dy: & then dy I will, my Philoclea, my hart willinglie makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye coulde haue abidden to see such beautie ouerthrown by such mischiefe. Alas, why should they diuide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodye is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leaue, if I might haue taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope which promisest neuer to leaue a ma[n] while he liueth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tel me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wishing. Loue, be ashamed to be called Loue: cruell Hate, vnspeakable Hate is victorious ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can iustifie thy tyrannie, and giue reason to thy passion? O cruell diuorce of the sweetest mariage that euer was in Nature: Philoclea is dead, and dead is with her all goodnesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. Philoclea is dead, and yet Life is not ashamed to con[tinue vpon the earth. Philoclea is dead: O deadly word; which containeth in it selfe the uttermost of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall not be, before it be said.

CHAP. 17 [23].

1 A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse vnkindnesse. 2 His hardly knowing her. 3 Her vnmasking of Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie. 4 Their medley of solace and sorowe.

Hen stopping his woordes with sighes, drowning his sighes I in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himselfe somtimes vpon the floore, and sometimes vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was wearisome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering foode, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weep Philoclea, sigh Philoclea, and crie out Philoclea: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) towarde the
dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of
garme[n]ts; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore
Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life vnto you. And I
soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you haue giuen me.
Certainely (said she) an vnkinde answere, and far vnworthy the excellencie
of your mind; but not vnsutable to the rest of your behauiour. For most parte
of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer
perceiuing it, so was your minde estranged from your senses) and haue
hearde nothing of Zelmane, in Zelmane, nothing but weake waylings, fitter
for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God
(cried out Pyrocles) that thou wert a man that vseth these wordes vnto me. I
tell thee I am sory: I tell thee I will be sory in despite of thee, and all them
that would haue me ioyfull. And yet (replied she) perchaunce Philoclea is
not dead, whom you so much bemone. I would we were both dead of that
condition, said Pyrocles. See the folly of your passion (said she) as though
you should be neerer to her, you being dead, and she aliue; then she being
dead, & you aliue: & if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do
you crie out for? not for her, who must haue died one time or other; but for
some fewe yeareas: so as it is time, & this world that seeme so louely things,
and not Philoclea vnto you. O noble Sisters (cried Pyrocles) now you be
gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that
sex, but babbling, and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer
trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (said Pyrocles) for I wishe for nothing in
my shorte life, but mischiefes, and combers: and I am content you shall be
one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke your selfe a greatly
priuiledged person, if since the strongest buildings, and lastinge
monarchies are subiect to end, onely your Philoclea (because she is yours)
should be exempted. But indeede you bemone your selfe, who haue lost a
friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserued her honour, and
lefte the miseries of this worlde. O womans philosophie, childish follie (said
Pyrocles) as though if I do bemone my selfe, I haue not reason to doo so,
hauing lost more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be woorth vnto
me. Alas (said she) comforte your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill,
when she had made them: you shall find many their superiours, and
perchaunce such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will like
better.

But that speech put all good maners out of the conceit of Pyrocles;
in so much, that leaping out of his bed, he ran to haue striken her: but
comming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkenesse)
he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of Philoclea; the same
sweetenesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which carried into a
diuine astonishment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell (said
he) well haste thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy
selfe to mortal sense; for [a] more Angelicall forme could not have bene
created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, so beloved of me, let it
be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause, that she, that heauenly
creature, whose forme you haue taken, should by the heauens be destined to
so vnripe an ende? Why should vnjustice so preuaile? Why was she seene to
the world, so soone to be rauished from vs? Why was she not suffered to
liue, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceiue thy selfe (answered
she) I am no Angell; I am Philoclea, the same Philoclea, so truely louing
you, so truely beloved of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeede the
soule of Philoclea, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for
heauen could haue giuen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the
paines to leaue your blisfull seat to come to this place most wretched, to me,
who am wretchednes it selfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come
where you are, there eternally to behold, & eternally to loue your beauties?
you know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I only stay, to be
iustly reuenged of your vnjust murtherers.

Deare Pyrocles (said she) I am thy Philoclea, and as yet liuing: not
murdred, as you supposed, and therefore to be comforted. And with that
gae him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hande, seemed to his astraied
powers so heauenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his
former beliefe: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might
be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeeld; yet
doubtfully to yeele to this height of al comfort, that Philoclea.liued: which
witnessing with the teares of ioy, Alas (said he) how shall I beleue mine
eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to stay me from
some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent Pamela beheaded: I saw
your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes)
standing in a dishe of golde, too meane a shrine (God wote) for such a
relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not so,
how can I beleue mine owne senses? and if I can not beleue the, why
should I now beleuee these blessed tidings they bring me?

The truth is (said she) my Pyrocles, that nether I (as you finde) nor
yet my deare sister is dead: although the mischieuously suttle
Cecropia vsed slightes to make either of vs thinke so or other. For,
hauing in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked eloquence, to make
eyther of vs yeeld to her sonne, and seeing that neither it, accompanied with
great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any grounde of vs, nor yet the
violent way she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could preuayle
with vs; at last, she made either of vs thinke the other dead, and so hoped to
haue wrested our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and first she gaue to
mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as I thought) death: but
indeede not my sister: it was onely Artesia, she who so cunningly brought
vs to this misery. Truly I am sory for the poore Gentlewoman, though iustly
she be punished for her double falshood: but Artesia muffled so, as you
could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparell (which they had
taken from her vnder colour of giuing her other) did they execute: And
when I (for thy sake especially deare Pyrocles) could by no force, nor feare
be won, they assayed the like with my sister, by bringing me downe vnder
the scaffold, and (making me thrust my head vp through a hole they had
made therin) they did put about my poore necke a dishe of gold, whereout
they had beaten the bottome, so as hauing set bloud in it, you sawe how I
played the parte of death (God knowes euen willing to haue done it in
earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde,
so as scarcely I could breathe, much lesse speake: And truely if they had
kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in steed of
beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and seeking to see their issue
of this practise, they found my noble sister (for the deare loue she
vouchsafeth to beare me) so grieued withall, that she willed them to doo
their vtttermost crueltie vnto her: for she vowed, neuer to receiue
sustenaunce of them, that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding
both of vs, euenu guiuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my
sister Pamela, rather worse then my selfe, (the strength of her harte worse
bearing those indignities) the good woman Cecropia (with the same pittie as
folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for their eating) made vs
know her deceipt, & let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can
well imagine, who I know feele the like; sauing that we only thought our
selues reserued to miseries, and therefore fitter for condoling, then
congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little
respite, to haue a more feeling sense of the tormentes she prepares for vs.
True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleue, that this
proceedes of my gentle cousin Amphialus: who hauing hearde some
inkling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside,
from whence he neuer rose since his last combat, and besought, & charged
her vpon all the loue she bare him, to vse vs with all kindnesse: vowing,
with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he understood for his
sake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not
liue an houre longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill
his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealt with; but that Cecropia
keepes him from understanding thinges how they passe, onely hauing heard
a whispering, and my selue named, he had (of aboundaunce, forsooth, of
honorable loue) guien this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of
mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no
mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleue any worde they say,
but (my deare Pyrocles) euen looke for the worste, and prepare my selue for
the sam[e]. Yet I must confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and
borrow of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and
moste sweete comforte of thee my Pyrocles. And so hauing leaue, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a ioy it was vnto me, to heare you solemnise the funerals of the poore Philoclea? That I my selfe might liue to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deere Pyrocles. That I saw death was not strong enough to diuide thy loue from me? O my Pyrocles, I am too well paide for my paines I haue suffred: ioyfull is my woe for so noble a cause; and welcome be all miseries, since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittyed to heare thy pitty of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had euene pleasure to weepe with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on, to see poore Philoclea dye. Til at last I spake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee fro[m] sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like whe[n] a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle Zephyrus among fine coloured flowers. But Pyrocles, who had felt (with so smal dista[n]ce of time) in himselfe the ouerthrow both of hope and despaire, knew not to what key he should tune his mind, either of ioy, or sorrow. But finding perfite reason in neither, suffred himselfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raised euene by the sway, which hearing or seing, might giue vnto the[m]: he saw her aliue, he was glad to see her aliue: he saw her weep, he was sory to see her weep: he heard her co[m]fortable speeches, nothing more gladsome: he hard her prognosticating her own destructio[n], nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present estate, both comforting her, that certainely the worst of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done the worst, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to haue killed her, they would haue now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, and inhaling his counsels with vehement prayers, that she would so far second the hopes of Amphialus, as that she might but procure him liberty; promising then as much to her, as the liberalitie of louing corage durst promise to himselfe.

CHAP. 24.

1 Amphialus excuseth. 2 The Princesses accuse. 3 Cecropia seeking their death 4 findeth her owne. 5 Amphialus-his death-panges and selfe-killing. 6 The wofull knowledge of it.
Vt who would liuely describe the manner of these 
speeches, should paint out the lightsome coulours of 
affectiion, shaded with the deepest shadowes of 
sorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a 
kind of sweetenes in teares: til Philoclea content to 
receaue a kisse, and but a kisse of Pyrocles, sealed vp 
with mouing lippes, and closed them vp in comfort: and 
herselfe (for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her sister: 
with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while 
Philoclea tempered Pamelais iust disdaine, and Pamela ennobled Philoclea 
sweete humblenesse) when Amphialus came vnto them: who neuer since he 
had heard Philoclea named, coulde bee quiet in himselfe, although none of 
them about him (fearing more his mothers violence the his power) would 
discouer what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate, 
which brought answere backe, according as it pleased Cecropia to indite 
them, till his hart full of vnfortunate affliction, more and more misgiuing 
him, hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitnesse, this 
morning he gat vp, and though full of wounds (which not without daunger 
could suffer such exercise) he app apparelled himselfe, and with a countenance, 
that shewed strength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the sisters 
were; and weakely kneeling downe, he besought them to pardon him, if they 
had not bene vset in that castle according to their worthines, arid his duetie; 
beginning to excuse small matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what 
sort they had bene handled.

But Pamelaeis hye hart (hauing conceiued mortall hate for the 
injurie ofred to her and her sister) coulde scarcely abide his sight, 
much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him with these 
words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of 
so much loue as thou hast vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuses; 
but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vset 
towards vs: for my part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister 
(whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne safetie then thy 
destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, ful of humble 
sorrowfulnesse, to Philoclea. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome 
of me also? She, sweete Ladie, sate weeping: for as her most noble kinsman 
she had euer fauoured him, & loued his loue, though she could not be in 
loue with his person; and now partly vnkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of 
his case, made her sweete minde yeele some teares, before she could 
answere; and her answere was no other, but that she had the same cause as 
her sister had. He replyed no further, but deliuering from his hart two or 
three (vntaught) sighes, rose, and with most low reuerence went out of their 
chamber: and streight by threatening torture, learned of one of the women, in
what terrible manner those Princesses had bene vsed. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe vpon his hart) he needed no iudge to goe vpon him: for no man could euer thinke any otherworthy of greater punishme[n]t, the [n] he thought himselfe.

Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, understanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his servants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went vp, carried by furie, in steede of strength; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resoluing to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secreatly to impoison them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue woulde no otherwise be mitigated.

But when she sawe him come in with a sword drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sworde, she streight was stricke with the guiltines of her own conscience: yet the wel known humblenes of her son somwhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of vnhappines as I am; she fearing he would haue stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she ouerthrew her selfe from ouer the Leades, to receaue her deathes kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischiefe (whom she loued so well) before her end; when she confest (with most desperate, but not repe[n]ting mind) the purpose she had to impoison the princesses, & would then haue had them murthred. But euerie bodie seing, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of Amphialus, who when he saw her fal, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddennes of her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my end I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked so euer, yet I would she had receaued her punishme[n]t by some other. O Amphialus) wretched Amphialus; thou hast liued to be the death of thy most deere co[m]panion & friend Philoxenus, and of his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou hast liued to kill a Ladie with thine owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire Parthenia was: thou hast liued to see thy faithfull Ismenus slaine in succouring thee, and thou not able to defende him: thou hast liued to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that one vnknowne Knight could ouercome thee in thy Ladies presence: thou hast liued to beare armes against thy rightfull Prince, thine owne vnckle: Thou hast liued to be accounted, and iustly accounted, a
traitor, by the most excellent persons, that this world holdeth: Thou hast liued to bee the death of her, that gave thee life. But ah wretched Amphialus, thou hast liued for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to have Philoclea tormented: O heavens, in Amphialus castle, where Amphialus commanded; tormented, tormented? torment of my soule, Philoclea tormented: and thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to liue all this while. Perchance this hande (used onely to mischievous actes) thinkes it were too good a deed to kill me[n]; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou art afraid to strike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him, whom Philoclea hateth. With that, furiously he tare open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the sworde to the grounde, and the point to his brest, hee fell vpon it. But the sworde more mercifull then hee to himselfe, with the slipping of the pommell, the point swarued, and razed him but vpon the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened so, as hee bledde in such extremitie, that Charons boate might verie well be carried in that flood: which yet he sought to hasten by this meanes. As he opened his doublet, and fell, there fell out Philocleas kniues, which Cecropia at the first had taken from her, and deliuered to her sonne; and he had euer wore them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sword being so, as weakenes could not well draw it out from his doublette) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and vnkindncs, melting in teares, O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to reuene the wrong; I haue done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing; you without your mistresse leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you may, for you haue layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse should haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought foorth, for so high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far other hope would my desire often giuen me: but other euent it hath pleased her to lay vpon me. Ah Philoclea (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would striue to ouerflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I loue thee. Unworthie I am, vnhappie I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she condemmeth? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her service, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble mistresses commaundement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into divers places of his breast, and throte, vntill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the senselesse gate of Death.

By which time, his seruants hauing (with feare of his furie) abstained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him
swimming in his owne bloud, there giuing a pittiful spectacle, where the
conquest was the conquerors ouerthrow, and self-ruine the onely triumph of
a battaile, fought betweene him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the
person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all
the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all
ages came running vp to see the beloued body; euery body thinking, their
safetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction.

CHAP. 25.

1 Anaxius-his rages for the death 2, Queen Helens comming
for the cure of Amphialus. 3 Her complaints ouer him.
4 Her pasport and safeconduct, to carrie him to her Chirur-
gion. 5 The peoples sorow, 6 set downe in a song.

Vt when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his
proude friende Anaxius, (who by that time was
growe[n] well of his wou[n]d, but neuer had come
abroad, disdayning to abase himselfe to the
companie of any other but of Amphialus) he was
exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud
hart be not capable therof) with disdaine, that he, who
had the honor to be called the frend of Anaxius, should come to such an
vunexpected ruine. Therfore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger,
and engrained in pride, with liddes rysed vp, and eyes leuelling from toppe
to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the
earth shake vnnder him, with his hande vpon his sword; short speeches, and
disdainfull answeres, giuing streight order to his two brothers, to goe take
the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the souldiers, and Citizens in the
towne: and withall, to sweare them to reuenge the death of Amphialus, vpon
Basilius. He himself went to see him, calling for all the surgeons &
physicians there; spending some time in vewing the body, and threatning
them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of
his woundes, and falling down at Anaxius feete) assured him, that they were
mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him aboue two dayes aliue: and he
stood partly in doubt, to kil, or saue them, betweene his own furie, and their
humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two sisters, as
causers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, & told him they
had done his commandement, in hauing receaued the oath of allegeance,
with no great difficultie: the most part terrifid by their value, & force of
their seruants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing
to do any thing, rather then come vnder the subiection of Basilius againe;
and such fewe as durst gainsay, being cut of by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told Anaxius, that the faire Queen Helen was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne: hu[m]blie desiring leaue to see Amphialus, who she had sought in many places of the world; & lastly, being returned into her owne countrie, she heard together of the late siege and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him. Wherupon, full of louing care (which she was content euen to publish to the world, how vngratefully soeuer he dealt with her) she had gotten leaue of Basilius, to come by his frontiers, to cary away Amphialus with her, to the excellentest surgeon then knowen, whom she had in her Countrie, but so olde, as not able to trauaile: but had giuen her soueraigne appointments, to preserue his body withal, till he might be brought vnto him: and that Basilius had graunted leaue: either naturall kindnes preuailing ouer all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This discourse Lycurgus vnderstanding of Helene, deliuered to his brother, with her vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. Anaxius, though he were fallen out with all womankind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom he accounted murtherers of Amphialus) yet at his brothers request, graunted her leaue. And she (poore Lady) with grieuous expectation, and languishing desire, caried her faint legs to the place where he lay, ether not breathing, or in all appearance breathing but death.

In which pittious plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her minde the pittifullest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went beyonde all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight ranne from her seruice, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a soune vpon him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (aweary to be closed vp in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with his seruaunt senses) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath conuey these dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) Amphialus, what strange diseases be these, that hauing sought thee so long, I should be now sorie to finde thee? that these eyes should looke vpon Amphialus, and be grieued withall? that I should haue thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often haue I blest the means that might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often hast thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare Amphialus, receiue them: these eies can serue for nothing else, but weepe for thee; since thou wouldest neuer vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorrowe. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadst thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee couer my other
defects, who only sought to make my Crowne thy foote-stoole, my selfe thy seruaunt? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serue them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (đ Philoclea) wheresoeuer you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deserued suite of marrying you, and that I had bene your seruing-maide, to haue made my estate the foile of your felicitie, so he had liued. How many weary steps haue I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte vnkinde? Alas I would now thou werte, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not com[mand] my seruice, in persuading Philoclea to loue thee? who could, or (if euery one could) who would haue recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could haue stirred pittie for thee as I? who should haue deliuered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee? and so shouldest thou haue exercised thy disdaine in me, and yet vsed my seruice for thee.

With that the body mouing somewhat, and giuing a grone full of deaths musicke, she fell vpon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, that haue onely fauour by miserie: and then, would she haue returned to a fresh careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdome, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had receiued of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in fruitles lame[n]tations. She was streight warned with the obedience of an ouerthrown mind, and therefore leauing some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to Anaxius, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had utterly giuen him ouer, that he would let her carrie him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could haue should be to die, and to die in her armes that loued him aboue al things; & where he should haue such monuments erected ouer him, as were fit for her loue, & his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to Anaxius valour, then Basilius promise) that he would conuey them safely out of those territories. Her reasons something moued him, but nothing thoroughly perswaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he straight promised, warra[n]ting all securitie, as long as that sword had his master aliue. She as happy therein as vnhappines could be (hauing receiued as small co[m]fort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conueyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had lost their Lorde. And if the terrour of Anaxius had not kept
them vnder, they would haue mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be
caried away.

But Anaxius him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men
of that place, they were affraid euern to crye, though they were readie to
crye for feare: but (because that they might doo) euery bodie forced
(euern with harming themselves) to doo honour to him: some throwing
themselves vpon the grounde; some tearing their clothes, and casting duste
vpon their heads, and some euern wounding themselves, and sprinkling
their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that
kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song
of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered vp in this forme.

Since that to death is gone the shepheard hie,
Whom most the silly shepheards pipe did pryse,
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And you ô trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barkes receaue
The strange resounde of these my causefull cries:
And let my breath vpon your braunches leaue,
My breath distinguish’d into wordes of woe,
That so I may signes of my sorrowe leaue.
But if among yourselves some one tree growe,
That aptest is to figure miserie,
Let it embassage beare your grieues to showe.
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helps to this, this iustest cause of plaint.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.

And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Saint,
Vpon thy face let coaly Rauens swarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.
Let golde now rust, let Diamonds waste in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare;
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo neuer see.
And you, ô flowers, which sometimes Princes were,
Till these strange altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes losse your selues for tokens reare.
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
   And doo not onely marks the accents last,
   But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:
One Echo to another Echo cast
   Sounde of my griefes, and let it neuer ende,
   Till that it hath all woods and waters past.
Nay to the heau'ns your just complaining sende,
   And stay the starrs inconstant constant race,
   Till that they doo vnto our dolours bende:
And aske the reason of that speciall grace,
   That they, which haue no liues, should liue so long,
   And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?
Aske, if in great men good men doo so thronge,
   That he for want of elbowe roome must die?
   Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
   In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dohfull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

And if that any counsell you to measure
   Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,
   To well felte griefe, plainte is the onely pleasure.
O light of Sunne, which is entitled day,
   O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;
   For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.
O Phœbus with good cause thy face thou bidest,
   Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye
   Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
   A stately tombe to couer him deceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

O Philomela with thy brest oppressed
   By shame and grieffe, helpe, helpe me to lament
   Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
   Then giue a quiet eare vnto my playning:
   For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your stayning
   This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
   Witnesse your wofull teares with daily rayning.
And if, ô Sunne, thou euer didst appeare,
In shape, which by mans eye might be perceiued;
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.
Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaued.

O notes of mine your selues together tie:
With too much griefe me thinkes you are dissolved.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Time euer old, and yonge is still revolued
Within it selfe, and neuer tasteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought resolued.
The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:
But vnto Man, age euer death doth sende.
The very trees with grafting we can cherish,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helplesse must perish.
Thus, thus the mindes, which ouer all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get best graces,
Must finish then by deaths detested crime.
We last short while, and build long lasting places:
Ah let vs all against foule Nature crie:
We Natures workes doo helpe, she vs defaces.
For how can Nature vnto this reply?
That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.

Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but spilleth,
The vehement course of this iust lamentation:
Me thinkes, my sound no place with sorrow filleth,
I know not I, but once in detestation
I haue my selfe, and all what life containeth,
Since Death on Vertues fort hath made invasian.
One word of woe another after traineth:
Ne doo I care how rude be my inuention,
So it be seen what sorrow in me raigneth.
O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
Our bodies be in liuing power maintained,
Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention?
O Phisickes power, which (some say) hath restrained
Approch of death, alas thou helpest meagerly,
When once one is for Atropos distraigned.
Great be Physitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
When rooted moisture failes, or groweth drie,
They leaue off al, and say, death comes too eagerlie.
They are but words therefore that men do buy,
Of any since God Æsculapius ceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.

Justice, iustice is now (alas) oppressed:
Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion:
Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.
Shepheards bewaile your uttermost confusion;
And see by this picture to you presented,
Death is our home, life is but a delusion.

For see alas, who is from you absented?
Absented? nay I say for euer banished
From such as were to dye for him contented?
Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished
Shepherd of shepherds, whose well setld order
Private with welth, publike with quiet garnished.

While he did liue, farre, farre was all disorder;
Example more preuailing then direction,
Far was homestrife, and far was foe from border.

His life a law, his looke a full correction:
As in his health we healthfull were preserued,
So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.

His death our death. But ah; my Muse hath swarued,
From such deepe plaint as should such woes descrie,
Which he of vs for euer hath deserued.

The stile of heavie hart can neuer flie
So high, as should make such a paine notorious:
Cease Muse therfore: thy dart ô Death applie;
And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.

CHAP. 26.

1 The publike griefe amplified. 2 Anaxius death-threatning to the Princesses. 3 Their resolutenes in it. 4 His returne, and stop. 5 Zelmanes braue challenge vnto him 6 scornd by him. 7 His loue to Pamela scornd by her. 8 His bro- thers braue loues haue as meane successe.
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

He general consort of all such numbers mourning, perfourmed so the naturall times of sorrow; that euen to them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief taught them griefe; hauing before their compassionate sense so passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with great honour, honored by great valure, made of inestimable valure, by the noble vsing of it, to lye there languishing, vnder the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner could be no comfort to the discomfortablenes of the matter. But when the bodie was carried thorough the gate, and the people (sauing such as were appointed) not suffred to goo further, then was such an vniversal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and all receiued but one blow.

Which so moued Anaxius to consider the losse of his friend, that (his minde apter to reuenge, then tendernesse) he presently giuing order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and vnuisited, till his retourne from coueying Helen, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this curteous message: that at his retourne, with his owne hands, he would cut off their heads, and send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought vnto the sisters, as they sate at that time together with Zelmane, conferring how to carrie themselues, hauing heard of the death of Amphialus. And as no expectation of death is so painfull, as where the resolution is, hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not remoue, yet moue somwhat the co[n]stancy of their minds, which were so vnconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent Pamela had brought her minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most deerely she loued) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune is not yet a wearie of vexing vs: but what? A shippe is not counted strong for byding one storme? It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the last sounde: and let vs make that profile of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truely said Philoclea, deare sister, I was so beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse brede that strength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But euen in the darkenesse of that horrour, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amisse, that see Pamelas steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might liue, to see me say my lesson truely. Were that a life, my Philoclea? said Pamela. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but a bug-beare. Ioy is it to me to see you so well resolvd; and since the world
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

will not have us, let it lose us. Onely (with that she stayed a little, and sight) onely my Philoclea, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her eare) onely Musidorus, my shepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that Philoclea sighed also, saying no more, but looking vpon Zelmane: who was walking vp & downe the chamber, hauing heard this message from Anaxius, and hauing in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to preuent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatened: and so stayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarrie togither. Pamela nobly, Philoclea sweetly, and Zelmane sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, neuer to awake.

But Anaxius came home, hauing safely conducted Helen: and safely he might wel do it: For though many of Basilius Knights would haue attempted something vpon Anaxius, by that meanes to deliuer the Ladies, yet Philanax, hauing receiued his masters commadement, & knowing his word was giue[n], would not co[n]sent vn to it. And the black-Knight (who by the was able to carie abroad his wou[n]ds) did not know therof; but was bringing forces, by force to deliuer his Lady. So as Anaxius, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three togither; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) disswaded him: but his reuerence stayed their perswasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholericke threatnig climing vp his throate, his eies first lighted vpon Pamela; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne maiestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly loue, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthiness.

Which while it bred a pause in him, Zelmane (who had ready in her mind both what and how to say) stept out vnto him, & with a resolute stayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, disdaine, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. Anaxius (said she) if Fame haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee even before that vertue, and will make it the iudge betweene vs. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou hast done, thou doest weakly, in seeking without danger to reuenge his death, whose life [with] daunger
thou mightst perhaps haue preserued: thou doost cowardly, in going about
by the death of these excellent Ladies, to preuent the iust punishme[n]t, that
hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any
other could make, might lay vpon thee; and doost most basely, in once
presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office vpon men, and in a iust
cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so vniust a cause, and vpon
Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art
vnworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the companie of
Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alleadge other reasons, of wisdome,
or iustice, to proue my speech, because I know thou doost disdaine to be
tied to their rules: but euin in thine owne vertue (whereof thou so much
gloriest) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one
of vs two, to proue, or disprove these reproaches. Choose thee what armes
thou likest, I onely demaund, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in
liberty see the combat.

When Zelmane began her speech, the excellency of her beautie, and
grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had
read in Pamela, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered
into brauerie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor possest
her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length corne to flatte
challenge of combat; he stood leaning back with his bodie and head,
sometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one side of her, sometimes of
the other, beyonde maruell marvailing, that he, who had neuer heard such
speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that
maruell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to
his brother Zoilus, and said nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, smiled.
But Zelmane finding his minde, Anaxius (said she) perchaunce thou
disdaynest to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte
to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bene trayned vp in martial
matters, with so good successe, that I haue many times ouercome better
Knightes then thy selfe: and am well knowen to be equall in feates of armes,
to the famous Pyrocles, who slewe thy valiaunt Vncle, the Giant Euardes.
The remembrance of his Vncles death something netled him, so as he
answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and
traytorly boy, who slewe my Vncle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in
the plaine field. Fiue thousand such could not haue ouercome Euardes, but
by falshood. But I sought him all ouer Asia, following him still from one of
his cony-holes to another: till, comming into this Countrie, I heard of my
friendes being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that
troubled him. But wheresoever the miserable boy flie, heauen, nor hell,
shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyest in thy
throate (said Zelmane) that boye, where euery he went, did so noble actes, as
thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lesse perfourme. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be nearer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we loue, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an Amazon Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not deuise to reuenge thy selfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doo manfullie, doo it; otherwise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heauen, and earth, (that will reueale thy shame) that thou art the beggerliest dastardly villaine, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me ouer-liue them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not moue Anaxius, but that he onely said, euill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolde with thee.

But (said he) for the death of these same (pointing to the Princesses) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to Pamela, and offring to take her by the chin, And as for you, Minion (said he) yeeld but gently to my will, and you shall not only liue, but liue so happily, He would haue said further, whe[n] Pamela, displeased both with words, matter, and maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said she) yet thou plaiest worse thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy selfe, since my destiny is such, that at ech moment my life & death stand in equall balance, I had rather haue thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride & anger, would faie haue cruelly reue[n]ged so bitter an answer, but alredy Cupid had begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that, vnused to a way of courtesie, and put out of his byas of pride, he hastily went away, grumbling to himselfe, betwene threatning & wishing; leauing his brothers with the[m]: the elder of whom, Lycurgus, liked Philoclea, & Zoilus would nedes loue Zelmane; or at lest, entertain themselues with making the[m] beleue so. Lycurgus more braggard, & nere his brothers humor, bega[n], with setting foorth their bloud, their deedes, how many they had despised, of most excellent wome[n]; how much they were bou[n]d to them, that would seek that of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of vertue) to see, with what a wittie ignorance she would not vnderstand: and how, acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be iniurio[u]s to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to touching and toying, still vewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To which, Philocleas shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller, and disdaine. For though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be overcome: and that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But Zelmane had eye to his behauiour, and set in her
memorie, vpon the score of Reuenge, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by Zoilus; who lesse full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.

CHAP. 27.

1 Zelmanes persuasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius. 2 Anaxius-his embassage to treate the marriage. 3 Basilius recourse to a newe Oracle, 4 and his negative thereon. 5 The flattering relation of his Mercurie. 6 The brothers course to resist force without, and use force within.

But when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed between new conceaued desires, and disdain, to be disdained) Zelmane (who with most assured quietnesse of judgement looked into their present estate) earnestly perswaded the two sisters, that to awoide the mischieves of prowde outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behauiour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth inexpected relief. And why (said Pamela) shal we any longer flatter aduersity? Why should we delight to make our selues any longer balls to iniurious Fortune, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse vs? Certainely, in mishap it may be some comforte to vs, that we are lighted in these fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie Zelmane (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) shoulde receaue onely hurte by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or suffered nothing, which might make our soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while vnder colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (said Zelmane) what you say is true; and that truth may well make vp a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your selfe thereof: for then would be the time to die nobly, when you ca[n] not liue nobly. Then so earnestly she persuaded with them both, to referre themselves to their fathers consent (in obtayning whereof they knewe some
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

while would be spent) and by that means to temper the mindes of their prowde woers; that in the ende *Pamela* yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicited in that little pleasing petition, *Pamela* forced her selfe to make answere to *Anaxius*, that if her father gaue his consent she would make her selfe believe, [t]hat such was the heauenly determination, since she had no meanes to auoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the most franke promiser to him selfe of successe) nothing doubted of *Basilius* consent, but rather assured him selfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious seruaunt (whome he esteemed very wise, because he neuer found him but iust of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to *Basilius*, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to haue his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selfe to haue such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he listed to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receaue *Anaxius*, who neuer before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in euery thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His seruaunt with smiling and caste-vp looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speach: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the diuinenenesse therof, and that being gratiously granted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* spake it, to persuade rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win *Basilius* to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heauens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* grauely allowed the probabilitie of his coniecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should haue the bringing vp of his second sonne by *Pamela*.

The messenger with speede perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Basilius*, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherin already he had found so slowe successe; though *Philanax* vehemently vrged him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage injuries. But *Basilius* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the passio[n] of his loue, & iealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the com[m] on course of me[n], to flie only the[n] to deuotio[n], whe[n] they want resolutio[n]: so detaining the messeger with delaies, he deferred the directing of his course to the cousell of *Apollo*, which because himself at that time could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

... to Delphos, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and having performed the sacrifices usuall, the spirite that possest the profhesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demand, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie, tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainly to be vnderstood, what he came for, and that he should returne to Basilius, and will him to denie his daughters to Anaxius and his brothers, for that they were reserued for such as were better beloued of the gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne vnto him safely and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe Philanax and Basilius fully agreed in the vnderstanding of the former prophecie: withall, commaunding Philanax from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane wisedome.

Philanax then finding that reason cannot shewe it self more reasonable, then to leaue reasoning in things aboue reason, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence forth durste any more disswade him, from that which he founde by the celestiall prouidence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the gouernment as much as in so broken an estate by ciuill dissencion he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made vnaprochable, he lefte Basilius to bemone the absence of his daughters, and to bewayle the imprisonment of Zelmane: yet wholy giuen holily to obey the Oracle, he gaue a resolute negatiue vnto the messenger of Anaxius, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes desiring him to shewe him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seeke the way of force, to deliuer in noble sorte those Ladies vnto him, and so should the iniurie haue bene in Amphialus, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answere, yet hauing euer vsed to sugre any thing which his Maister was to receaue, he tolde him, that when Basilius first vnderstood his desires, he did ouerreach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whome the heauens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principall counsailour to Delphos, who although he kepte the matter neuer so secrete, yet his diligence, inspired by Anaxius his priuiledge ouer all worldly thinges, had founde out the secrete, which was, that he should not pres[u]me to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde an other wisedome to be aboue, that judged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his
seruauntes wayting for Basilius resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to haue for their wiues, he resolued now to dally no longer in delayes, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gaue spurres to his running, and, vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselues, nor tendring it in others, they were headlong to make that euill consorte of loue and force, when Anaxius had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gaue presente order to his seruauntes, and souldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leauing none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that Mars-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely haue awaked him.

CHAP. 28.

1 Zoilus the messenger, 2 and first offerer of force, 3 is forced to flie, and die. 4 Lycurgus pointed to kill, 5 is fought withal, 6 foiled, 7 & killed. 8 Anaxius the Reuenger with Pyrocles the Punisher braue, and brauely combatted.

But while he was directing what he would haue done, his yongest brother Zoilus, glad that he had the commission, went in the name of Anaxius, to tel the sisters, that since he had answere from their father, that he and his brother Licurgus, should haue them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perswaded. Pamela made him answere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherin she had euer answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messeger vndersta[n]d somthing from the[m]selues, & not haue her beleef bound to the report of their partiall servants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had euer a simple & true resolution, so against their vniust force, God, they hoped, would either arme their liues, or take away their liues.

Wel Ladies (said he) I wil leaue my brothers, who by & by wil come vnto you, to be their own embassadors, for my parte, I must now do my self seruice. And with that turning vp his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a pauen, he went toward Zelmane. But
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

Zelmane (hauing had all this while of the messengers being with Basilius, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the pasport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselues subiect) still hoping that Musidorus would finde some meanes to deliuer them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, perswaded the[m] to ouerpass many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient fauour not to doo the uttermost injurie, now come againe to the streight she most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, she had beene beyonde herselfe amazed: but that yet held vp her wit, to attend the uttermost occasion, which eue[n] then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for Zoilus smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something advancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy hart be full of ioy, and let thy faire eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt haue Zoilus, who[m] many haue lo[n]ged for; but none shall haue him, but Zelmane. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too litle for them: And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dissemble with you, my natiuitie being cast by one that neuer failed in any of his prognostications, I haue bene assured, that I should neuer be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so hie fauor, I must onely desire that I may performe a vow which I made among my coutriwomen, the famous Amazons, that I would neuer marrie none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therfore, before I make mine own desire seruiceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selfe periured to my selfe. But Zoilus (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knighthood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in Zelmane then Disdaine became wisdome, & Anger gaue occasion. For abiding no longer aboad in the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised, Pyrocles, being farre fuller of strong nimblenes, tript vp his feete, so that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword, which he ware about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethre[n], preparing themselues to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, & eue[n] as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow vpo[n] the wast, that she almost cut him a suder: once, she sundred his soule fro[m] his body, se[n]ding it to Proserpina, an angry Goddesse
against rauishers.

But Anaxius, seing before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of despite the wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorow, looking with a wofull eye vpon his brother Lycurgus, Brother, said he, chastice this vile creature, while I go down, & take order lest further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise then he conceiued. But finding the[m] only strong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceale the shame of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and the went vp to receaue some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done of Zelmane.

But Zelmane no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reasoon assured her she was to expect reuenge, but that she lept to a target, as one that well knew the first marke of valure to be defence. And the accepting the oportunitie of Anaxius going away, she waited not the pleasure of Lycurgus, but without any words (which she euer thought vaine, when resolutio[n] tooke the place of perswasion) gaue her owne hart the contentment to be the assailer. Lycurgus, who was in the dispositio[n] of his nature hazarde, & by the luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her, rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to hope. But whe[n] her sword made demonstrations above al flattery of argume[n]ts, & that he found she prest so vpon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blind despair, but was garded both with cunning & strength: self-loue the first in him diuided it selfe from vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had not his whole globe comprised in his brest, but that it was necessary to haue strong resista[n]ce against so strong assailing. And so between the[m], for a few blowes, Mars himself might haue bin delighted to looke on. But Zelmane, who knew that in her case, slownes of victory was little better the[n] ruine, with the bellowes of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a maine blow at her head, she warded it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces, while it protected her, & withall she ran in to him, and thrusting at his brest, which he put by with his target, as he was lifting vp his sword to strike again, she let fall the piece of her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the pom[m]el, with nimble & strong sleight, she had gotte his sword out of his hand before his sence could conceiue what was to be doubted. And hauing now two swords against one shield, meaning not foolishly to be vngratefull to good fortune, while he was no more amazed with his being vnweapned, then with the suddainnes therof, she gaue him such a wou[n]d vpo[n] his head, in despite of the
The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia.

shields over-weak resistance, that while he fell to the ground, astonished
with the paine, & against with fear. But seeing Zelmane ready to conclude
her victory in his death, bowing up his head to her, with a countenance that
had forgotten all pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the honor is yours:
Wherof you shall want the best witness, if you kill me. As you have take from
men the glory of manhood, returne so now againe to your own sex,
for mercy. I will redeeme my life of you with no small services, for I will
undertake to make my brother obey all your commandments. Grant life I
beseech you, for your own honor, and for the persons sake that you love
best.

Zelmane represt a while her great hart, either disdaining to be
cruell, or pitiful, & therefore not cruel: & now the image of humane
condition, began to be an Orator unto her of compassion, she saw, as he lifted
up his arms with a suppliants grace, about one of the [m], unhappily, tied a garter
with a jewel, which (given to Pyrocles by his aunt of Thessalia, & greatly esteemed
by him) he had presented to Philoclea, & with inward rage promising extreme hatred, had seen
Lycurgus with a proud force, & not with out some hurt unto her, pull away
from Philoclea because at entreatie she would not give it him. But the
sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the injuries which Philoclea
had of him suffered, & that remembrance feeding upon wrath, trod down
all conceits of mercy. And therefore saying no more, but, No villain, dye:
It is Philoclea that sends thee this token for thy love. With that she made
her sword drink the blood of his heart, though he wresting his body, & with a
countenance prepared to excuse, would fain have delayed the receiving of
death's ambassadors.

But neither that staied Zelmane hand, nor yet Anaxius crieth unto her, who
having made fast the Iron gate, euens then came to the top of the stairs,
when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at Zelmane's
mercy. Therefore crying, promising, and threatening to her to hold her hand:
the last groan of his brother was the onely answere he could get to his
unrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine have drawne tears,
which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine have spoken, but
that Disdaine sealed up his lips; but in his heart he blasphemed heaven,
that it could have such a power over him; no lesse ashamed of the victorie
he should have of her, then of his brothers overthrow: and no more spited,
that it was yet unreuenged, then that the reuenge should be no greater, then
a womens destruction. Therefore with no speach, but such a groaning cry, as
often is the language of sorrowfull anger, he came running at Zelmane, use
of fighting then serving in stead of patient consideration what to do.
Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according
to knowledge, pressing upon Zelmane in such a well defended manner, that
in all the combats that ever she had fought, she had never more need of
quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature
then liuing, as he did fully answere that stature in greatnesse of might, so
did he exceed both in greatnes of courage, which with a cou[n]tena[n]ce
formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible
fiercenes, was able to haue carried feare to any mind, that was not priuie to
it selfe of a true & co[n]stant worthines. But Pyrocles, whose soule might
well be separated fro[m] his body, but neuer alienated fro[m] the
remembering what was comely, if at the first he did a little apprehend the
dangerousnes of his aduersarie, whom once before he had something tried,
& now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that
apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthening, then weakning his
vertue by that wresting; like wine, growing the stro[n]ger by being moued.
So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines
there with such a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a right of fortune,
whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood
blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was
strength against nimblenes; rage, against resolution, fury, against vertue;
confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: loue, in both,
breeding mutual hatred, & desire of reue[n]ging the iniurie of his brothers
slaughter, to Anaxius, being like Philocleas captiuity to Pyrocles. Who had
seen the one, would haue thought nothing could haue resisted; who had
marked the other, would haue maruelled that the other had so long resisted.
But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of
shippes, and men vpon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seems able to
withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces,
and strugling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So
betweene these, if Pallas had bene there, she could scarcely haue tolde,
whether she had nurced better in the feates of armes. The Irish greyhound,
against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the
Rhinoceros, against the elepha[n]t, might be models, & but models of this co
[m]bat. Anaxius was better armed defensiuely: for (beside a strong caske
brauely couered, wherewith he couerd his head) he had a huge shield, such
perchance, as Achilles shewed to the pale walles of Troy, where-withall that
body was couered. But Pyrocles, vtterly vnarmed for defence, to offend had
the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimbly
performed that office. And according as they were diuersly furnished, so did
they differ in the manner of fighting. For Anaxius most by warding, and
Pyrocles oftnest by auoyding, resisted the aduersaries assault. Both hastie to
day, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motio[n]
custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene felow Counsellers,
and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to preuent it.
So as their stre[n]ght fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath
fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew,
before either could complaine of any losse of bloud.

CHAP. 29.

1 The Combattants first breathing, 2 reencounter, and

O consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawn a little one from the other; Anaxius stood leaning vpon his sworde, with, his grym eye, so setled vpon Zelmane, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which Zelmane marking, & according to the Pyroclean nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midst, then in the beginning of da[n]ger; What is it (said she) Anaxius, that thou so deeply musest on? Dooth thy brothers exam[ple] make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy coming punishme[n]t? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, enuying my glory, hath brought me to such a waywarde case, that neither thy death can be a reuenge, nor thy ouerthrow a victorie. Thou doost well indeede (saide Zelmane) to impute thy case to the heauenly prouidence, which will haue thy pride find it selfe (euen in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sex, which thou most contemnest.

But then, hauing sufficiently rested themselues, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like nimble vaulters, who at the first and second leape, doo but stirre, and (as it were) awake the fierie and aerie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellence exercise. For in this pausing, ech had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the advantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselues; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the using of it. Anaxius oftner vsed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him vnto it. Pyrocles, of a more fine, and deliuer strength, watching his time when to giue fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he shunned any harme Anaxius could do to him: so would he soon haue made an end of Anaxius, if he had not fou[n]d him a ma[n] of wonderful, & almost matchlesse excelle [n]cy in matters of armes. Pyrocles vsed diuers faynings, to bring Anaxius on, into some inconuenience. But Anaxius keeping a sound maner of fighting, neuer offered, but seeing faire cause, & then followed it with wel-gouverned violence. Thus spent they a great time, striuing to doo, and with striuing to doo, wearying themselves, more then with the very doing. Anaxius finding Zelmane so neere vnto him, that with little motion he might
reach her, knitting all his strength together, at that time mainly foynd at her face. But Zelmane strongly putting it by with her right hande sword, comming in with her left foote, and hande, woulde haue giuen him a sharpe visitation to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much before in his life)